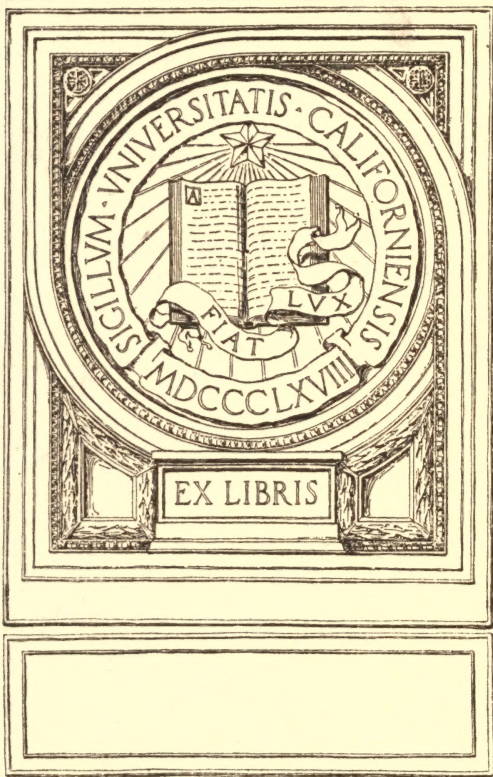






GIFT OF  
EUGENE MEYER, JR.



EX LIBRIS











# CONFEDERATE MILITARY HISTORY



A LIBRARY OF CONFEDERATE  
STATES HISTORY, IN TWELVE  
VOLUMES, WRITTEN BY DISTIN-  
GUISHED MEN OF THE SOUTH,  
AND EDITED BY GEN. CLEMENT  
A. EVANS OF GEORGIA. . . . .



VOL. XI.  
CONFEDERATE  
ARMY



Atlanta, Ga.  
Confederate Publishing Company  
1899



E 541  
, E 8  
v. 11

Meyer

COPYRIGHT, 1899,  
BY CONFEDERATE PUBLISHING COMPANY.

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO



## CONTENTS—TEXAS.

	PAGE.
CHAPTER I. The State of Texas in 1860—Unfavorable Political Conditions—Election of Governor Runnels in 1857—Secession and the African Slave Trade Agitated—Election of Governor Houston in 1859—His Opposition to Separate State Action.....	5
CHAPTER II. The Agitation and Action after the Election of Abraham Lincoln, President—Calls upon Governor Houston to Convene the Legislature—Speeches For and Against State Action—Call for a Convention by Citizens—Governor Houston Convenes the Legislature—Co-operation of States Advocated as a Diversion from Separate State Action—The Legislature and Convention Meet—Ordinance of Secession Passed—Committee on Safety Appointed to Take the Federal Property.....	12
CHAPTER III. The Committee on Public Safety Appoints a Sub-Committee to Confer with General Twiggs—Col. Ben McCulloch to Raise a Force for the Northwestern Frontier—Col. John S. Ford to Raise a Force to Go to the Lower Rio Grande—Instructions Given Them, and They Set About Their Duties—Secession Submitted to a Vote of the People—Delegates Elected to the Convention at Montgomery—General Twiggs Issues an Order of Surrender—Thanks by the Convention.....	20
CHAPTER IV. Convention Reassembles—Returns of Election Counted—Independence Declared—Governor Houston Posts the Vote March 4th—Provisional Constitution Ratified—Committee Sent to the Governor—His Answer—A Resolution Continuing the State Government—All Officers to Take Official Oath—Governor and Secretary Refuse to Take It—Ed Clark Declared Governor—Governor Houston Retires—He Publishes His Protest—Effect of the Vote on Secession—General Houston Disclaims Intention to Resist Colonel Waite—Convention Adjourns—Leading Men that Went to the Army.....	27
CHAPTER V. Proceedings of the Legislature—The Expedition of Colonel Ford to the Rio Grande—Colonel Van Dorn Comes to Texas—He Finishes the Capture and Surrender of Federal Troops—Their Embarkation—Other Commanders Go to New Mexico and to Indian Territory—Governor Clark Assists in Raising Troops.....	38
CHAPTER VI. Brigadier-General Hébert Assumes Command—Troops Raised for the Defense of the Coast—The Blockade—Troops for Arkansas—Troops at Arkansas Post—Battles of Oak Hills and Elkhorn—Forces Transferred to Mississippi—Troops Sent to Tennessee and to Virginia, to the Lower Rio Grande, and to New Mexico and Arizona—Organization of Confederate Government—Members of Congress Elected—Message of Governor Clark.....	49

	PAGE.
CHAPTER VII. Francis R. Lubbock, Governor—His Message Recommends Appropriation for Raising Troops—Reorganization of the Militia—Military Board Created—Hospital Fund—County Court to Levy Taxes—Effort to Have a Northeast Sub-District—Brig.-Gen. H. E. McCulloch Assumes Command in It—Difficulty of Raising Infantry—Cavalry Easily Raised—A Number of Infantry Regiments Sent to Arkansas and Form a Division—Capture of Arkansas Post—Regiment Sent to Indian Territory—Battle at Poison Spring—Troops Sent to Mississippi and Tennessee—Regiments and Battalions Retained in Texas—State Troops—Martial Law—Conscription—Troops for Rio Grande.....	58
CHAPTER VIII. Frontier Protection—Galveston Shelled—Conscription—Evacuation of Sabine Pass—Yellow Fever—Evacuation of Galveston, October, 1862—Defense of Port Lavaca.....	71
CHAPTER IX. Military Condition Explained—General Magruder Assumes Command of the District of Texas—The Battle of Galveston—Signal Defeat of the Enemy.....	78
CHAPTER X. A Famous Naval Exploit—Capture of Federal Vessels off Sabine Pass—A Lady's Description—Engagement at Lighthouse, Sabine Pass—Defense of St. Joseph's Island.....	97
CHAPTER XI. Movement of Troops from Arkansas to Northern Louisiana—The Engagements There—Gen. E. Kirby Smith Assumes Command of the Trans-Mississippi Department—Headquarters Moved to Shreveport—Mails Superintended by Dr. J. H. Starr—Sabine Pass—Federal Preparations to Capture It—Splendid Naval Battle in its Defense..	105
CHAPTER XII. Home Supplies by Home Industry—The Collection of Army Supplies—Salt Manufacture—Iron Works—Penitentiary Cloth—Its Distribution—A New Military Board—Purchase and Importation of Cotton—Gunshops and Armory—Large Prison Camp near Tyler—Operations of Military Board—Disposition of Hospital Fund.....	112
CHAPTER XIII. Fort Brown Evacuated—General Banks' Expedition on the Texas Coast—Occupation of Corpus Christi and Other Ports—Departure of Banks—August Election, 1863—Military and Other Operations Continued—Frontier Protection—Expedition Against the Federals on the Rio Grande—"The Last Battle of the War".....	119
CHAPTER XIV. Texas Troops in Service in Other Southern States—The Battles of Shiloh, Vicksburg and Chickamauga—Texas Troops in Louisiana and Arkansas—Engagements at Camp Bisland, Berwick's Bay, Fordoche, Bayou Bourbeau, Mansfield, Pleasant Hill, and Jenkins' Ferry.....	130
CHAPTER XV. Texas Troops in Arkansas and Louisiana Move Southward—Changes and Promotions—No More Battles—Camp Grice—News of the Surrender of Gen. R. E. Lee—Gens. Kirby Smith, Magruder, and Forney Address the Soldiers—The "Break Up" and Travel Home—Surrender—Its Terms—Texas Generals and Colonels—Albert Sidney Johnston a Texas Officer.....	137



## CONTENTS.

v

	PAGE.
CHAPTER XVI. The Texas Citizen Soldier—His Education as a Soldier—Indian Fights—Early Combats in Texas and Mexico—The Texas Yell—Its Effect—A Statue of a Texas Soldier—The Significance of the War Between the States— The Two Reconstructions—The Present National Govern- ment—How Another War may be Averted.....	144
APPENDIX.....	150-221
BIOGRAPHICAL.....	223

---

## ILLUSTRATIONS—TEXAS.

	FACING PAGE.
BAGBY, ARTHUR P.....	252
BEE, HAMILTON P.....	225
DEBRAY, XAVIER B.....	233
ECTOR, MATTHEW D.....	252
GANO, RICHARD M.....	233
GRANBURY, HIRAM B.....	252
GREEN, THOMAS.....	233
GREER, ELKANAH.....	233
GREGG, JOHN.....	252
HARDEMAN, W. P.....	233
HARRISON, JAMES E.....	252
HARRISON, THOMAS.....	252
HOGG, JOSEPH L.....	233
LANE, WALTER P.....	233
MAXEY, SAMUEL B.....	233
McCULLOCH, BEN.....	233
McCULLOCH, HENRY E.....	233
MOORE, JOHN C.....	225
ROBERTS, ORIN M.....	I
ROBERTSON, FELIX H.....	225
ROBERTSON, JEROME B.....	233
ROSS, LAWRENCE S.....	233
STEELE, WILLIAM.....	225
SCURRY, WILLIAM R.....	225
TEXAS AND TRANS MISSISSIPPI (Map).....	Between pages 222 and 223
WATERHOUSE, RICHARD.....	252
WAUL, THOMAS N.....	252
WHARTON, JOHN A.....	225
WHITFIELD, JOHN W.....	252
WIGFALL, LOUIS T.....	252
YOUNG, WILLIAM H.....	225

## CONTENTS—FLORIDA.

	PAGE.
CHAPTER I. Secession of the State—Proceedings of the Convention—Early Events at Pensacola—Union with the Confederate States—First Preparations for War.....	3
CHAPTER II. Federal Strength in Florida—Reinforcement of Fort Pickens—Confederate Troops Called Out for Pensacola—Destruction of the Judah—Fight on Santa Rosa Island—Bombardment of Fort McRee—Evacuation of Pensacola—Other Events of the Period.....	21
CHAPTER III. Organization of Regiments—Second Infantry—Third Infantry—Fourth Infantry—First Cavalry—Second Cavalry—Marion Light Artillery—Events of 1862 and 1863..	42
CHAPTER IV. The Olustee Campaign—Formidable Federal Movement—Design to Establish a New State Government—Concentration of Confederate Forces—Crushing Defeat of the Enemy—Operations Following the Battle.....	56
CHAPTER V. Organization of the District of Florida in the Spring and Summer of 1864—Palatka, Welaka and Fort Butler—Withdrawal of Troops to Virginia—Fights with Gunboats on the St. John's—Renewed Federal Activity—Battle of Palatka—Evacuation of Camp Milton and Baldwin—Battle of Gainesville.....	82
CHAPTER VI. Further Operations in the Fall of 1864—Federal IncurSION to Marianna—Green Cove Springs—Raid to Milton—Fight near Braddock Farm—Near Cedar Keys—Natural Bridge—The Closing Scenes.....	114
CHAPTER VII. Florida Troops in the Army of Northern Virginia—Second Regiment on the Peninsula—Perry's Brigade—Battle of Gettysburg—Finegan's Brigade.....	142
CHAPTER VIII. Florida Troops in the Western Army—The First Infantry—Third Infantry—Fourth Infantry—Stovall's Brigade at Chickamauga—First Cavalry—Sixth Infantry—Seventh Infantry—Trigg's Brigade at Chickamauga—Finley's Brigade.....	164
APPENDIX.....	188
BIOGRAPHICAL.....	193

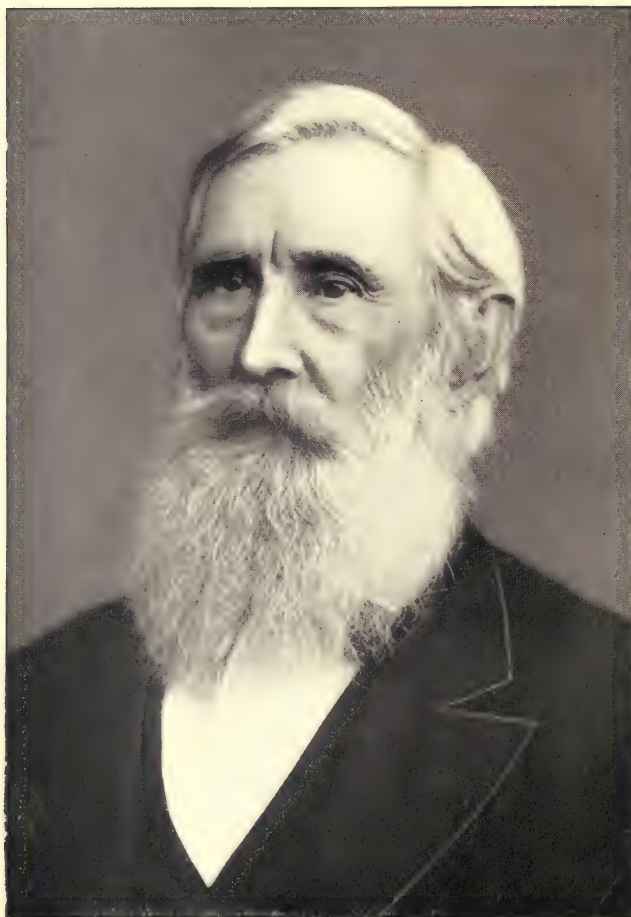
## ILLUSTRATIONS—FLORIDA.

	FACING PAGE.
ANDERSON, J. PATTON.....	205
BREVARD, THEODORE W.....	205
BULLOCK, ROBERT.....	205
DAVIS, W. G. M.....	205
DICKISON, J. J.....	I
FINEGAN, JOSEPH.....	205
FINLEY, JESSE J.....	205
FLORIDA, MAP OF.....	Between pages 192 and 193
LORING, WILLIAM W.....	205
MILLER, WILLIAM.....	205
OCEAN POND, BATTLEFIELD OF (Map).....	65
PERRY, EDWARD A.....	205
SHOUP, FRANCIS A.....	205
SMITH, MARTIN L.....	205
WALTER, WILLIAM S.....	205









O. M. ROBERTS.



# TEXAS

BY

COL. O. M. ROBERTS.



## INTRODUCTION.

**T**EXAS was several months behind some other States of the South in the preparation to do her part in the war. This was due to two causes: First, a course of political events that placed the chief executive of the State in opposition to the will of the mass of the people in regard to the right and policy of immediate State action; second, being a frontier State, she had first to expel from her borders a large body of Federal troops.

These causes which delayed Texas demanded that the first efforts of the people should be made for their removal, and therefore it was near the 1st of June, 1861, before attention could be given to raising troops for the Confederate service. It is due to the people of Texas that these embarrassments should be explained in the history of the war.

There was no record of the organization of the Texas troops kept in the executive offices of the State, and hence, in writing this history, the principal sources of information were found in the war department at Washington, as follows: 1. A list of "Texas Regiments and Battalions in the Confederate Service from 1861 to 1865," from published records. 2. "The Official Records of the Union and Confederate Armies," published by the secretary of war. 3. A statement from the war department of Texas troops in service and in battles in other Southern States.

In none of these, however, are stated the original organization of the commands, or the changes of the field officers by promotion or otherwise. These had to be obtained, when practicable, from other sources. Much in-



formation on these and other subjects was derived from the History of Walker's Division, by J. P. Blessington, from officers and soldiers still living, and from other reliable persons. Information in regard to the government and civil officers of the State has been obtained from the executive offices of the capitol at Austin.

The effort, at this late day, to make a consecutive and consistent account of the part taken by Texas and her people in the war between the States has been an arduous and difficult task. While it must fail to do full justice to the subject, it is hoped that the perusal of it will exhibit an earnest effort to make the best performance practicable under the circumstances by the

AUTHOR.

## CHAPTER I.

THE STATE OF TEXAS IN 1860—UNFAVORABLE POLITICAL CONDITIONS—ELECTION OF GOVERNOR RUNNELS IN 1857—SECESSION AND THE AFRICAN SLAVE TRADE AGITATED — ELECTION OF GOVERNOR HOUSTON IN 1859—HIS OPPOSITION TO SEPARATE STATE ACTION.

WHEN the crisis was pending in 1860, Texas was in an unfavorable condition, politically, to promptly join her sister Southern States in the movement for secession from the United States. This was not from the lack of Southern sentiment generally pervading the mass of the people of the State, but from political differences that had resulted from the course of events previous to that time.

The great struggle in the United States for the annexation of Texas to the Union exhibited parties in the Northern States, formed or forming, antagonistic to the institutions of the South, and to their extension to other territory to become a part of the United States.

The fact that the Democratic party, in control of the government, admitted Texas into the Union, caused the great body of the people of Texas afterward to align themselves with that party. This action was so nearly unanimous that in six general elections for State executive officers, during the twelve years, it was not necessary to hold conventions to make nominations by the Democratic party in Texas. There were political events before the end of that time which tended to make inroads upon the unanimity, and caused the Democratic party to make nominations for governor and other executive officers in 1857, when H. R. Runnels was nominated for

the office of governor, and F. R. Lubbock for that of lieutenant-governor.

One of those events was when, upon the passage of the Kansas and Nebraska bill in Congress, in 1854, Senator Houston of Texas voted against the bill, with the Northern Free Soilers, and Senator Rusk of Texas voted for the bill, with the Democratic and Whig senators of the South, except John Bell, of Tennessee, who also voted against it. This, with other votes given by Senator Houston, caused a strong opposition to be made against him politically in Texas. That, however, did not prevent him from openly and vigorously defending his course in the Senate, which drew to him large numbers of adherents, who became alienated from the regularly organized Democratic party.

Another political event was the advent, from the North into Texas, of the "Know Nothing" order, a secret organization, afterward called the American party, that crept almost unknown to the public into the different parts of the State, and embraced a large number of citizens who organized as a political party, advocating the extension of time to twenty-one years for the naturalization of foreign immigrants, and opposition to Catholicism. As a party they did not publicly nominate a candidate for the various offices from the lowest to the highest in the State; but their concerted action in voting for particular candidates, generally in opposition to the nominees of the Democratic party, when nominations were made, soon exhibited a strong influence in county, district and State elections.

Still another dangerous event was the formation in the North of the Republican party with a platform, as it was regarded in the South, embracing all the leading principles of the Northern States, as held by different portions of their people; they being centralism, federalism, free-soilism and abolitionism, upon which Colonel Fremont ran as a candidate for President in 1856.

Though not elected, he received of the popular vote, 1,341,812, and of the presidential electors, 127. This remarkable combination portended danger to all the cherished political principles of Southern Democrats and ultimately to their peculiar industrial institutions; notwithstanding which it was currently reported that if Fremont had been elected an effort would have been made by leading men in Texas for submission to his administration.

The political situation was made still more perplexing by the espousal by Northern Democrats, and even by some Democrats in Texas, of what was denominated squatter-sovereignty, which was a contention for the right of a territory before becoming a State, but when organized in a territorial government, to admit or exclude slavery at its own discretion. Southern Democrats held that it was only when a constitution was framed in a territory that this could be done; and they believed they had the precedents of the acts of Congress and the decisions of the Supreme court in support of the Southern view on that subject.

With all these matters agitating the minds of the people of Texas, by which differences of opinion had been generated, Senator Sam Houston became an independent candidate for governor. This was in 1857, the most exciting canvass that was ever witnessed throughout Texas. As the nominee, H. R. Runnels, did not make public speeches, Senator Houston was answered in many, if not most of the places where he spoke, by prominent Democratic orators. That brought out all of Senator Houston's powers to arouse the people in vindication of his course in Congress. He styled himself an old-time Democrat, but he was supported by the Americans, disaffected Democrats, and his old Texas friends who would vote for him irrespective of their individual views as to his course in Congress. At the election that year, H. R. Runnels received 32,552 votes, and Houston 23,628. For



lieutenant-governor, F. R. Lubbock received 33,379, his opponent, Jesse Grimes, 20,818, and F. Smith 878. Senator Houston continued to occupy his seat in the Senate until his term expired, which was before the next general election.

Early in 1858 Governor Runnels delivered a message to the legislature, in which he discussed the revolutionary proceedings in the Territory of Kansas to the injury of Southern interests, and referred to the action of Congress as encouraging and not repressing the growing agitation of the slavery question, all of which made it incumbent upon each State to look to its own protection. He recommended resolutions to be passed, making provision for co-operation with other Southern States in a consultation for the mutual protection of their constitutional rights. The legislature passed resolutions (approved February 16, 1858) authorizing the governor to order an election for seven delegates to meet delegates appointed by the Southern States in convention whenever the executives of a majority of the slaveholding States shall express the opinion that such convention is necessary to preserve the equal rights of such States in the Union; and appropriated \$10,000, or as much thereof as was necessary, to pay the expenses of the delegates. The second resolution provided that should an exigency arise, in the opinion of the governor, in which it is necessary for the State of Texas to act alone through a convention representing the sovereignty of the State, he is hereby requested to call a special session of the legislature to provide for such State convention.

This message and the resolutions give evidence of being prompted by serious apprehension of great trouble prevailing in the minds of the people of Texas. That apprehension was justified by the long-continued agitation of the slavery question, which continually increased in virulence in the Congress of the United States, and was led by such distinguished statesmen as Sumner and

Seward. The newspapers were teeming with it from day to day. Mr. Sumner said in the Senate in 1854, "To the overthrow of the slave power we are summoned by a double call, one political and the other philanthropic: First, to remove an oppressive tyranny from the national government; and secondly, to open the gates of emancipation in the slave States." Such sentiments continued to be publicly uttered during the year 1858. Senator Seward, in his speeches at Rochester and at Rome, N. Y., presented what he deemed to be the true issue in the political controversy then pending in the United States. That issue he discussed under the following question: "Shall the social organization of the North supplant that of the South?" and asserted that "free labor and slave labor cannot exist together in the Union." This doubtless reflected the real sentiments of his party, of which he was known to be one of the most prominent leaders, as he had been one of its most efficient originators.

Notwithstanding all this, there was a large body of the citizens of Texas who still had confidence that the general government would be administered so as to protect the constitutional rights of the Southern people. These were classed politically as Union men; they generally objected to the action of the governor and legislature, as prematurely encouraging the sentiment of disunion among the people of Texas. Thus was raised the questions of the right and expediency of secession, which, during 1858 and 1859, up to the time of the general State election, brought out those great debates and discussions by the leading statesmen of Texas, by which the people were thoroughly aroused, although many held aloof, believing the agitation premature and that it was unnecessary at that time to submit the questions to ballot.

Unfortunately, there was another disturbing subject thrust before the public view during that period in Texas. That was the African slave trade. It was advocated in a popular periodical in New Orleans, De Bow's Re-

view, and the Southern Commercial convention at Vicksburg passed resolutions in favor of it. At Galveston, in December, 1858, there were eighty camels said to have been shipped there to disguise the introduction of 200 African negroes, who had been landed somewhere on the Gulf coast. About that time articles appeared in a few newspapers favoring the slave trade, among the rest the State Gazette at Austin, then regarded as the organ of the Democratic State convention in Texas. These articles were generally quotations and not editorials; still they gave the paper the reputation of favoring the slave trade. In the spring and summer of 1859, a few very prominent men in Texas made speeches in favor of the trade, and they were generally understood to be strongly Southern and particular adherents of the governor and his policy; but the movement was strongly opposed by other gentlemen, both in speeches and in writing. It was in this way that the imputation was fastened on the State administration that the slave trade was favored by the governor.

In the summer of 1859, Gov. H. R. Runnels and Lieut.-Gov. F. R. Lubbock were renominated, when the agitation of these political subjects increased in vigor to the end of the canvass. General Houston became again an independent candidate, under the platform announced by himself, "The Constitution and the Union." With little effort on his part he was elected. The issues then raised were both unnecessary and futile at the time. One of them, on secession, was premature; and the other, on the slave trade, was so unpopular that if it had been submitted as a practical question, nineteen-twentieths of the people of Texas would have voted against it. Although the regular Democrats for the most part disregarded these extraneous issues, still they had influence in the election. The vote was for General Houston, 36,257, and for Governor Runnels, 27,500. Notwithstanding this result, there were elected a large majority of regular Democrats

as members of the legislature, and the new State executive officers were of the same party, except the secretary and adjutant-general appointed by Governor Houston. Col. Ed Clark, the running mate with General Houston, was elected lieutenant-governor.

Governor Houston was inaugurated on the 21st of December, 1859, and thus was organized at this critical period in Texas a divided administration, with a chief executive known to be strongly opposed to separate State action as a remedy against Federal wrongs, and a legislature with views not at all in harmony with his on that subject. This was made more manifest during the canvass in 1860 for President, in which the governor's leading friends supported Bell, and the great body of Democrats supported Breckinridge, the Southern Democratic nominee for President. Although the vote was somewhat divided, especially in certain counties in northern and western Texas, the aggregate vote in the State in that election restored the democracy to its former overwhelming majority. There were no electoral tickets put out for either Stephen A. Douglas or Abraham Lincoln. During this canvass there were weekly discussions by leaders on both sides, at the capital and in most other parts of the State, and toward the last of it the people were called upon to determine what should be done in the event Abraham Lincoln should be elected by the combined majorities of the Northern States.

On the 14th of November, 1860, at Huntsville, Tex., a large number of citizens addressed Governor Houston a letter, asking his opinion in regard to the best course to pursue in this important period of our history. In his answer he presented at length his reasons why there was no occasion for separate State action, and defined his position by saying: "Here I take my stand. So long as the Constitution is maintained by Federal authority and Texas is not made the victim of 'Federal wrong,' I am for the Union as it is."



## CHAPTER II.

THE AGITATION AND ACTION AFTER THE ELECTION OF ABRAHAM LINCOLN, PRESIDENT—CALLS UPON GOVERNOR HOUSTON TO CONVENE THE LEGISLATURE—SPEECHES FOR AND AGAINST STATE ACTION—CALL FOR A CONVENTION BY CITIZENS—GOVERNOR HOUSTON CONVENES THE LEGISLATURE—CO-OPERATION OF STATES ADVOCATED AS A DIVERSION FROM SEPARATE STATE ACTION—THE LEGISLATURE AND CONVENTION MEET—ORDINANCE OF SECESSION PASSED—COMMITTEE ON SAFETY APPOINTED TO TAKE THE FEDERAL PROPERTY.

WHILE the news was being received of the strong probability that Abraham Lincoln was elected, the people in all parts of the State looked to the capitol at Austin for the influence to be exerted, either for the advancement or repression of public action in the emergency then existing. Meetings were held at numerous places, and resolutions were passed requesting the governor to convene the legislature in special session, and for that purpose delegations were sent from some localities, which were courteously received by the governor, but he gave them no favorable response to their request. The newspapers were constantly filled with articles showing the urgent desire of the people generally for the meeting of the legislature to take some action for the State. In this way news of what was being done went with great rapidity over the State.

By the 15th of November, 1860, satisfactory information had arrived in Texas that Abraham Lincoln, the Republican candidate, was elected President, on which the Lone Star flag of Texas was hoisted at the capital city and at

most of the cities, towns and villages of the State. This was done, not by any concert nor upon the advice of the political leaders, but by the spontaneous uprising of the people against what was styled the "Black Republican administration of the Federal government." Then it was that the discussions at the capital and elsewhere became more exciting. Governor Houston and A. J. Hamilton, member of Congress, and many others, made violent speeches against State action, and equally vigorous speeches were made for immediate secession. The most intense excitement prevailed throughout the whole State upon hearing that other States had called conventions. About the 21st of November, 1860, a number of gentlemen assembled in the office of the attorney-general, George Flournoy, for consultation upon the condition of the people whose desire for prompt State action had so far been repressed by the chief executive. Having lost all hope that the legislature would be called together, they determined to make a call for a convention as citizens of the State, and at once fixed the date for the election of delegates on the 8th of January, 1861, and for the convention to meet at Austin on the 28th; and provided for the delegates to be double the number of the representatives in the legislature, omitting the senators, by which there would be 180 delegates. Those signing the call were more than sixty citizens, from Travis and 27 other counties, most of whom were prominent men. The call was published and gladly responded to in all parts of the State. The question then before the people was regarded as above mere politics, and such as required all persons to speak out their opinions. The judges of the supreme and district courts upon being called on gave full expression of their views, which generally were in favor of the immediate action of the State in its sovereign capacity.

On the 17th of December, Governor Houston issued his proclamation for a special session of the legislature to convene on the 21st of January, 1861, which would be

one week before the meeting of the convention called by the citizens. His reasons assigned for the call were that there was great excitement in the public mind in reference to our relations to the Federal government, and he wished measures provided for a free expression of the popular will; also that the necessary means might be provided for the protection of the frontier against the depredations of the Indians.

Obviously to produce a diversion from immediate State action, the governor, on the 27th of December, 1860, issued his proclamation founded upon the joint resolutions of the legislature, approved by Governor Runnels, February 16, 1858, relating to the trouble in Kansas, in which he ordered an election to be held on the 4th day of January, 1861, for seven delegates to represent Texas in a consultation with delegates from the other Southern States as to the best mode of maintaining the equal rights of such States in the Union. No such election was held and no such consultation took place; but on the 8th of January, the election was held throughout the State for delegates, who met in convention at Austin on January 28th and proceeded to organize by the election of Oran M. Roberts, president, and R. Brownrig, secretary.

On the meeting of the legislature, January 21st, Governor Houston in his message favored concerted action by all the Southern States as the mode of relief, and recommended a submission of the question to a vote of the people at a general election. The legislature passed a joint resolution recognizing the convention and providing that the ordinance of secession, when passed, should be submitted to a vote of the people. This was approved by the governor on February 4th, "with a protest against the assumption of any power on the part of said convention beyond the reference of the question of a longer connection of Texas with the Union, to the people."

The convention appointed a committee composed of John H. Reagan, Peter W. Gray, John D. Steele, William P.

Rogers, and Thos. J. Devine, to confer with the governor soon after its meeting. In the cordial reception given them, he said that when the voice of the people of Texas had been declared through the ballot box, no citizen would be more ready to yield obedience to its will or to risk his all in its defense than himself.

On February 1, 1861, the convention passed the ordinance of secession. Before taking the vote the governor and other executive officers and justices of the Supreme court were invited to be present, and the members of the legislature entered the hall which had been crowded by citizens to witness the voting. Governor Houston appeared, and, with Lieut.-Gov. Ed Clark, was seated on the right of the president. To the left were seated Chief-Justice R. T. Wheeler and General McQueen, commissioner to the convention from South Carolina. Thus, with appropriate ceremony and great solemnity, the roll was called, and responses made by each member of the convention, resulting in 167 votes for secession and 7 votes against it. By direction of the convention the president sent letters enclosing copies of the ordinance to Senators Wigfall and Hemphill, and Representative A. J. Hamilton, then in Congress, and to each one of the governors of the slaveholding States.

The legislature passed a law and another supplementary thereto, providing for a vote on the ordinance of secession by the people, and requiring the governor to issue his proclamation therefor, which was done, the election being fixed for the 22d of February, 1861, as prescribed by the convention, return of it to be made to the secretary of state in time to be counted on the 2d of March, 1861. The convention had also provided for the election and for duplicate returns to be made to it in like manner.

The convention, contemplating the acquisition of the government military stores, and the removal from the State of the Federal troops, that were estimated to number 2,700 of all arms, located at the different frontier posts,



with headquarters at San Antonio, under the command of General Twiggs, deemed it advisable to raise funds to defray the necessary expenses. The president was authorized to negotiate a loan of \$100,000, which was done in New Orleans by Gen. E. B. Nichols, appointed agent for that purpose. The convention had appointed the usual committees and in addition a committee of public safety, which was designed to act as a military committee in securing the public property and in the removal of the Federal troops.

On the 2d of February, 1861, it was resolved in convention, "That should the standing committee of public safety deem it essential to the public safety to appoint commissioners, officers or persons in reference to taking possession of the Federal property within the limits of this State, they shall have power to appoint such and assign them their duties and give them the instructions under which they shall act; but this power shall only extend to such cases in which the committee may deem prompt action and secrecy absolutely necessary." On the 4th a resolution was passed authorizing that committee to act during the recess of the convention at such times and places as in their judgment the public interest requires.

During every day of the meeting of the convention a tender of military companies was made to it, with the names of officers and privates from different parts of the State, which on each morning were announced by the president. They were referred to the committee of public safety, which was thus furnished with the information necessary to collect a force if it became desirable.

The president, to whom had been entrusted the disbursement of the money that had been borrowed, appointed Gen. E. B. Nichols as agent to perform that duty, under the direction of the committee of public safety, which was sanctioned by the convention. The committee held its meetings privately, apart from the body of the convention, acting independently within the scope

of the power conferred upon it. It was composed of prominent men from different portions of the State, including some who had experience in military service. They were as follows: John C. Robertson, chairman; John Henry Brown, Jas. H. Rogers of Marion county, J. R. Armstrong, A. T. Rainey, John L. Ford of Cameron county, Wm. P. Rogers of Harris county, C. Ganahl, L. M. Norris, T. S. Lubbock, J. A. Wilcox, J. J. Diamond, J. G. Thompson, T. J. Devine, W. G. Miller, John A. Green, C. L. Cleveland, Jas. Hooker, P. N. Luckett, F. W. Latham.

In the report of the committee, March 21, 1861, appears the following account of an interview with the governor as to its mode of procedure:

To the Hon. O. M. Roberts, President of the Convention:

The Committee of Public Safety beg leave to report to the convention that on the 4th day of February, 1861, having matured their plans for the seizure of the property in the hands of the Federal officers in the State, and selected the officers to perform that duty, on motion a sub-committee of three, to-wit, Gen. W. P. Rogers, Hon. W. S. Oldham, and Hon. T. J. Devine, were appointed to confer with Gen. Sam Houston, the executive of the State. The committee proceeded at once to perform that duty. On their return they were requested to make their report to the committee in writing, which was accordingly done. This report is herewith submitted to the convention.

To Hon. John C. Robertson, Chairman, Committee of Public Safety:

The undersigned committee appointed to wait upon his Excellency, Sam Houston, respectfully report that on the day the convention adjourned Messrs. Rogers, Devine and Oldham were appointed a sub-committee by the committee of public safety to wait on and confer with Governor Houston in regard to the duties of the committee, and to assure him that the committee would exercise no powers that would conflict with his, as the executive of

the State. The sub-committee visited the governor in the executive office. They advised him of the objects of their mission, and to prevent misunderstanding between him and the committee of public safety, and that the latter would not attempt the exercise of any powers that properly belonged to him as the executive of the State. He expressed his gratification at our visit and the assurance which we gave him. We then expressed to him the certainty, in our opinion, of the ordinance of secession being ratified by the people. We then suggested to him the propriety of securing the Federal property and arms in the State in anticipation of that event. He said it should be done by all means; that it should be done with promptness and prudently; that he had understood that unauthorized men had contemplated taking the property, and had therefore advised General Twiggs, and asked of the general the conditions upon which the arms, etc., would be surrendered to the State; that he had received an answer from the general which he would furnish as soon as his private secretary should come in, which he subsequently did. He said the property should be taken in the name of the State, inventory be made, and everything be faithfully preserved, and suggested the propriety of removing the artillery and property pertaining thereto higher up the river; that prudent men should have charge of the expedition; that the disbursing officers should be responsible men, and should give bond, etc. Upon a question by General Rogers he stated that Cortinas might make another raid, and that the forces sent to the Rio Grande should be sufficient to repel him. It was agreed between the governor and the committee that he could not perform those duties while Texas remained in the Union and his oath to support the Constitution of the United States remained binding on him. The governor further stated that secrecy was of the first importance in our contemplated movements on the Rio Grande. In conversation he said he had heard that it had been charged upon him that he had sent a special messenger to General Twiggs in order to get arms to turn against the State convention; that it was untrue, and he never would be instrumental in the shedding of fraternal blood.

W. P. ROGERS,  
W. S. OLDHAM,  
THOS. J. DEVINE.

On the reception of this report the committee were very much relieved from the apprehension which existed that the State authorities might be induced to throw obstacles in the way of the plans they had adopted to obtain the Federal property. . . . .

I have the honor to be yours respectfully,

JOHN C. ROBERTSON,  
Chairman, Com. Public Safety.

## CHAPTER III.

THE COMMITTEE OF PUBLIC SAFETY APPOINTS A SUB-COMMITTEE TO CONFER WITH GENERAL TWIGGS—COL. BEN McCULLOCH TO RAISE A FORCE FOR SAN ANTONIO—COL. HENRY E. McCULLOCH TO RAISE A FORCE FOR THE NORTHWESTERN FRONTIER—COL. JOHN S. FORD TO RAISE A FORCE TO GO TO THE LOWER RIO GRANDE—INSTRUCTIONS GIVEN THEM, AND THEY SET ABOUT THEIR DUTIES—SECESSION SUBMITTED TO A VOTE OF THE PEOPLE—DELEGATES ELECTED TO THE CONVENTION AT MONTGOMERY—GENERAL TWIGGS ISSUES AN ORDER OF SURRENDER—THANKS BY THE CONVENTION.

THE committee of public safety had formed their plans before consulting the governor, and having been informed that General Twiggs, who was then in command of the Eighth military district, with headquarters at San Antonio, was a Southern man by birth and friendly to the cause of the South, and would in all probability surrender to the convention all of the Federal property under his control on demand made, passed the following resolution, with the hope that civil commissioners might accomplish the purpose of the committee without the display of an armed force: "Resolved, That Samuel A. Maverick, Thomas J. Devine, Philip N. Lockett and James H. Rogers be appointed commissioners to confer with Gen. D. E. Twiggs, with regard to the public arms, munitions of war, etc., under his control and belonging to the government of the United States, with power to demand and remove the same in the name of Texas, and that said commissioners be clothed with full power to carry into effect the powers herein delegated and retain



possession of such arms, munitions of war, stores, etc., subject to the order of the convention of the people of the State of Texas, and report their acts and doings in the premises to the committee of public safety."

A commission was issued and delivered to these commissioners with full instructions, both public and private, to regulate their conduct. Both Judge Devine and Senator Maverick were distinguished citizens of San Antonio, and intimately acquainted with General Twiggs. On the same day the committee conferred on Ben McCulloch the rank of colonel, with directions to hold himself in readiness to raise men and munitions of war, whenever called on by the commissioners to San Antonio, and to be governed according to the secret instructions given the commissioners. On February 5th the committee appointed Henry E. McCulloch colonel of cavalry, with instructions and authority to raise and employ a sufficient force and proceed without delay to negotiate with the respective commanders of the various military posts, from Fort Chadbourne, including Camp Colorado, Camp Cooper, and Fort Belknap, to Red river, for the delivery to him as commissioner, in behalf of the State of Texas, of all and every species of property, quartermaster property and stores, commissary property and stores, ordnance and ordnance stores, medical and hospital stores, and further advising him not to use force unless necessary, and to secure the property when received. At the same time the committee appointed Col. John S. Ford military commander, to proceed at once to the Rio Grande for the twofold purpose—first, for the use of such means as will secure to the State of Texas all arms and munitions of war, together with all property of every kind now retained by and in the possession of the United States of America at Point Isabel, and at all points along the line of the Rio Grande; and second, to use such means as will protect the Rio Grande frontier. He was instructed to give a receipt for the property if E. B.

Nichols was not present, and hold the same subject to his order. These three expeditions constituted the plan of operations by that committee, relying much for their peaceable execution upon the favorable action of General Twiggs. The appointees promptly set about the performance of the duties confided to them.

While these things were being performed by the committee of public safety, there was a harmonious correspondence between the legislature and the convention in whatever was necessary to the common design for immediate State action by a convention. The convention was also in regular session. Most of its proceedings related to other committees that had been appointed, and to subjects of a political character and not pertaining to military operations, which need not be given at length in this history.

The convention provided for submitting the ordinance of secession to a vote of the people, for the mode of election and the return of the votes to the convention. This was followed in the action of the legislature on the same subject. On the same day a committee was appointed to prepare an address to the people of Texas, as follows: John Henry Brown, George Flournoy, Prior Lea, Malcolm D. Gresham of Rusk, A. P. Wiley and J. A. Wilcox. The address was prepared, signed by the members of the convention and published.

On February 4th a resolution was passed for the election by the convention of seven delegates to the convention of Southern States at Montgomery. Those chosen were John H. Reagan, Louis T. Wigfall, John Hemphill, T. N. Waul, John Gregg, W. S. Oldham and Wm. B. Ochiltree. An ordinance was passed to secure the friendship and co-operation of Arizona and New Mexico, also of the Choctaw, Chickasaw, Creek, Seminole and Cherokee Indians. Simeon Hart and P. T. Herbert were sent to the two territories, and James Bourland and Chas. A. Hamilton to the Indian tribes, as commissioners. At

the request of the president a vice-president was ordered to be appointed, and John D. Steele, of Leon county, was thus honored. On February 5th the convention adjourned temporarily, to meet again on the 2d of March.

The president issued an address to the people, stating what had been done by the convention and the legislature, and that Louisiana, Mississippi, Alabama, Florida, Georgia and South Carolina had already seceded from the Union, and that our position as a Gulf State made it necessary that we should join them in a common effort for the protection of our rights and liberties. A sufficient number of the committee of public safety to transact business remained in session, nine of whom, including the chairman, left Austin and went to Galveston, partly to prevent their presence in secret meetings from being made a ground of irritating excitement by opponents of the convention, and partly to superintend the embarkation of Col. John S. Ford's troops, to go by water to Brazos Santiago, to perform his mission on the lower Rio Grande. They sailed on the steamship General Rusk, commanded by Capt. Leon Smith, and on another vessel.

While at Galveston, Gen. Jas. H. Rogers was commissioned to visit Louisiana to endeavor to procure arms to be sent to Texas. He reported his success in obtaining from General Moore 1,000 stands of muskets, with an assurance of an increased loan if necessity should require it. He shipped half of them to Messrs. Murphy & Co. at Jefferson, Tex., and the others to Gen. E. B. Nichols at Galveston.

The legislature, on March 8th, passed an act appropriating \$25,000 to pay the State troops, and on the 9th adjourned to meet again on Monday, the 18th of March, which was designed to give the convention time to adjust the status of the State before the second session of the legislature.

During the recess of the convention the commissioners at San Antonio were engaged in their negotiations with

General Twiggs, and having met with some delay, they called upon Col. Ben McCulloch to appear at that place with the troops he had collected; really more to make a demonstration of force than under any expectation that it would be necessary to use it in actual hostility. General Twiggs recognized that there was a political as well as a military question involved in his position. He had written as early as the 15th of January to his government to be relieved of his position before the 4th of the ensuing March, and for orders directing what to do in the emergency, also giving the information that he would not fight against the Southern people. The commissioners having made a demand upon him for the surrender of the troops and post under his command, he appointed a committee of his officers to consult with the commissioners, which produced no result, and Twiggs hesitated in taking action, having received no orders from the United States government. The commissioners, to bring the matter to an issue, called in Col. Ben McCulloch, whose command, consisting of about 400 men, had arrived near the city on the 15th of February, 1861.

The action as reported by the commissioners was as follows: "On the morning of the 16th that officer [Col. Ben McCulloch] entered San Antonio with his command, and being joined by the city companies and about 100 citizens of San Antonio and those from Medina and Atascosa [amounting in all to over 1,000], the Alamo commissary and arsenal buildings were surrounded, and commanding positions secured before daylight on the tops of adjoining buildings. At 6 o'clock a. m. a demand in writing, in accordance with their instructions, was again made on General Twiggs for the surrender of all public property and post, and the interview between that officer and the undersigned [the commissioners] resulted in the surrender of the posts held by the Federal troops, and the delivery of all public property in San Antonio to the commissioners. The United States troops were permit-



ted to retain their clothing, etc., and were marched out that evening to encamp at San Pedro springs, about one mile from the city, there to remain until transportation was furnished to convey them to the coast."

To carry out the agreement thus entered into, the following general order was issued by General Twiggs:

Headquarters Department of Texas,

San Antonio, February 18, 1861.

General Orders, No. 5.

The State of Texas, having demanded through its commissioners the delivery of military posts and property within the limits of this command; and the commanding general, desiring to avoid even the possibility of a collision between the Federal and State troops, the posts will be evacuated by their garrisons, and these will take up, as soon as the necessary preparations can be made, their line of march out of Texas by way of the coast; marching out with their arms (the light batteries with their guns), clothing, camp and garrison equipage, quartermaster stores, subsistence, medical, hospital stores, and such means of transportation of every kind as may be necessary for an efficient and orderly movement of the troops, prepared for attack or defense against aggressions from any source. The troops will carry with them provisions as far as the coast.

By order of Brevet Major-General Twiggs:

A. N. NICHOLS,

Assistant Adjutant-General.

That was his last order, he being relieved of his command the next day, the 19th of February, 1861, by Colonel Waite assuming command of the department under an appointment previously made.

The commissioners appointed agents to take charge of the public property after the evacuation of the Federal troops, and there being no longer any use for the volunteer forces of Col. Ben McCulloch, they were disbanded and returned to their homes. Ben McCulloch returned to Austin, and after getting an order for 1,000 guns for the State resigned his office.



Afterward, on the 9th of March, the convention passed a resolution unanimously, "That the thanks of the people of Texas are due and are hereby tendered to Maj.-Gen. David E. Twiggs for his patriotism, moral courage, and loyalty to the Constitution of the United States, embracing the rights and liberty of his native South, and that a copy of this resolution on parchment, signed by the president and secretary, be transmitted to General Twiggs." The resolution, being properly prepared, was promptly sent to the old hero of many battles.

The commissioners, Messrs. Devine, Maverick and Lockett, continued their operations, corresponding with Cols. H. E. McCulloch and Ford, until the final adjournment of the convention. Very much was done, both of action and correspondence, and that the result may be consistently explained the narration will be postponed for the present so that what was done by each of the officers appointed may be stated.

## CHAPTER IV.

CONVENTION RE-ASSEMBLES—RETURNS OF ELECTION COUNTED—INDEPENDENCE DECLARED—GOVERNOR HOUSTON POSTS THE VOTE MARCH 4TH—PROVISIONAL CONSTITUTION RATIFIED—COMMITTEE SENT TO THE GOVERNOR—HIS ANSWER—A RESOLUTION CONTINUING THE STATE GOVERNMENT—ALL OFFICERS TO TAKE OFFICIAL OATH—GOVERNOR AND SECRETARY REFUSE TO TAKE IT—ED CLARK DECLARED GOVERNOR—GOVERNOR HOUSTON RETIRES—HE PUBLISHES HIS PROTEST—EFFECT OF THE VOTE ON SECESSION—GENERAL HOUSTON DISCLAIMS INTENTION TO RESIST COLONEL WAITE—CONVENTION ADJOURNS—LEADING MEN THAT WENT TO THE ARMY.

WHEN the convention reconvened on the 2d of March, 1861, it was known that the provisional government of the Southern Confederacy had been instituted by the election of Jefferson Davis, of Mississippi, President, and Alexander Stephens, of Georgia, Vice-President, which generally met the approbation of the members of the Texas State convention. John H. Reagan, of Texas, had been appointed postmaster-general. The returns of the election for and against secession coming in were being counted, both in the convention and in the office of the secretary of state, which being completed on the morning of the 4th of March, exhibited the vote of the State to be 60,826, of which 46,129 was for secession and 14,697 against secession, a majority in favor of it of 31,432 votes.

The president of the convention, having about fifteen minutes before 11 o'clock a. m. on the 4th of March, 1861, announced the vote as returned and counted, "declared, on behalf of the convention and the people, the

State of Texas to be a free and independent sovereignty." It was then noticeable that nearly every member wore upon his breast a star with five points, an emblem of Texas independence. The convention soon afterward adjourned for dinner, and in passing out of the capitol grounds the members saw posted on the gate the following printed proclamation of Governor Houston

### PROCLAMATION

BY THE GOVERNOR OF THE STATE OF TEXAS.

Whereas, By virtue of an Act of the Legislature of the State of Texas, an election was ordered to be held on the 23d of February, A. D. 1861, at which the people of Texas were called upon to vote in favor of or against "Secession" from the government of the United States, and,

Whereas, said election was held, and returns thereof, received on the 2d day of March, have been opened and counted as required by law, and it appearing that a majority of those votes, as well as a majority of those received since that period, are in favor of "Secession,"

Now therefore, I, Sam Houston, Governor of the State of Texas, do hereby issue my proclamation declaring that a large majority of votes returned and counted of said election are in favor of "Secession" of the State of Texas from the United States of America.

Given under my hand and the seal of the State of Texas, at Austin this 4th day of March, 1861.

{SEAL}

By the Governor, SAM HOUSTON.

E. W. CAVE, Secretary of State.

This was a declaration of a fact, omitting the consequences of it. On the 5th of March, 1861, the convention passed an ordinance ratifying the provisional constitution of the Southern Confederacy adopted at Montgomery, with directions for its transmission to the Texas delegates sent there to represent Texas, when this State should be admitted to that union.

On the 6th of March the president transmitted the ordinance of ratification to the delegates by the hand of

Stephen P. Hollingsworth, who performed the service faithfully, giving the information on his return of the admission of Texas in the confederation of Southern States. On the same day a committee of five, Messrs. Montgomery, Robertson of Washington, Rogers of Harris, Jennings and Broaddus, were appointed to inform the governor of the vote of the people at the election as found by the convention. On the 7th of March this committee reported the answer received by them from the governor, in which he said: "In reply to your communication of the 5th I can only say, when the legislature authorized the convention to submit the proposition to the people of Texas on the subject of secession from the Federal government of the United States, it was understood that the performance of that act, when done, would terminate the existence of the convention." He stated further that he would recommend to the legislature, when it should meet, to take into consideration the important issues arising out of the severance of our connection with the United States, and suggested that the legislature might then call another convention to make such changes in the constitution of the State as her present and future relations to the world at large may require; concluding, "until then it will be the duty of the executive, as well as all State officials, to continue in the lawful discharge of their functions, conforming their action to the sphere of Texas only." Thus his present position was defined, without disclosing his ulterior designs. Upon the reading of this letter a furious excitement arose, which, being confined to a few of the members, very soon subsided and gave place to the regular business. On the next day, the 8th of March, it being deemed appropriate for the president of the convention to answer this letter of the governor, calling in question the power of the convention to do anything more than submit the question of secession to the vote of the people, he did so by offering resolutions as follows:

Resolved, That this convention do now declare that it not only had power to pass and submit the ordinance of secession, but that it also possessed and will exercise the right, on behalf of the people, to do whatever may be incidental to the same, and that may be necessary and proper for the protection of the rights of the people, and the defense of the State in the present emergency; and that it will, as speedily as practicable, consummate the connection of Texas with the provisional government of the Confederate States of America, whose constitution has already been ratified by an ordinance of this convention.

Resolved further, That this resolution be communicated by the secretary of the convention to the respective departments of the State government.

Which resolutions were unanimously adopted.

On the 14th of March the convention passed an ordinance which provided for the continuance of the existing State government and of all the laws of the State not inconsistent with the ordinances of the convention, and that all of the officers of the State shall continue in office upon taking the oath of office, as prescribed in the State constitution adopted by this convention, for their respective terms of office, and that should any officer refuse to take said oath, his office shall be then deemed and held to be vacant; that the governor, lieutenant-governor, secretary of state, comptroller, treasurer, attorney-general and commissioner of the general land office, shall be required to appear in open session of the convention to take said oath at such time as the president may appoint within three days (Sunday excepted) from the passage of this ordinance, which oath shall be administered by any justice of the Supreme court, or judge of a district court of this State. The oath of office was promptly administered to the members of the convention, and soon afterward to the members of the legislature.

As the duty was imposed on the president to determine the time for the oath to be taken in the convention by the State executive officers, and as the last of the three



days would fall on Monday, the day the legislature was to convene, and as it was deemed by him of the first importance to have it settled before that time who should then occupy the positions of State executive officers, he appointed the second day, Saturday, at noon, for the administration of the oath, and forthwith had notifications of the time and place prepared and sent to them. As Governor Houston was not then in the capitol, he appointed a member, George W. Chilton, to convey to him the notification, accompanied with a copy of the ordinance continuing the State government, and requiring the official oath; which he promptly proceeded to accomplish. The official oath adopted by the convention simply substituted the "Constitution of the Confederate States" for the "Constitution of the United States," as it previously existed in the constitution of the State of Texas.

Colonel Chilton the next morning reported that he had the evening before presented to the governor the notification and ordinance, and that the governor handed them back with the request that he should return them to the president, stating that he did not acknowledge the existence of the convention and should not regard its action upon him, and expressing a high regard for the individual members of the convention, which he requested should be communicated to them. The report was presented and read to the convention. At the appointed hour it was announced that the time had arrived for administering the official oath to the State executive officers, when Ed Clark, lieutenant-governor, Cyrus H. Randolph, and Francis M. White, commissioner of the general land office, appeared and had the oath of office administered to them. The governor and secretary of state not appearing, the fact of their failure to appear and take the oath was announced to the convention.

At the afternoon session an ordinance was passed in furtherance of the ordinance providing for the continuance in existence of the State government, reciting that,

whereas Sam Houston, governor, and E. W. Cave, secretary of state, failed and refused to take the oath prescribed by the constitution and ordinances of the convention; therefore be it ordained, that the office of governor is vacant, and that Lieut.-Gov. Edward Clark is hereby required and authorized to exercise the powers and authority appertaining to the office of governor until another be chosen at the periodical election, and be duly qualified; and that the office of secretary of state, by reason of the said E. W. Cave having failed and refused to take the oath prescribed, is declared vacant, and he is required to turn over and deliver to his successor the archives and great seal of state, and other property belonging to the department of state. Next week Governor Clark entered the governor's office and General Houston retired from it, and thenceforward Governor Clark was recognized by the legislature, the officers and people of the State as the governor, to the end of his term.

In a few days there appeared in the newspapers a letter from General Houston, "Addressed to the People of Texas, Executive Department, March 16, 1861" (the day prescribed for taking the oath), in which at great length he reviewed his course and the action of the convention, and, indicating his future action, said, "I love Texas too well to bring civil strife and bloodshed upon her. To avert this calamity I shall make no endeavor to maintain my authority as chief executive of this State, except by the peaceful exercise of my functions. When I can no longer do that, I shall calmly withdraw from the scene, leaving the government in the hands of those who have usurped its authority, but still claiming that I am its chief executive." In conclusion he said, "If I am thus deprived of the poor privilege of putting on record my sentiments, through a refusal on the part of the legislature to receive my message, I will lay the same before the people and appeal to them, as I declared I would in my inaugural."

For a short time a few of his zealous supporters, as indicated in the newspapers, anticipated an uprising of the people to restore him to the office, but any manifestation of it failed to appear on the surface. Notwithstanding his strong opposition, that induced him to resist step by step the desire of a large majority of the people for immediate action of the State and for its union with the other Southern States, his reception of the committees sent to him by the convention, and his communications to them and to the members generally, were of the most courteous and even friendly character, many of the members being his friends personally, and previously his able supporters.

A vote of the people was absolutely necessary. For with 2,700 Federal troops of all arms in Texas, and the people sectionally divided, as was shown in the election, wherein a number of populous counties in northern and western Texas polled majorities against secession, and the chief executive of the State with numerous influential supporters standing out in open opposition, nothing but a vote of the people on the question at issue could have prevented a division in hostile array in Texas just as soon as a gun was fired to force the people of the South in subjection to the rule of the Republican party in control of the Federal government. That vote acted like a charm in harmonizing the conflicting political elements, so that Texas was a unit on the side of the South during the whole war. Even General Houston, always a Texas patriot, afterward in a speech to the soldiers of a Confederate regiment, while referring to his opposition, expressed the hope that their efforts would be crowned with success, and said that he had fitted up his son to be a soldier in the cause and if he had a hundred he would send them to the ranks to fight for their country. In fact, most of those who opposed secession became good officers or soldiers in the Confederate army. General Houston exhibited his care for the Texas people shortly after he

left the office of governor by the following letter to Colonel Waite, who had just then assumed command of the Federal troops in Texas:

Austin, March 29, 1861.

Dear Sir: I have received intelligence that you have, or will soon receive orders to concentrate United States troops under your command at Indianola, in this State, to sustain me in the exercise of my official functions. Allow me most respectfully to decline any such assistance of the United States government, and to most earnestly protest against the concentration of troops or fortifications in Texas, and request that you remove all such troops out of this State at the earliest day practicable, or at any rate by all means take no action toward hostile movements till further ordered by the government at Washington City, or particularly of Texas.

Thine, SAM HOUSTON.

Colonel Waite, U. S. Army, San Antonio.

The convention continued in session, and on the 18th of March an ordinance was passed authorizing the raising of a regiment of mounted men for the defense of the State. For this regiment Col. John S. Ford was elected colonel, John R. Baylor, lieutenant-colonel, and Edwin Waller, major. On the 20th an ordinance was passed to confer jurisdiction over the forts, navy yards, arsenals and lighthouses in Texas upon the Confederate States. Ordinances were passed to authorize the purchase from Col. Ben McCulloch as agent of a gun factory in Virginia, of 1,000 muskets; declaring the military property of the United States, except that taken away by the soldiers, to belong to the State of Texas, and requiring the commissioners appointed by the convention to make a full report (of the property surrendered to them) to the governor.

Almost daily the convention had been receiving tenders of military services from individuals and companies. An ordinance was adopted requiring Colonel Ford to discharge the force on the Rio Grande when his regiment



was organized, and also requiring Col. Henry E. McCulloch to discharge his men when his regiment for Confederate service was organized, and requiring those officers, together with E. B. Nichols and Hiram Waller, to report their accounts which had not been passed upon by the convention to the governor. A resolution was passed commending the action of the committee of public safety, and of the commissioners and officers that had been appointed, for the faithful discharge of the duties intrusted to them.

On the 23d of March, 1861, an ordinance was passed ratifying the permanent constitution of the Confederate States, and was promptly communicated to the Texas delegates in the Confederate Congress at Montgomery.

It was a fortunate circumstance that Messrs. Nelson, Stewart, Stockdale, Henderson, Baxter and others were members in both bodies, thus the convention and legislature were informed of what was doing in each body; and both having common objects to accomplish, they were constantly kept in harmonious co-operation. The convention adjourned on the 25th of March, leaving the legislature in session to prepare the State for further action as a member of the Southern Confederacy.

The number of the members of the convention (180) had purposely been made large to bring into it many distinguished citizens who had not actually been engaged in politics, whose solid judgment and influence assisted greatly in the direction of everything that was done, and equally in preventing from being done some things that would have been used by those acting in opposition to the prejudice of the cause. As the object of this history so far has been confined mainly to exhibiting the process in the great struggle by which a large majority of the people had become a part of the Southern Confederacy, also the military operations set on foot by the convention to take possession of the Federal property and remove from the State the Federal forces, no note has been made



of other conspicuous action by the members of both the convention and the legislature, as not necessary to be set forth, however commendable they were in effecting the common purpose by which all were inspired, which was to secede and join the Southern Confederacy. Many of the citizens who signed the call for the convention, and of the members of the convention, and of the senators and representatives in the special session of the legislature, afterward attested the sincerity of their purpose in what they did, by voluntarily entering the Confederate army, which deserves to be commemorated as a part of the history of that eventful period.

Signers of the call for the convention subsequently held rank as follows: John Gregg, Thomas Green, John A. Wharton, Henry E. McCulloch, brigadier-generals; R. Q. Mills, Edward Clark, C. M. Winkler, Geo. Baylor, Geo. Flournoy, John R. Baylor, colonels; Wm. Bird, lieutenant-colonel; D. M. Pendergast, John J. Good, W. C. Pitts, captains; and Thos. J. Chambers, aide-de-camp to a general in Virginia the first part of the war, though advanced in years. Of the members of the convention who became officers besides John Gregg and John A. Wharton, were Allison Nelson, Wm. P. Harde-man, Jerome B. Robertson, Wm. Scurry, Joseph L. Hogg, brigadier-generals; James. H. Rogers and John Henry Brown, adjutant-generals; Colonels A. T. Rainey, John S. Ford, Wm. P. Rogers, P. N. Luckett, Thos. S. Lubbock, B. F. Terry, A. M. Hobby, E. B. Nichols, J. J. Diamond, Oran M. Roberts, Geo. Flournoy, W. B. Ochil-tree, Eli H. Baxter, Isham Chisum, Thos. A. Anderson, M. F. Locke, Robert S. Gould, Tignal W. Jones; Lieu-tenant-Colonels A. H. Davidson, Thos. C. Frost, A. G. Clopton, Philip A. Work, John Ireland, A. J. Nicholson, Wm. W. Diamond, Jas. E. Shepard, P. T. Herbert, John C. Robertson, C. A. Abercrombie, Wm. H. Johnson, Wm. M. Neyland; Majors Geo. W. Chilton, C. M. Leseuer, J. W. Throckmorton; Captains Richard Coke, Amazi

Bradshaw, Wm. Clark, Drury Fields, Robert Graham, J. W. Hutchinson, Lewis W. Moore, W. R. Peck, C. M. Pendergast, Wilkins Hunt, Jas. M. Harrison, Gilchrist McKay, Sam A. Wilson; Lieutenants Richard L. Askew, J. E. Cook, John R. Hays and A. P. Shuford.

Among the members of the legislature were Colonels J. H. Parsons, Richard B. Hubbard, N. H. Darnell, D. B. Culberson, P. H. Mabry, A. F. Crawford, R. H. Taylor; Lieutenant-Colonels E. E. Scott, J. H. Manly; and Majors Matt Dale and Wm. Wortham. Doubtless there were many others of each class referred to that entered the army of whom no record or other reliable information has been obtained.

## CHAPTER V.

PROCEEDINGS OF THE LEGISLATURE—THE EXPEDITION OF COLONEL FORD TO THE RIO GRANDE—COLONEL VAN DORN COMES TO TEXAS—HE FINISHES THE CAPTURE AND SURRENDER OF FEDERAL TROOPS—THEIR EMBARKATION—OTHER COMMANDERS GO TO NEW MEXICO AND TO INDIAN TERRITORY—GOVERNOR CLARK ASSISTS IN RAISING TROOPS.

THE legislature adjourned on the 9th of February and met again on the 18th of March, 1861. A joint resolution was passed on the 6th of April, requiring the officers and agents of the State, having in charge or possession any of the property recently taken from the government of the United States, to turn the same over to the agent appointed by the Confederate States government to receive it, provided that the Confederate States shall assume all responsibility to the government of the United States.

An appropriation was made of \$100,000 to supply deficiencies for frontier defense, and on the 8th of April was passed an act providing for issuing \$1,000,000 eight per cent bonds for the payment of debts incurred by the convention and for the military defense of the State. On the same day an appropriation of \$75,000 was made for subsistence and transportation of the regiment ordered to be raised by the convention, and the governor was authorized to borrow \$90,000, pledging the railroad school bonds as security for the loan.

Col. John S. Ford, in his expedition to the lower Rio Grande, was accompanied by E. B. Nichols, commissioner and disbursing agent, appointed by the committee of public safety. With the two vessels conveying the forces

from Galveston, composed of six companies, 500 strong, they arrived off the bar of Brazos Santiago February 21st, 1861, and were boarded by a pilot, who informed them that Lieutenant Thompson, with twelve men, was prepared with loaded cannon to resist their entry upon Brazos island. Thereupon Colonel Ford and Commissioner Nichols visited the island and had a conference with the lieutenant, who withdrew with his men. Colonel Ford with his force took possession of the island; the United States flag was lowered, and the "Lone Star" flag of Texas was hoisted and saluted with fifteen guns. In Colonel Ford's instructions the district over which he was to have command was defined to begin at a point on the Rio Grande halfway between Forts Duncan and McIntosh, and include all the forts below said points and the entire district of country between the Nueces and Rio Grande. Within that district of the United States army there were three companies of cavalry, five of infantry and two of artillery, with means of transportation that could be concentrated promptly at or near Brownsville. Fort Brown, the nearest post to the island which Colonel Ford's command had taken possession of, was under the command of Capt. B. H. Hill.

On the 22d of February, Colonel Ford, Lieutenant-Colonel McLeod, Commissioner Nichols and his secretary, Mr. Waller, proceeded to Brownsville; Col. F. W. Latham of that place furnishing the transportation for them. Commissioner Nichols addressed a communication to Captain Hill asking an interview, and sent it by Mr. Waller, who returned a verbal answer, stating that Captain Hill could be seen at his quarters. Another letter from Commissioner Nichols procured an answer and an interview on the 23d of February, in which he was informed that Captain Hill could not recognize him as commissioner of Texas; that until Hill got orders from his government his responsibility as an officer could not be changed. All of which was tantamount to

a positive refusal to surrender the post or the property. A floating report having been heard that Captain Hill contemplated attacking Colonel Ford's forces, Lieutenant-Colonel McLeod and Mr. Waller had already gone to Brazos Santiago to fortify that place. Another letter was sent by Commissioner Nichols stating distinctly the object of his mission, and that Texas was virtually out of the Union, which, on the same day, February 23d, was answered in these words: "You have raised a question upon which my government will doubtless take action in due season, but which in the meantime cannot affect my military duties or responsibilities."

This, with what he had stated previously in the interview, that the action of Colonel Ford in taking possession of Brazos island was an act of war, was conclusive evidence that any demonstration Colonel Ford could make with his force would not produce surrender without a desperate fight. As Hill had a number of cannon and men to man them, and Captain Stoneman was at the fort with two companies of cavalry, a hostile attack would entail the loss of many lives without any certainty of success. It was considered by Colonel Ford and Commissioner Nichols that as it might be designed by the Federals to collect a large force by concentrating troops from posts up the river, so as to permanently hold the fort at Brownsville, it would be proper to increase their strength upon the island, so as to hold it at all events. With that view Colonel Ford remained at Brownsville to watch the action of the Federals, and to ascertain the disposition of other officers there besides Captain Hill's; and Commissioner Nichols repaired to the island to urge the fortification. He dispatched to Corpus Christi to hasten the coming of recruits, and went himself on board a vessel, the *General Rusk*, to Galveston; raised four companies, with B. F. Terry as major of the battalion, and returned with them to Brazos Santiago on the 2d of March, 1861, when he found the place fortified with guns mounted for defense if



necessary. The regiment was then organized with Ford as colonel, McLeod, lieutenant-colonel, and Terry, major, and a strength of over 1,200 men.

On the night of the 2d of March, Colonel Ford arrived at Brazos Santiago with a Federal officer from Fort Brown, who expected to meet the steamer Webster from New York that arrived the next day. The officer on board, Major Porter, assistant adjutant-general, being communicated with, it was found that he had come to superintend the embarkation of the Federal troops, by which the hope was inspired that the order of General Twiggs for the surrender of the post and departure of the troops would be complied with. Major Porter and Colonel Ford went to Brownsville the same morning. On March 4th it was reported on the island that there was shooting up at Fort Brown, and as it was supposed it was in honor of President Lincoln's inauguration, a furious excitement arose among the men at the indignity upon Texas soil, which was with difficulty allayed by the officers, and indeed not entirely until Colonel Ford sent a letter that he had secured from his personal friend, Captain Stoneman, stating that the Federal soldiers would leave Texas as soon as transportation was furnished, and that there would be no difficulty if the troops on each side were kept apart so as to prevent a collision.

From that time, this was all that was necessary until the Federals left in vessels from Brownsville. Commissioner Nichols carried back the companies that he had brought to Brazos Santiago and they were discharged, leaving from 600 to 800 men, who soon afterward took possession of Fort Brown as the headquarters of the district. Detachments were sent to the posts up the river, and all of the valuable property on Brazos island was moved up to Fort Brown. Thus Colonel Ford, assisted by the officers with him, finding an obstacle impeding the immediate accomplishment of his mission, by the generalship of prudence and patience succeeded far better than

if he had adopted a reckless adventure, that, though it failed, might have given him the reputation of a gallant officer in action. Before the Federal soldiers left, in order to inform the people of that section of the object of his coming there with a military force, he published a statement regarding the secession of Texas and the purpose to protect the rights of persons and property of the people as an independent State out of the Union.

Above Ringgold barracks a number of Mexicans made a raid over the river and killed a Mexican settler, friendly to the Confederate cause. Captain Edwards and Captain Nolen both, at different times, attacked them successfully; and they still being on his side of the river, Capt. Santos Benavides, of Laredo, came down with his company and had a battle with them and succeeded in driving them over the river. They were supposed to be under the direction of General Cortinas, who had formerly made a raid into Texas, causing what was called the Cortinas war, in the defeat of whom Colonel Ford had acted as an officer with Captain Stoneman of the Federal forces. Captain Benavides was afterward appointed colonel and did good service. He and his relatives, being Mexicans, exercised strong influence over the Rio Grande frontier in favor of the Confederacy during the war.

Col. Henry E. McCulloch, under appointment by the committee of safety, raised a sufficient number of companies and proceeded to the frontier posts in the northwest portion of Texas, and without difficulty secured the surrender of the Federal garrisons and had their places filled with detachments of Texas troops. The Federal troops proceeded to San Antonio, and thence to a point near the coast above Indianola at Green lake, where they awaited transportation to leave Texas. Col. Ben McCulloch, when he came to Texas, during the session of the convention, brought with him a commission to raise a regiment, and was accompanied by a young man vested with authority to muster in troops for the Confederate serv-

ice. This commission he turned over to his brother, Henry E. McCulloch, who, after performing his duty at the frontier posts, returned to Austin and raised companies for his Confederate regiment. He was stationed with them at San Antonio and did service there in securing the surrender of Federal troops, and was the highest officer in command until Colonel Van Dorn arrived in Texas and took command on the 26th of March, 1861. The style of the regiment was "First McCulloch's Regiment Mounted Rifles," and its field officers were Col. H. E. McCulloch, Lieut.-Col. Thos. C. Frost, and Maj. Ed Burleson.

Governor Houston, while governor of Texas, had sent two companies to the northwestern frontier, one commanded by W. C. Dalrymple, aide-de-camp to the governor, and colonel commanding, and another under Capt. J. W. Wilbarger. Colonel Dalrymple, having received authority to act for the State, and being reinforced by a number of volunteer citizens, on the 18th of February demanded of Capt. S. D. Carpenter the surrender of Camp Cooper, garrisoned with 260 Federal soldiers, which was finally complied with on the 21st of the same month, the action being reported to the convention on the 23d.

Captain Wilbarger's company, being taken into the Confederate service by Col. H. E. McCulloch, had several skirmishes and fights with the Indians, who made raids to steal horses and cattle, before he was ordered to Houston in the spring of 1862. He was sent back to Fort Belknap with a number of companies before the end of the war, and found, as he has stated in his published history, that the withdrawal of troops from that part of the frontier encouraged the depredations of the Indians to such an extent that the frontier counties of Stephens, Jack, Wise, and Montague were almost entirely deserted by their inhabitants. Indeed, a like condition in some degree attended most of our western frontier during the war, partly because those persons seeking service preferred to go to other States where the Northern armies could be met.

On the 5th of March, 1861, the convention having ratified the provisional Constitution of the Confederate States, and the government at Montgomery having received notice of said action, the military jurisdiction of the Confederate States was extended over the State of Texas. On the 16th, Earl Van Dorn was appointed colonel, and on the 26th he arrived at Indianola and assumed command in Texas, reporting that he anticipated no great trouble in the removal of the troops of the United States from the State. Indianola was then and long had been the principal port on the Gulf through which troops and their supplies were transported by water to western Texas. The Federal troops as they surrendered had been quartered at the fresh water 20 or 30 miles north of that port preparatory to their embarkation. Colonel Van Dorn made his headquarters at San Antonio, with Maj. W. T. Mechling, acting assistant adjutant-general.

Other preliminary dispositions to prepare Texas for a crisis were now rapidly made. On the 11th of April Gov. Edward Clark was formally notified by the Confederate government that Colonel Van Dorn was in Texas to organize troops for the army, and on the 16th Colonel Van Dorn was ordered to station Capt. John C. Moore at Galveston in command of a battery. On the 23d, with an armed force of thirty soldiers, Colonel Van Dorn called at the quarters of Colonel Waite and requested him to go with him to the office of Major Mechling, which Waite refused to do until force was exhibited that he could not resist. Upon his arriving there Major Mechling demanded his surrender as a prisoner of war. After many words of controversy, he with his inferior officers, including Lieut.-Col. Chandler, surrendered, and were paroled and furnished transportation to the coast. On May 3d Lieutenant-Colonel Reeve, with his officers and 270 soldiers, arrived in camp near San Antonio from military posts in New Mexico, and a messenger with a white flag was sent to him with a demand for unconditional surrender.



After the usual controversy about the right of Colonel Van Dorn to make such a demand, and the exhibition of overwhelming force by Colonel Van Dorn's troops, which had been hastily collected, including many citizens in volunteer companies enlisted for the occasion, the surrender was effected. There was a point of military honor entertained by all of those Federal officers that induced them to refuse to surrender upon a mere demand, until a military force was exhibited against them.

Colonel Van Dorn, with Major Mechling, continued to aid in the embarkation of the Federal troops on the coast, and other military operations, until he was ordered to Richmond for other service, and Paul O. Hébert was appointed brigadier-general and assigned to the Texas department on the 14th of August, 1861.

In order to show the manner in which these formal surrenders of the Federal troops were accomplished, Colonel Van Dorn's report is inserted:

Headquarters Troops in Texas.

San Antonio, Texas, May 10, 1861.

General: I have the honor to report that I met the last column of the United States troops in Texas yesterday, at noon, on the El Paso road, about 13 miles from this city, and that Colonel Reeve, the commanding officer, being satisfied of my greatly superior force, surrendered unconditionally. There were 10 officers and 337 men, including 30 men who were captured some time since in San Antonio by Capt. James Duff, which I have heretofore neglected to report. My command consisted of Colonel McCulloch's cavalry, viz., six companies, Captains Pitts, Tobin, Ashby, Bogges, Fry, and Nelson; a squadron of Colonel Ford's State troops, under Lieutenant-Colonel Baylor's command, viz., Captains Walker and Pyron, a battery of light artillery, Captain Edgar, a section of artillery, Captain Teel; two small detachments of horse under Lieutenants Paul and Dwyer, and an independent detachment of cavalry, Captain Goode. All these troops I placed under the command of Col. H. E. McCulloch. In addition to these there was a battalion of infantry raised for the occasion in San Antonio, under command of Lieut.-Col. James Duff, Captains Maverick, Wilcox,



Kampmann, Navarro and Prescott, Maj. John Carolan, in all about 1,300 men. I have been actuated in this instance by the same motive which induced me to bring an overwhelming force against the United States troops at Indianola, viz., a desire to arrest and disarm them without bloodshed. All the arms and other public property are now being turned over to officers appointed to receive them, and the officers and men are in camp at the San Pedro springs, near this city.

Having in consideration the proclamation of the President of the United States declaring certain persons "pirates" under the laws of the United States, for seizures of vessels or goods by persons acting by authority of the Confederate States, I have determined to hold these prisoners of war until I receive further instructions from you.

If the officers prefer it, I shall allow them to proceed to Montgomery on parole to report to you for your decision. I would not do justice to the troops under my command if I failed to report to you the admirable manner in which they conducted themselves throughout the expedition; the cheerful obedience to the orders of the officers elected over them; the discipline that was maintained in their camp, where judges, lawyers, mechanics, and laborers could be seen walking post as sentinels on the same rounds, all willing to do duty in a good cause; and at the close there was the delicacy of brave men, of soldiers, which checked everything like exultation over an unfortunate enemy whom a stern necessity had caused us to disarm. It was gratifying to me, as it is a pleasure to me to report to you, that the whole expedition passed off without one unpleasant incident.

The gentlemen who were at headquarters with me to whom I am indebted for services cheerfully and promptly rendered, for which I owe them my thanks, were Col. P. N. Luckett, quartermaster-general of Texas; Maj. G. J. Howard, Mr. J. T. Ward, Gen. Jas. Willie, Dr. H. P. Howard, Mr. R. A. Howard, Mr. D. E. Tessier, Judges Fred Tate and T. J. Devine, Capts. D. D. Shea and W. T. Mechling, and J. F. Minter and Lieut. J. P. Major, C. S. army.

Very respectfully, sir, I am your obedient servant,

EARL VAN DORN,

Colonel Commanding.

BRIG.-GEN. S. COOPER,  
Adjutant and Inspector-General, Montgomery, Ala.

Lieut.-Col. John R. Baylor, though elected with Colonel Ford, did not go in his command to the Rio Grande, but raised a number of companies and proceeded with them to the posts west of San Antonio and on to the Rio Grande at El Paso. Maj. H. A. Hamner was left to occupy posts on the route, and Lieutenant-Colonel Baylor went beyond the river into the Mesilla valley. He took a large number of prisoners and paroled them, and held possession of that part of New Mexico for a short time. He found the people opposed to the Confederates generally. His companies were merged into and became a part of Geo. W. Baylor's regiment in the Arizona campaign. Col. Wm. C. Young, under the appointment of Governor Clark, raised a cavalry regiment for the protection of our northern frontier on Red river. He crossed the river and captured Forts Arbuckle, Washita and Cobb, when the Federal forces under Maj. Wm. H. Emery retired into Kansas. This regiment was early next year (1862), with other Texas commands, in the battle of Elkhorn, Mo.

The Confederate Congress adjourned the latter part of May, 1861, to meet at Richmond, Va., on the 20th of July, and Texas, by the month of June, had removed from its borders the Federal troops, taken possession of the military property, and garrisoned the frontier posts. Thus the people and the State government were free to make arrangements for raising troops for the war. Governor Clark, therefore, on the 8th of June issued his proclamation announcing that a state of war existed.

The legislature having made such provision as was then thought necessary, adjourned sine die, on the 9th of April, leaving Governor Clark and other officers to carry on the State government, and to co-operate with the authorities of the Confederate government in military operations and otherwise as duty required, until the end of his term on the 1st of November, 1861. The governor, accordingly, on the 17th of April issued a proclamation proclaiming his plan for raising troops for the war, dividing the State

into six districts with an aide-de-camp to control and direct the organization of the companies, each district to be subdivided into sub-districts with an enrolling officer in them, and he called for 3,000 volunteers to inaugurate the plan. On the 25th of April he made a call for 5,000 volunteers for infantry service to repel the threatened invasion of the Federal army. On the 8th of June he issued his proclamation ordering the establishment of camps of instruction. On August 26th he called for 2,000 men to be organized into companies, in response to a request from the secretary of war. These companies were organized and went to Virginia.

## CHAPTER VI.

BRIGADIER-GENERAL HEBERT ASSUMES COMMAND—  
TROOPS RAISED FOR THE DEFENSE OF THE COAST  
—THE BLOCKADE—TROOPS FOR ARKANSAS—TROOPS  
AT ARKANSAS POST—BATTLES OF OAK HILLS AND  
ELKHORN—FORCES TRANSFERRED TO MISSISSIPPI  
—TROOPS SENT TO TENNESSEE AND TO VIRGINIA,  
TO THE LOWER RIO GRANDE, AND TO NEW MEXICO  
AND ARIZONA—ORGANIZATION OF CONFEDERATE  
GOVERNMENT—MEMBERS OF CONGRESS ELECTED  
—MESSAGE OF GOVERNOR CLARK.

**B**RIG.-GEN. PAUL O. HEBERT assumed command of the military department of Texas on the 16th of September, 1861. His headquarters were at Galveston until about the first of January, 1862, when they were removed to Houston. The quartermaster and commissary departments remained at San Antonio, the headquarters for a long time of the troops in Texas, whose service had been on the western frontier. General Hébert came with a good record, having been educated at West Point, a lieutenant-colonel in the Mexican war, and governor of Louisiana. He appointed E. B. Nichols colonel of a six months' infantry regiment at Galveston, with Josiah C. Massie, lieutenant-colonel, and Fred Tate, major. X. B. Debray, as lieutenant-colonel, and John J. Myers, major, raised for service there a battalion of cavalry, which was afterward enlarged into a regiment with Debray, colonel, Myers, lieutenant-colonel, and M. Menard, major. Col. John S. Moore, with Wm. P. Rogers, lieutenant-colonel, and H. G. Runnels, major, organized a regiment of infantry at Galveston, in October, 1861, and going to Mississippi were in the battle of Corinth, where Colonel Rogers, after a brilliant display of courage, was killed.

General Hébert was at a disadvantage in being a total stranger to the people of Texas. He was also surrounded with officers equally unknown, who were brought from Louisiana with him; and being on or near the coast they were not informed of what was transpiring in different parts of the State. Col. Ben McCulloch, who had great reputation in Texas as a valiant officer in frontier service, repaired to Montgomery, seeking assignment. Elkanah Greer, of Marshall, Tex., was there for the same object. He had the repute of good service as a private in Col. Jeff Davis' regiment in the war with Mexico. To provide for them, an expedition to Southern Kansas was planned. Col. Ben McCulloch was commissioned brigadier-general, and Greer, colonel of cavalry. The command was to consist of one regiment from each of the States of Texas, Arkansas and Louisiana. Both officers set about the organization of the expedition. Colonel Greer called for ten companies to meet him some day in June, 1861, at Dallas, which was promptly complied with, and upon the election held for field officers, Greer was made colonel, Walter P. Lane, lieutenant-colonel, Geo. W. Chilton, major, and Matt Ector was appointed adjutant. At the same time an artillery company was organized by men from Smith and Dallas counties, with John J. Good as captain and James P. Douglas as first lieutenant.

General Price, at the head of the Missouri State Guard, achieved a victory in the western part of that State, but was compelled to retire to the southern part, where he joined Gen. Ben McCulloch, who had his force collected, consisting of Greer's regiment from Texas, Colonel Hébert's Louisiana regiment, and several regiments from Arkansas, five of which, under N. G. Pearce, were State troops called out for three months' service. General McCulloch was in command of the combined force, when it was attacked at Oak Hills, 10 miles south of Springfield, at the break of day on August 10, 1861, by a Federal army with infantry, cavalry and artillery, under the command of



General Lyons. The Texans fought for the most part with shotguns and rifles that they had brought from their homes, but they fought with the old Texas spirit during four or five hours, when a glorious victory was achieved by the Confederate forces. General Lyons was killed in the battle, and his forces were routed and fled in utter confusion. The news of this splendid victory came down to Texas as upon the wings of the wind, and raised the martial spirit of its people into a flaming ardor that hastened the formation of companies and regiments for the war all over the State.

Gen. Ben McCulloch retired into winter quarters in the northeastern part of Arkansas, where he was reinforced by Texas commands, in addition to Greer's Third cavalry, as follows: Sixth Texas cavalry, Col. B. Warren Stone, Lieut.-Col. J. S. Griffith, Maj. L. S. Ross; Fourth (Ninth) cavalry, Col. Wm. B. Sims, Lieut.-Col. T. G. Berry, Maj. J. N. Dodson; Eleventh cavalry, Col. W. C. Young, Lieut.-Col. Jas. J. Diamond; battalion of Mounted Rifles, Maj. John W. Whitfield; and Capt. John J. Good's artillery company. In the following spring he moved into Missouri, where he was joined by General Price with his Missouri troops, and the combined force being under the command of General Van Dorn, the battle of Elkhorn was fought, in which General McCulloch was killed. In command of the right wing of the army he had put his command in position for a desperate charge, and had fearlessly gone to the front to discover the position of the enemy when he was shot; and the second in command being also immediately killed, some confusion was produced, which probably caused the battle to be a drawn fight, without a decisive victory for either side.\* The Confederate forces withdrew into Arkansas,

---

\* In addition to the above named Texas commands, it appears that Maj. R. P. Crump's cavalry battalion and Teel's battery were with the Confederate army. Colonel Greer took command of McCulloch's division after the fall of the general. Colonel Sims was wounded, and Lieutenant-Colonel Lane was mentioned as particu-

and with General Price's command were ordered across the river into Mississippi. Joseph L. Hogg, of Texas, was appointed brigadier-general and assigned to the command of Gen. Ben McCulloch's brigade. He went from Texas and died shortly after taking command.

Maj. B. F. Terry, after his services under Colonel Ford on the Rio Grande, got a commission to raise a cavalry regiment, and in September, 1861, ten of his companies met at Houston and were mustered into the Confederate service. They proceeded partly by land and partly by water to Bowling Green, Ky., where they were organized into the Eighth Texas cavalry, better known as Terry's Rangers, with B. F. Terry, colonel; Thos. S. Lubbock, lieutenant-colonel; John A. Wharton, major. They did good service in the Tennessee army. John Gregg, on returning to Texas from the convention at Montgomery, raised a regiment of infantry, and proceeded with it to Mississippi. The officers were John Gregg, colonel; J. M. Clough, lieutenant-colonel; Hiram B. Granbury, major. Gregg was afterward promoted to brigadier-general in command of the Hood brigade, and was killed at Petersburg. Clough was killed in Fort Donelson, and Granbury at Franklin.

In July, 1861, the port of Galveston was blockaded by the Federal navy, as the other Texas ports were soon afterward, but there was no attempt to enter them for some time. An artillery regiment was stationed at Galveston, under command of Joseph J. Cook, colonel; John H. Manly, lieutenant-colonel; and Edward Van Harten, major. About the same time artillery was

larly distinguished. The latter's regiment (Greer's) served as rear guard during the withdrawal of the Confederate forces. Colonel Stone reported that his regiment led in the charge which resulted in the capture of a Federal battery, and specially mentioned in this connection the companies of Captains Wharton, Throckmorton and Bridges. Maj. L. S. Ross and Capt. R. M. White were distinguished in command of scouting parties. The former commanded one of the battalions of the regiment on the field, the other being under Lieut. D. R. Gurley.

placed at the other ports of Sabine Pass, Indianola, Velasco, and Brazos Santiago.

In August, 1861, Governor Clark was called on for twenty companies to be sent to Richmond, Va. Thirty-two companies were sent, and were organized into regiments with field officers appointed there, as follows: First Texas regiment, Col. Louis T. Wigfall, Lieut.-Col. Hugh McLeod, Maj. H. H. Black, Fourth Texas regiment, Col. John B. Hood, Lieut.-Col. John Marshall, Maj. Bradfute Warwick; Fifth Texas regiment, Col. J. J. Archer, Lieut.-Col. Jerome B. Robertson, Maj. P. R. Quattlebaum. The first brigadier-general in command was Louis T. Wigfall, who after his election to the Senate was succeeded by John B. Hood. The brigade has ever since been called Hood's brigade, although it was commanded after his promotion by Brig.-Gens. Jerome B. Robertson, John Gregg and F. S. Bass. The latter, though promoted while in command as colonel, never received his commission until it was sent to him by the war department in June, 1897, before his death at the Soldier's Home in Austin, in July, 1897. This brigade fought with great distinction in many of the great battles of the war, and its number was diminished by death and wounded until there were not more soldiers in the ranks than would have filled a good regiment. Still, as a tribute to their devoted bravery, they were allowed to retain to the end their brigade organization. One of the highest encomiums that can be bestowed upon the soldiers of that brigade is mention of the fact that, of the officers who commanded them in battles, five were made brigadier-generals, two were made major-generals, and one a lieutenant-general.

In November, 1861, Maj. J. B. Likens was stationed at Sabine Pass, raising his cavalry battalion, which was afterward increased to a regiment formed from Likens' and Burns' cavalry battalions, with Jas. B. Likens, col-

onel; Jas. R. Burns, lieutenant-colonel; W. A. Wortham, major.

Lieut.-Col. A. Buchel, in service on the lower Rio Grande in November, 1861, in Luckett's infantry regiment, was made colonel of a cavalry regiment, composed of Joseph Taylor's and W. O. Yager's cavalry battalions, Wm. O. Yager, lieutenant-colonel; Robert A. Myers, major; known as the First Texas cavalry, or Buchel's regiment.

Col. Philip N. Luckett, Lieut.-Col. E. F. Gray and Maj. John H. Kampmann were the officers of an infantry regiment which went to the Rio Grande in December, 1861.

In the fall of 1861, H. H. Sibley was appointed brigadier-general, and appeared in Texas to organize a brigade for a campaign into New Mexico and Arizona. Three cavalry regiments were promptly formed: The Fourth cavalry, Jas. Reily, colonel; Wm. R. Scurry, lieutenant-colonel; and Henry W. Ragnet, major; the Fifth cavalry, Thos. Green, colonel; Henry C. McNeill, lieutenant-colonel; S. A. Lockridge, major; the Seventh cavalry, Wm. Steele, colonel; J. L. Sutton, lieutenant-colonel; A. P. Bagby, major (as shown by the reports from the war department). There were the following troops added to those regiments in that campaign: First cavalry regiment, Wm. P. Hardeman, colonel; Peter Hardeman, lieutenant-colonel; Michael Looscan, major. Second cavalry, Geo. W. Baylor, colonel; John W. Mullins, lieutenant-colonel; Sherwood Hunter, major. Third cavalry, Joseph Phillips, colonel; G. T. Madison, lieutenant-colonel; Alonzo Riddle, major. Fourth cavalry, Spruce M. Baird, colonel; Daniel Showalter, lieutenant-colonel; Ed. Rioran, major. P. T. Herbert's cavalry battalion, P. T. Herbert, lieutenant-colonel; Geo. M. Frazer, major.

After much delay in the preparation for so important a movement, the command reached El Paso on the Rio



Grande the middle of December, 1861. Having crossed the river, General Sibley on the 20th issued a proclamation taking possession of New Mexico as territory of the Confederate government. A considerable battle was fought in which many feats of skill and courage were exhibited, near Fort Craig and Valverde, where the Confederates were masters of the field, capturing artillery and prisoners. In March, 1862, the command arrived at Santa Fé, and in a battle near that place, at Glorietta, a detachment had an engagement in which great loss of life occurred. It was finally determined that the force was inadequate to hold the country, and the command retreated fighting until they reached Texas in the spring of 1862, physically worn by a winter campaign and their ranks depleted by the loss, as it was reported, of 500 of their body. The brigade for a time was distributed in different counties in Texas to recruit the companies and prepare for its future action in Texas and Louisiana. (See Appendix for details of this campaign.)

A regiment of infantry was raised (styled the Thirteenth infantry, or Bates' regiment) and stationed at Velasco, at the mouth of the Brazos river, where it remained during the war. Its officers were Col. Joseph Bates and Lieut.-Col. Reuben Brown. Henry P. Cayce was at another time lieutenant-colonel, and during its service there were Majors R. L. Foard, S. L. Perry and L. C. Rountree. Reference will be further made of the officers when any action at the different ports of Texas shall have occurred. This must suffice for a description of the disposition of the Texas forces during the year 1861, so far as the records and other reliable information show.

The legislature of Texas met in November, 1861, and elected to the Confederate Senate, under the permanent government, Louis T. Wigfall and W. S. Oldham. The representatives elected to Congress at the general election in August of that year were John A. Wilcox, C. C. Herbert, Peter W. Gray, B. F. Sexton, M. D. Graham



and Wm. B. Wright. Governor Clark, in his retiring message, November 1st, stated that he had failed to borrow money, and that his plan of raising troops met with very limited success, partly for the want of adequate means, and partly from the reluctance of the people to enter the camps of instruction to prepare for the infantry service; that a Confederate military officer had been sent to the State, by whom some troops that had been raised (not naming them) had at once been received into the Confederate service, and the State thereby relieved from further charge of them; that for the defense of the northern border, Col. W. C. Young had been authorized to raise a cavalry regiment; that the heavy guns that had been surrendered at Fort Clark had been conveyed to the coast; that he had appointed in compliance with law brigadier-generals in thirty-two districts to organize the militia; and that from estimates furnished by the county judges there are 100,000 men able to bear arms and 40,000 private arms in the hands of the people; that Col. Ben McCulloch, as agent for the State, had purchased 1,000 Colt's revolvers that had been of great service in arming the regiments raised by the convention; that in view of the blockade of our ports and the scarcity of supplies he recommended that all suitable manufactured goods at the penitentiary should be bought by the State for the army; that the arms and ammunition that could be obtained have been purchased, and the flint-lock guns have been converted to percussion-lock guns; that "notwithstanding our want of adequate means and insufficient laws, there are now battling for our liberties 20,000 Texans." The correctness of this estimate is not to be verified by any records in the offices of the State executive officers, but must be explained by showing how they enlisted.

The reasons why Governor Clark could do so little in the way of raising troops for the Confederate army were: First, the habitual disposition of the people, as is the case

in any sparsely settled country, to ride on horseback in volunteering as soldiers; secondly, as soon as Texas became a part of the Southern Confederacy its military jurisdiction was extended over the State, and military officers were sent to superintend the raising of troops, and from that time those who desired to enter the service applied either to those officers or to the President and the secretary of war for authority to raise troops, and thereby the State authorities were relieved from participation. Consequently the offices at the capital contained no report of the organization of the many regiments and battalions furnished by Texas in the war.

There were a number of regiments raised and organized under commissions from the secretary of war, or other military officers, in the spring, summer and fall of the year 1861, and some of them before arrangements had been made for transporting companies or paying their expenses to the place of rendezvous.

## CHAPTER VII.

FRANCIS R. LUBBOCK, GOVERNOR—HIS MESSAGE RECOMMENDS APPROPRIATION FOR RAISING TROOPS —REORGANIZATION OF THE MILITIA—MILITARY BOARD CREATED — HOSPITAL FUND — COUNTY COURT TO LEVY TAXES — EFFORT TO HAVE A NORTHEAST SUB-DISTRICT — BRIG.-GEN. H. E. McCULLOCH ASSUMES COMMAND IN IT—DIFFICULTY OF RAISING INFANTRY—CAVALRY EASILY RAISED —A NUMBER OF INFANTRY REGIMENTS SENT TO ARKANSAS AND FORM A DIVISION—CAPTURE OF ARKANSAS POST—REGIMENT SENT TO INDIAN TERRITORY—BATTLE AT POISON SPRING—TROOPS SENT TO MISSISSIPPI AND TENNESSEE—REGIMENTS AND BATTALIONS RETAINED IN TEXAS—STATE TROOPS—MARTIAL LAW—CONSCRIPTION—TROOPS FOR RIO GRANDE.

AT the regular State election in August, 1861, Francis R. Lubbock was elected governor of Texas, and John W. Crockett lieutenant-governor. The inauguration was on the 7th of November. The war having developed in good earnest, and our Gulf ports having been closely blockaded, Governor Lubbock entered vigorously into two leading projects: First, to give what aid he could to military operations; second, to aid in furnishing to families whatever was needed for their support; and these he continued efficiently to promote during his administration of two years. In his first message to the legislature he recommended a reorganization of the militia, which was done by dividing the State into thirty-three brigade districts, in which officers were appointed for organization, so as to have every man liable to military duty enrolled. He called attention to the defenseless condition of the coast and recommended provi-

sion to be made for supplying cannon. For that and many other purposes the legislature created a military board, composed of the governor, comptroller and treasurer, with power to provide for the defense of the State, by recourse to any bonds and coupons which might be in the treasury, not exceeding \$1,000,000. That board did through agents a large amount of business of various kinds, a summary statement of which will be made at the proper time. The governor also recommended that the goods manufactured at the penitentiary be devoted to supplying the army, which was done extensively by furnishing cloth for tents and clothing.

The legislature then in session passed a number of acts in aid of military operations, as follows: To appropriate \$1,000,000 for the support of State troops and other purposes, such as the purchase of arms and munitions of war; to authorize county courts to levy a special tax for war purposes; to create a hospital fund of \$50,000, to be used by the governor through bonded agents appointed by him. Also joint resolutions: To authorize the governor to appoint persons to carry to soldiers clothes that may be contributed by citizens or otherwise; to require the adjutant-general of the State to collect such information as was necessary to make a register of Texas State and Confederate troops, which, unfortunately, was not done; to authorize the governor to have the salt lake in Hidalgo county, known as Sal del Rey, taken possession of by an agent, who was empowered to sell the salt at the usual price, etc., and act under the direction of the governor. Thus the executive officers were furnished by the legislature with ample means and authority to accomplish most important objects, military and otherwise, to promote the interest of the State and its people, as a part of the Confederate States.

During the session of the legislature, in the fall and winter of 1861, there was a concerted effort by the members from east and north of Trinity river to have a sep-



arate military district organized there, with its headquarters at some central point for the purpose of organizing, training and fitting out troops for the war, to be sent where needed in an efficient body, and not to be sent in small bodies to different parts of the country out of the State, as seemed then to be the tendency of military operations. In other words, their object was the formation of a Texas army; and there were in the district indicated, men and means of every kind for that purpose.

A proposition was written and signed by those members and forwarded to the secretary of war, through one of our senators, who after presenting it gave assurance of its approval, but it was not acted upon. Still it had a good effect in the end, from the fact that Col. Henry E. McCulloch, having been appointed a brigadier-general and ordered across the Mississippi, on his way, about the end of the year, was fully informed of the effort that had been made to form a new district and of its military resources. He concluded, after failing to cross the river on account of its overflow, to go to the town of Tyler and there establish his headquarters, which he did, prescribing for himself a district in Texas, east of the Trinity river, and north of what was known as the old San Antonio road, and requiring all commands, either raised or passing through the district, to report to him. A great deal of work was done there in advancing the service during the first half of 1862, as will appear further on.

Before the end of the year 1861 the people of Texas had heard of the two splendid victories of the Confederate forces, that of Oak Hills in Missouri and that of Bull Run in Virginia; and while the information inspired a joyful pride, it discouraged the necessity for continued effort to follow the success attained. Volunteering in the service was very slow, especially in forming infantry battalions and regiments. The Confederate officers that were sent to organize troops in Texas were personally unknown, and consequently could exercise but little influ-

ence. General Hébert having his headquarters first at Galveston, and then about the first month of 1862 at Houston, what was done was mainly in those places or near the coast. Colonels Moore, Nichols and Debray had raised some commands, Col. J. W. Spaight and Col. Allison Nelson had a few companies, and were gradually increasing their numbers to infantry regiments. Col. Robert Garland had for several months been recruiting men in or near the coast, and succeeded in making a regiment of infantry, organized at or near Houston, with Thos. S. Anderson lieutenant-colonel and Rhodes Fisher major, early in 1862, and was afterward in service at Arkansas Post.

Almost any one who could get authority from the general or from the secretary of war could raise battalions or regiments of cavalry. It became obvious that if any considerable number of infantry were raised in a reasonable time, that men of personal influence with the people must undertake it. Even then it was necessary to raise infantry troops for twelve months' service, as thereby elderly men would enlist to encourage it, who would not be willing to go in for the war. Consequently, a number of prominent citizens organized regiments for one year and carried them into the service in Arkansas, where they were placed in brigades by order of Major-General Holmes, commanding the Trans-Mississippi department, and constituted a division of infantry, Texas troops. Those commands that had been raised as cavalry had been dismounted on getting to Arkansas, by General Hindman, in command previous to General Holmes.

The Texas division was organized as follows: First brigade, commanded by Col. Overton Young. Twelfth Texas, Overton Young, colonel; B. A. Philpot, lieutenant-colonel; I. W. Raine, major. Eighteenth Texas, Wm. B. Ochiltree, colonel; D. B. Culberson, lieutenant-colonel; W. H. King, major. Thirteenth cavalry, J. H. Burnett, colonel; W. A. Crawford, lieutenant-colonel;

C. R. Beaty, major. Twenty-second Texas, R. B. Hubbard, colonel; J. J. Cannon, lieutenant-colonel; P. F. Parks, major. Haldeman's battery, Horace Haldeman, captain.

Second brigade, commanded by Col. Horace Randal. Twenty-eighth cavalry, Horace Randal, colonel; C. H. Baxter, lieutenant-colonel; H. G. Hall, major. Eleventh Texas, O. M. Roberts, colonel; J. H. Jones, lieutenant-colonel; N. J. Caraway, major. Fourteenth Texas, Edward Clark, colonel; Wm. Bird, lieutenant-colonel; A. H. Rogers, major. Fifteenth Texas, Col. J. W. Spaight. Gould's battalion, Robert S. Gould, major. Daniels' battery, J. M. Daniels, captain.

Third brigade, commanded by Col. George Flournoy. Sixteenth Texas, Geo. Flournoy, colonel; Jas. E. Shepard, lieutenant-colonel; W. H. Redwood, major. Sixteenth cavalry, Wm. Fitzhugh, colonel; E. P. Gregg, lieutenant-colonel; W. W. Diamond, major. Seventeenth Texas, R. T. P. Allen, colonel; G. W. Jones, lieutenant-colonel; F. W. Tabor, major. Nineteenth Texas, Richard Waterhouse, colonel; E. W. Taylor, lieutenant-colonel; W. L. Crawford, major. Edgar's battery, Wm. Edgar, captain.

Fourth brigade, commanded by Col. Jas. Deshler. Eighteenth cavalry, James Deshler, colonel; Nicholas H. Darnell, lieutenant-colonel; J. T. Coit, major. Tenth infantry, R. Q. Mills, colonel; Robert Young, major. Fifteenth cavalry, Geo. H. Sweet, colonel; W. K. Masters, lieutenant-colonel; G. B. Pickett, major. Twenty-fifth cavalry, Clayton C. Gillespie, colonel; Wm. N. Neyland, lieutenant-colonel; J. A. Dark, major.

Most of these regiments were furnished with cloth for tents, knapsacks, and for some clothing, by the State penitentiary at Huntsville, Tex. Many of them were supplied with wagons and teams at or near Tyler, by order of Brig.-Gen. Henry E. McCulloch, some of them also by Maj. J. E. Kirby, who was stationed at that

place by General Hébert for the purpose, and to establish a factory for making harness leather and saddles for the army. Those regiments that got to Arkansas first were stationed at what was later called Camp Nelson, commanded by Colonel Nelson, who was shortly afterward appointed brigadier-general, but died a short time after he was appointed. He was succeeded in the command by Gen. Henry E. McCulloch, who had gone there with a number of the regiments that he had fitted out with teams and wagons.

The Fourth brigade, under Colonel Deshler, was ordered to Arkansas Post at the mouth of the Arkansas river, and with Colonel Garland's brigade, composed of his regiment (Sixth infantry) and those of Colonels Wilkes (Twenty-fourth cavalry) and Gillespie (Twenty-fifth cavalry), were captured by the Federal forces, aided by their gunboats. After their exchange, in May, 1863, they did service east of the Mississippi river. The other three brigades constituted the division known during the war as Walker's division of Texas infantry, the largest body of Texas troops that retained their organization to the end of the war. It was in service in Louisiana in 1863 and 1864, and at the battles of Mansfield, Pleasant Hill, and Jenkins' Ferry, Ark. It was commanded by Maj.-Gen. John G. Walker during its active service. The brigades were commanded by Henry E. McCulloch, General Hawes, Gen. Wm. R. Scurry, Gen. H. Randal, Gen. R. Waterhouse and Gen. T. N. Waul, at different times. There were also many changes in the field officers of the regiments.

In February, 1865, four cavalry regiments, Chisum's, Candle's, J. M. Wells', and De Morse's, were dismounted and distributed in the division, and a new brigade, the Fourth, formed with Flournoy, Candle's and Wells' regiments, and Brig.-Gen. W. H. King assigned to the command of it. The division was finally commanded by General Forney, when General Walker was placed in



command of the Texas department with headquarters at Houston. When the action of the division in various battles fought in Louisiana and Arkansas shall have been fully described, it will redound to the well-earned fame of the Texas soldier.

Other Texas regiments were organized in 1862 and sent to Arkansas. Three of them were cavalry regiments that were not dismounted: Carter's, G. W. Carter, colonel; W. Clinton Giddings, lieutenant-colonel; B. Q. Chenowith, major. Buford's, N. M. Buford, colonel; B. W. Watson, lieutenant-colonel; J. T. Daves, major. Parsons', Wm. H. Parsons, colonel; John W. Mullins, lieutenant-colonel; L. J. Farrar, major. These constituted Parsons' cavalry brigade, which served in Louisiana.

A brigade was formed near Fort Smith, of Texas troops, and the command of it assigned to Col. J. W. Spaight. It included Spaight's regiment, J. W. Spaight, colonel; Jas. E. Harrison, lieutenant-colonel; J. W. Daniels, major. Hawpe's regiment, T. C. Hawpe, colonel; G. W. Guess, lieutenant-colonel; J. T. Malone, major. Alexander's regiment, A. M. Alexander, colonel; J. H. Candle, lieutenant-colonel; J. R. Russell, major. Stevens' regiment, Jas. G. Stevens, colonel; Wm. H. Johnson, lieutenant-colonel; John A. Buck, major. Part of this brigade was in the battles of southern Louisiana, and was afterward under command of General Polignac in Mouton's division.

Other commands went to the Indian nation and to southern Arkansas under S. B. Maxey, R. M. Gano, Peter Hardeman, N. W. Battle, T. C. Ross, Jas. Duff, Charles De Morse, D. Showalter and Jas. Bourland. Colonel Maxey having been appointed major-general, in command of some of these forces, fought a successful battle at a place called Poison Spring, capturing a large wagon train and many prisoners.

While so many commands were going northward from

Texas to find active service in 1862, others went eastward for the same purpose. The following commands went to Mississippi for service: Ector's regiment, M. D. Ector, colonel; Abram Harris, lieutenant-colonel; T. M. Garrison, major. A legion—Whitfield's regiment, John W. Whitfield, colonel; E. R. Hawkins, lieutenant-colonel; John H. Broocks, major. A legion—Waul's regiment, Thos. N. Waul, colonel; B. Timmons, lieutenant-colonel; Allen Cameron, major. Also Parker's, Smith's and Weeks' cavalry battalions. Some of these were in Brigadier-General Ross' command, and gained distinction in the service in Mississippi. In mentioning these regiments, the lieutenant-colonels and majors have been given when practicable, because the first colonels were often taken from their regiments by promotion, death or sickness, leaving others in command.

Ector's regiment went to Tennessee, where he afterward commanded a brigade. There also went the regiment of cavalry of M. F. Locke, colonel; J. M. Barton, lieutenant-colonel; W. Q. Craig, major. Camp's regiment, M. L. Camp, colonel; T. Camp, lieutenant-colonel. Wilkes' regiment, F. C. Wilkes, colonel; R. R. Neyland, lieutenant-colonel; W. A. Taylor, major. Andrews' regiment, J. A. Andrews, colonel; J. A. Weaver, lieutenant-colonel; Wm. E. Estes, major.

Doubtless other commands left Texas, and more of them did leave when necessary for the protection of sister states, as will be exhibited in the reports of battles. Texas could well spare them on account of its favorable position, that made difficult an invasion by a large Federal army. On our western frontier and on the north fronting the Indian Territory there were no means of supplying a large army for a considerable distance before reaching well-settled portions of the State, and upon our Gulf coast the sandbars at the entrance of our ports were a protection against the entry of large vessels or gunboats. If war vessels should force an entrance to

our ports, there were no large rivers nor long railroads that would enable the enemy to penetrate the interior of the country. Texas, therefore, needed only such military force as could furnish protection against Indian depredations, and expel from our ports any portion of the enemy that might force an entrance into them.

There were a number of regiments, battalions and companies of artillery that were retained in Texas mostly, and some of them were ordered to different points where their services were needed, so that but few of them, except the artillery, were permanently located during the war. They were as follows:

Twenty-first infantry, A. W. Spaight, colonel; W. H. Griffin, lieutenant-colonel; T. C. Reynolds, major. Twentieth infantry, Henry M. Elmore, colonel; L. A. Abercrombie, lieutenant-colonel; R. E. Bell, major. Eighth infantry, A. M. Hobby, colonel; Daniel Shea, lieutenant-colonel; John Ireland, major. Thirty-fifth cavalry regiment, R. R. Brown, colonel; S. W. Perkins, lieutenant-colonel; L. C. Rountree, major. Twenty-third cavalry regiment, N. C. Gould, colonel; J. A. Grant, lieutenant-colonel; J. A. Corley, major. Thirtieth cavalry regiment, E. J. Gurley, colonel; N. W. Battle, lieutenant-colonel; J. H. Davenport, major. T. C. Anderson's cavalry regiment, formed from J. P. Border's and Fulcrod's battalions. Mann's cavalry regiment, W. L. Mann, colonel; W. F. Upton, lieutenant-colonel; J. E. Oliver, major. Terrell's cavalry regiment, A. W. Terrell, colonel; Jno. C. Robertson, lieutenant-colonel; H. S. Morgan, major. McCord's cavalry frontier regiment, J. E. McCord, colonel; J. B. Barry, lieutenant-colonel; W. H. Alexander, major. Cavalry battalions, Duff's, Morgan's, Daly's, Saufley's, Ragsdale's. Second infantry battalion, Col. C. L. Pyron, ten companies of cavalry. Thirty-fifth cavalry regiment, Jas. B. Likens, colonel; J. R. Burns, lieutenant-colonel; W. A. Wortham, major. Thirty-sixth cavalry regiment, P. C. Woods, colonel; Nat

Benton, lieutenant-colonel; W. O. Hutchinson, major.

There were on the Rio Grande, and at different points on the coast, artillery as follows:

Maj. D. D. Shea's two companies at Lavaca. Capt. R. B. Machlin's light battery on the Rio Grande. Capt. H. Wilkes' light battery at Corpus Christi. Capt. B. F. Neal's company heavy artillery at Corpus Christi. Capt. Krumbhoar's battery, mountain howitzers on Rio Grande. Captain Fontaine's light artillery, Houston. Colonel Cook's regiment heavy artillery, Hawe's heavy artillery, sapper's and miner's, Mosely's light artillery, Abbott's light artillery, at Galveston. O. G. Jones' battery, Sabine Pass. Hughes' battery, Sabine Pass. Fox's battery at Galveston. Dashiell's battery at Houston. Capt. W. H. Nichols' battery at Camp McNeill. The companies of light artillery were moved from place to place where their services were required at different times.

The following cavalry commands served in Texas for a time, and finally belonged to the division commanded by Gen. Tom Green, in Louisiana:

Cavalry battalion, B. E. Waller, lieutenant-colonel; H. H. Boone, major. Partisan Rangers, Walter P. Lane, colonel; R. P. Crump, lieutenant-colonel; A. D. Burns, major. Partisan Rangers, W. B. Stone, colonel; Isham Chisum, lieutenant-colonel; J. J. Vance, major. Partisan Rangers, L. M. Martin, colonel; W. M. Weaver, lieutenant-colonel; W. A. Mayrant, major.

There were a number of State troops that were called into service, generally only for a short time upon some emergency, including the infantry regiments commanded by D. B. Kerr, T. Camp, J. B. Wilmuth, John Sayles, and an infantry battalion commanded by M. G. Little; the cavalry regiments commanded by T. J. M. Richardson, J. B. Johnson, Tignal W. Jones, Gid Smith, and the cavalry battalions of D. D. Holland, J. M. Morris and Wm. Tate.

To describe the troops in the localities where the Con-



federate and State troops were stationed at different times, would require many useless repetitions. It must suffice that their presence shall be noticed in any action against the enemy that required their participation. Yet those who endured the privations of the camp and the march, without being in battle, rendered good service by being part of the State Guard, armed and equipped, and ready to resist any aggression of the enemy. Such readiness, with the force at command, secured our protection and exhibited the necessity of maintaining it during the war.

Early in 1862 H. P. Bee was appointed brigadier-general and assigned to duty in command of the Western sub-district, with his headquarters at San Antonio.

The Confederate Congress passed the conscript law on April 16, 1862, and it went into effect a month afterward. The exemption from military service of men who owned or were in charge of a certain number of slaves, by that law, had the effect of producing dissatisfaction in a few localities, which discouraged volunteering in the army. It was an excuse for some to say that "this is a rich man's war and a poor man's fight." The effect of the law was to put every able-bodied man over sixteen years of age and under forty-five in the army, except those exempt by the slaves under their control. This unfavorable influence was somewhat increased by the declaration of martial law by Gen. H. P. Bee, on the 28th of April, 1862, in the Western sub-district; also by the declaration of martial law by General Hébert over the whole State of Texas, on May 30, 1862. Provost marshals appointed by him were given extraordinary power over all persons suspected of disaffection. While these measures produced some annoyance occasionally, and some criticisms, they really had but little effect, except in a few localities; for the war spirit at that time was at fever heat, and controlled the action of the mass of the people in Texas.

Col. John S. Ford discharged the State troops that had gone in the expedition on the lower Rio Grande in 1861, when their term of service expired, and was relieved by Colonel Luckett and his command, who remained for some time at Fort Brown. Colonel Ford was ordered to San Antonio by General Bee in May, 1862, and by his suggestion was placed on conscript duty at Austin, and there organized his command for the discharge of that duty, with Capt. Wm. E. Walsh, Henry Trask, lieutenant and adjutant; Wm. Stowe, quartermaster and commissary; and Dr. Rogers, surgeon. A camp of conscription was located near Tyler with Lieut. Willie Thomas in command, aided by Lieutenant Broker. Similar camps were established in different parts of the State from time to time. Their purpose was to hunt out persons liable to military duty that did not volunteer, and send them into some regiment. That fact itself caused many to volunteer, to escape arrest by the conscript force. There is now no means of telling the number and location of those camps and the operations performed by them, further than that it is known they were continued during the war.

Before the discharge of the State troops that were under command of Colonel Ford on the lower Rio Grande, other troops were sent there that were in the Confederate service, who occupied different posts in 1862 and 1863, and subsequently in what was called the Western sub-district, which extended from a line due south from San Antonio to the Rio Grande, and from its mouth up to Laredo. It was important to have the posts on the Gulf protected, as well as to have the posts on the Rio Grande garrisoned, to facilitate the trade across that river into Mexico, for the export of cotton, and the purchase of arms and munitions of war and commodities for the use of families in Texas.

The forces in the Western sub-district were distributed as follows in 1862:

Capt. L. C. Pyron, two cavalry companies at Columbus.

Col. P. C. Wood's cavalry regiment, and Maj. D. D. Shea's artillery, at Lavaca. Maj. A. M. Hobby, infantry battalion, four companies, and Captain Wilke's battery, at Corpus Christi. Maj. Joseph Taylor, cavalry battalion, and Capt. Jas. Duff, two companies, at San Antonio. Col. P. N. Lockett's infantry regiment, ten companies; Capt. R. Benevides, one cavalry company; Maj. Wm. O. Yager, four cavalry companies; Capt. E. Cruegbaur's heavy artillery; Capt. R. B. Maclin's light artillery, and Capt. S. Benavides, one cavalry company, on the Rio Grande from Fort Brown to Laredo.

Although these particular commands did not continue in that sub-district, there was generally an effort to keep a force there sufficient to protect the ports and keep the way open for the Mexican trade.

## CHAPTER VIII.

FRONTIER PROTECTION—GALVESTON SHELLED—CONSCRIPTION—EVACUATION OF SABINE PASS—YELLOW FEVER—EVACUATION OF GALVESTON, OCTOBER, 1862—DEFENSE OF PORT LAVACA.

EARLY in 1862 a frontier cavalry regiment was raised for twelve months' service, first commanded by J. M. Norris, colonel; A. T. Obenchain, lieutenant-colonel; Jas. E. McCord, major, and afterward by Jas. E. McCord, colonel; J. B. Barry, lieutenant-colonel; W. J. Alexander, major. They were sent up near Red river and established stations westward to the Rio Grande, with companies at such a distance from each other that soldiers could ride every day from one to the other and thereby get notice of any raid attempted or made by the Indians. That enabled them to combine their forces when necessary to repel any invasion. The frontier on the lower Rio Grande and for some distance up that river, in the Western sub-district, was protected by Confederate troops stationed there in 1862 and 1863, under the command of General Bee. There were no fights of much importance on the frontier during those two years.

On August 3 and 5, 1861, the Federal ships South Carolina and Dart shelled Galveston, with no great damage. On November 8th the Royal Yacht was captured in Galveston harbor, in the night, by launches from the blockader, Santee. The Yacht was fired and abandoned after the crew were taken off, but the fire was afterward extinguished by the Confederates and the vessel saved. There was no attempt to enter the port of Galveston with a view of capturing the city until the fall of 1862.



On September 23, 1862, the Federal vessels entered the port of Sabine Pass, and Lieut.-Col. A. W. Spaight, in command there, retired with his forces to Beaumont, not having a sufficient force to resist the Federals. Lieutenant-Colonel Spaight made the following report of that engagement:

Beaumont, Tex., September 26, 1862.

Sir: On the 23d inst. (Maj. J. S. Irvine commanding at Sabine Pass during my absence under orders at Houston) two armed sail vessels and one steam propeller came to anchor just outside the bar. Early the next morning, the two sail vessels, having crossed the bar, took position and opened fire on our works, to which we promptly replied; but the shots from both sides fell far short. They then approached nearer, when a brisk fire from both sides was resumed and continued until dark. To the chagrin of officers and men our shot still fell short, while the enemy was enabled with his longer range guns to throw shot and shell around and into our works. I take pleasure in stating that our men fighting at this immense odds, and seeing that they could inflict no injury on the enemy, and while his shell were bursting over their heads and within the works, stood to their guns and served them with great coolness. They could not be restrained from mounting the works and shouting and waving their hats in defiance. In pursuance to orders, Capt. G. W. O'Bryan, of Company E, with Lieut. W. A. Junker and twenty-six of his company, arrived at the fort at nightfall. When night came on, Major Irvine determined that it would be a fruitless exposure of the men and public property to attempt to hold the works another day, and commenced at once to remove the ordnance stores and other property, and spiked the guns, consisting of two 32-pounders and two 18-pounders. The evacuation was completed by daylight the next morning and all the government property saved. I regret, however, to state that two of the men recently attacked by yellow fever were not in a condition to be moved, and were left in the hospital in the care of competent nurses.

It should be mentioned here that on the breaking out of yellow fever among the troops at Sabine City, they were withdrawn, with the exception of a detachment of artillery (Company B) to garrison the works. It is now manifest

that the result must have been the same, no matter what the number of the force there. To Major Irvine, in command of the post, and to Capt. K. D. Keith, in the immediate command of the battery, great praise is due for the gallantry of the resistance offered with such wholly inadequate means, and not less for the orderly manner in which the evacuation was conducted, whereby none of the public property was permitted to fall into the hands of the enemy.

As I learn to-day, the two sail vessels have anchored opposite the town and sent some men ashore.

I have no information as to the force of the enemy and have no clue as yet to his future movements. I have been reinforced to-day by Elmore's regiment, Wilson's battery, and one company of Griffin's battalion, Captain Cook's. I will observe the movements of the enemy and promptly report the result, and shall lose no opportunity of inflicting injury upon him.

Your obedient servant,

A. W. SPAIGHT,

Lieutenant-Colonel Commanding.

Lieut. R. M. Franklin,

Acting Assistant Adjutant-General.

The evacuation of Galveston, October 4, 1862, is described in the following report of Col. Joseph J. Cook:

Headquarters, Fort Hébert, Tex., October 9, 1862.

Sir: On the morning of the 4th the blockading fleet off the bar of Galveston consisted of eight vessels, four of which were armed steamers, one a mortar boat, and all but one of them apparently of such draught as to admit of their crossing the bar. At about 7 a. m. one of the steamers (the Harriet Lane) crossed the bar flying a white flag, and when opposite Fort Point, a shot from our battery was fired across her bow, and she immediately came to anchor. An officer soon after landed from the steamer in front of the battery and asked an interview with the commander of the post. Immediately upon being advised of this, I repaired to Fort Point, and was informed by the officer who had landed that the commander of the fleet desired me to send out a messenger to receive a communication from him. Having no boat at the Point, I returned to the city and immediately dispatched a messenger in a boat, flying a white flag. The boat left the wharf

about 1 p. m., and before she could be worked out to the Point the Harriet Lane weighed anchor, repassed the bar and communicated with the fleet, and the four steamers with the mortar boat in tow came in over the bar and up to about the position where the Harriet Lane had been brought to anchor. As soon as this movement was observed, I started for Fort Point, but before I could reach there a shot was fired from our battery in front of the foremost of the advancing vessels—our flag of truce boat then being but a short distance off—when the enemy, disregarding their own white flag, immediately opened fire from all the vessels with about twenty guns on our battery, which consisted of but one gun, a 10-inch, and they continued to play upon it until the gun was struck by a shot and so disabled as to be unserviceable, and the officer in command ordered the gun to be spiked and the barracks fired, and the men retreated across the low, open ground toward the city. I joined them soon after they left the battery, and the five vessels of the enemy having passed entirely around the point into the harbor, continued to throw shot and shell at us until we were out of their range. Upon the fleet turning up the channel toward the city, the two 24-pounders in battery on the bay side, near the east end of the city, opened fire on them, but our shot fell short, and the vessels having now come up to our flag of truce boat, ceased firing and took our messenger on board their flagship, and the fleet came to anchor.

The assemblage of vessels off the bar on the day previous had given us every reason to expect an attack, and during that day and the morning of the 4th, I had made arrangements with the railroad company to be ready with transportation to meet any emergency that might occur. Having some time previous to this been ordered by the general commanding the department to withdraw our troops from the city in case the enemy should bring to bear against our position such a force as to overcome our defenses at Fort Point and enable them to command the harbor, and after the gun at Fort Point was silenced, having no further effective means of defending the harbor or protecting the city from bombardment by the enemy or inflicting any injury on them, immediately after our troops had abandoned Fort Point, I ordered the two guns which were in position at South battery, on the south side of Galveston island, to be spiked and all our material at that and

other points in the city to be taken to the railroad depot, which was done.

At about 3:30 p. m. our flag of truce returned to the city bearing a demand from the commander for the surrender of the city, and demanding an immediate answer. I sent a messenger with the answer that I should not surrender the city, directing the messenger also to say to the commander of the fleet that there were many women and children, and to demand time to remove them. After some negotiation it was agreed that no attack should be made upon the city for four days; that during that time we should not construct any new or strengthen any old defenses within the city, and the fleet not be brought any nearer the city. This arrangement gave us ample time for the removal of all who desired to leave the island, also for the removal of our troops and material of every kind.

On the night of the 4th you reached the city, and during the next day I received your order in relation to matters in Galveston. During the four days I removed the two 24-pounders, and also the two guns at South battery were unspiked and removed and all of them have been safely landed at Virginia point. I caused the people of the city to be fully notified in relation to matters which you directed they should be advised of. All machinery of any value was removed. The civil authorities removed all county records of every kind and all the records of the city corporation and of the district court. The railroad company removed all their material of every kind, and by 11 a. m. of the 8th we had removed all the government property of any value, except the 10-inch gun at Fort Point, and a large majority of the population of the city left their houses and the island.

The troops having all been removed in accordance with your orders, I left with my staff for Virginia point, leaving a sufficient force to hold the battery at the south end of the railroad bridge, and that evening I reported at this place to Col. X. B. Debray, commanding sub-military district of Houston. It affords me great pleasure to state that both officers and men behaved nobly, executing all orders promptly and correctly. All of which is respectfully submitted.

Yours respectfully,

Jos. J. Cook, Colonel Commanding.

Lieut. R. M. Franklin, Actg. Asst. Adjt. Gen.

Sub-Military District of Houston.



A successful defense was made of Port Lavaca by Maj. D. D. Shea, in command there, on October 31st, and reported as follows:

Headquarters, Lavaca, Tex., November 1, 1862.

Sir: By order of Maj. Daniel D. Shea, commanding this post, I have the honor to make, for the information of the general commanding this district, the following report of an engagement between the Federal steamers and the batteries at this point:

On the morning of October 31st two Federal steamers appeared in sight, evidently steering for this place. About 11 a. m. they arrived within a short distance, when they cast anchor. At 1 p. m. they sent a flag of truce on shore, which was met by Major Shea, accompanied by four of the citizens of the town. A short interview succeeded, during which a demand was made for the surrender of the town. They were answered by the commanding officer that he was there to defend it, and should do so to the best of his ability with all the means he had at hand. A demand was then made for time to remove the women and children and sick persons from town. The officer in charge of the flag replied that one hour was the time he was authorized to grant, but in consideration of the fact that an epidemic (yellow fever) was still raging in the town, he would extend the time to one hour and a half; at the expiration of which period they moved up abreast the town and opened fire from both steamers upon both the town and batteries. At this time there were many women and children still in the place, they having been unable, for want of time, to leave.

Our batteries promptly returned the fire. Capt. John A. Vernon commanded one of the batteries, assisted by Lieut. T. D. Woodward; and Capt. J. M. Reuss, assisted by Lieuts. O. L. Schnaubert and G. French, the other, and nobly did both officers and men perform their duty, working their guns as coolly as though on inspection, while a perfect storm of shot and shell rained around them; and this, although yellow fever had decimated their ranks, and that many of the men who manned the batteries had but partially recovered from the fever, entitles them to the highest praise. The steamers were struck several times, and one of them partially disabled as they immediately steamed off out of range of our batteries, where

they again cast anchor and kept up a steady fire upon the town and batteries, until night shut in. On the next morning, November 1st, they again opened fire upon the town and batteries, but owing to their being entirely out of range of our guns, we did not reply to them. At about 11 a. m. they ceased their fire, and steamed down the bay in the direction of Indianola, having in tow the schooner Lecompt, which they had captured in the bay a few days before. One of the steamers went outside the bar and steered in the direction of Galveston, probably for a mortar-boat or some additional force to assist them.

I am glad to report that no lives were lost on our side, but the enemy succeeded in doing considerable damage to the town, tearing up the streets and riddling the houses and otherwise damaging the place. The enemy fired in all 252 shot and shell; 174 the first day and 78 the second, nearly all of them from 32 and 64 pounder rifled guns. Capt. H. Wilke, acting ordnance officer, rendered very efficient service in keeping the batteries supplied with ammunition and freely exposing himself in the discharge of his duty. The citizens of this town acted nobly, particularly Mr. Dunn and Mr. Chas. Oglesbury, who remained in the town and materially assisted the commanding officer, suffering their property to be destroyed without a murmur, and only regretting they could do no more to serve their country.

The ladies of the place, among whom Mrs. Chesley and Mrs. Dunn and the two beautiful and accomplished daughters of the former bore a conspicuous part, acted the part of true Southern heroines, supplying our tired soldiers with coffee, bread and meat even during the thickest of the fight.

I have the honor to be, very respectfully, your obedient servant,

GEORGE E. CONKLIN,  
Lieutenant and Adjutant.

## CHAPTER IX.

MILITARY CONDITION EXPLAINED — GENERAL MAGRUDER ASSUMES COMMAND OF THE DISTRICT OF TEXAS—THE BATTLE OF GALVESTON—SIGNAL DEFEAT OF THE ENEMY.

THE following passages relating to military operations are taken from the history of Brig.-Gen. X. B. Debray, who as colonel had been in command of Galveston in July, 1862, and being senior colonel, was called to command the Eastern sub-district of Texas, with headquarters at Houston, leaving the regiment in the efficient care of Lieutenant-Colonel Myers:

“Nothing happened for several months to break the monotony of camp life, except patrols on the coast, on which duty landing parties from blockading squadrons in search of fresh meat were captured or otherwise punished, and induced to cease their depredations. . . . In the meanwhile General Hébert having been ordered to send to Arkansas all the infantry stationed in Texas, except two regiments, remonstrated against that disposition, which left the State unprotected. His remonstrance met with the curt answer, ‘Texas must take her chances.’ The authorities at Richmond seemed to have overlooked the fact that the loss of the Rio Grande frontier, the only point to be depended on for obtaining army supplies, might be a fatal blow to the Confederate States. General Hébert, despairing of a successful defense with his reduced force against an attack at sea, ordered the small forts erected at Galveston to be dismantled and their artillery to be removed to the mainland at Virginia point, where sand works had been raised. Indeed, this was an era of despondency and gloom of the people of Texas.

“In October, 1862, the Federal fleet entered Galveston bay without resistance. The small force which had been left in the city retired to Virginia point, the city itself being almost deserted by its inhabitants, who had moved with their chattels to Houston and the interior of the State. Communication with the island was maintained by planking over the railroad bridge, and protecting it on the island side with a redoubt and rifle-pits, occupied by a detachment of infantry and artillery. Debray's regiment by frequent patrols day and night satisfied the Federals that we still claimed the city and prevented them from visiting it. A battalion of Federal infantry landed on one of the wharves and took quarters in the warehouses, strongly barricading themselves, but they never ventured into the city.

“By the close of November, Maj.-Gen. John Bankhead Magruder came to assume command of Texas, relieving General Hébert, who was ordered to Louisiana [and afterward was in command at Monroe]. The new commanding general had acquired fame for the skill with which, on the peninsula of Virginia, he checked for weeks McClellan's invading army before miles of empty intrenchments, armed in part with Quaker guns, and by continually moving about his small force to multiply it in Federal eyes. Feeling that something must be done to rouse the spirits of the people of Texas, he resolved to try his hand against the enemy's squadron lying in Galveston bay. Under his instructions two steamboats lying in Buffalo bayou at Houston were travestied into rams and gunboats, armed with one gun each and supplied with two tiers of cotton bales to give them, as the General said in confidence to his friends, an appearance of protection. A third boat was to act as tender. The two gunboats were manned by volunteers of Green's brigade, converted for the occasion into 'horse marines,' also by a company of artillery—the whole under command of the brave Tom Green. Capt. Leon Smith was the naval



commander. General Magruder at Virginia point was actively organizing his land forces."

The recapture of Galveston occurred January 1, 1863, and was reported by General Magruder to Gen. Samuel Cooper, adjutant-general, as follows:

Galveston, February 26, 1863.

Sir: On my arrival in Texas I found the harbors of this coast in the possession of the enemy, from Sabine river to Corpus Christi; the line of the Rio Grande virtually abandoned, most of the guns having been moved from that frontier to San Antonio, only about 300 or 400 men remaining at Brownsville. I resolved to regain the harbors if possible, and to occupy the valley of the Rio Grande in force. The latter would be a very serious undertaking on account of the scarcity of supplies in Mexico and the difficulty of transporting them across the desert from eastern Texas. Having announced this determination as soon as I arrived on the Sabine, Capt. A. R. Wier, of Cook's regiment of artillery, commanding a fort on that river, stepped forward and volunteered with his company to man a steamboat on the Sabine and to clear the pass. This officer and this company had the honor to be the first volunteers for the desperate enterprise of expelling the enemy's fleet from our waters.

I remained a day or two in Houston, and then proceeding to Virginia point, on the mainland, opposite to Galveston island, I took with me a party of 80 men, supported by 300 more, and passing through the city of Galveston at night I inspected the forts abandoned by our troops when the city was given up. I found the forts open in the rear, and taken in reverse by every one of the enemy's ships in the harbor. They were therefore utterly useless for my purposes. The railway track had been permitted to remain from Virginia point to Galveston, and by its means I purposed to transport to a position near to the enemy's fleet the heavy guns hereinafter mentioned, and by assembling all the movable artillery that could be collected together in the neighborhood I hoped to acquire sufficient force to be able to expel the enemy's vessels from the harbor.

Meeting here Capt. Leon Smith, whom, from my acquaintance with him in California, I knew to be of great experience in steamboat management, I employed him

in the quartermaster's department, placing him as a volunteer aide on my staff. I trusted to his charge all the steamers on the Sabine river and in the bayous emptying into Galveston bay, and at the same time directed that those on the Sabine should be fitted out forthwith. Learning subsequently that the enemy had landed at Galveston a considerable force (strength unknown), I directed Capt. Leon Smith, without delaying preparations on the Sabine, to fit up as gunboats the steamers Bayou City and Neptune, and to employ two others as tenders for the purpose of supplying the larger vessels with wood. At the same time I received information that other Federal troops were on the way to Galveston. I therefore directed that the work on the last-mentioned steamer should be carried on night and day, and that captains and crews should be forthwith provided for them.

Fearing that the enemy might land troops at Galveston and fortify himself there, I determined to make the first attack at that point, with the object of destroying, in detail, his land forces as fast as they arrived. Captain Wier, who had first volunteered, was, therefore, with his company ordered from the Sabine on board the Bayou City. Captain Martin, commanding a company of cavalry, having arrived from New Iberia, La., volunteered his services and was likewise assigned to duty on board the same steamer. When the boats designated for the Galveston expedition were nearly ready I called for volunteers from Sibley's brigade, then stationed in the neighborhood under orders for Monroe, La. It is proper to state that I had previously ascertained that the services of these troops at Galveston would not delay a moment their departure for Louisiana, they being unable for want of transportation to move in that direction. This call was for 300 men. It was promptly responded to, Colonels Green and Bagby volunteering to lead the men of their respective regiments. After these officers had volunteered, Col. James Reily, commanding the brigade, also offered to lead the troops from his command, but his services in that capacity were declined as he was then the brigade commander. About 60 men of Reily's regiment likewise volunteered, but they did not accompany the expedition, having been ordered back to their regiment by Colonel Reily, after having once reported to Colonel Green, who commanded the land force

on the steamers. In addition to these troops, Lieutenant Harby, late captain in the revenue service of the United States, with a company of infantry acting as artillery, was ordered on board the Neptune. The men destined for the naval expedition were armed with Enfield rifles, which I had brought with me from Richmond, and with double-barrel shotguns.

The enemy's fleet, then lying in the waters of Galveston, consisted of the Harriet Lane, carrying four heavy guns and two 24-pounder howitzers, commanded by Captain Wainright, U. S. navy; the Westfield, flagship of Commodore Renshaw, a large propeller mounting eight heavy guns; the Owasco, a similar ship to the Westfield, mounting eight heavy guns; the Clifton, a steam propeller, four heavy guns; the Sachem, a steam propeller, four heavy guns; two armed transports, two large barks and an armed schooner. The enemy's land forces were stationed at the end of a long wharf, and were crowded into large buildings immediately under the guns of the steamships. The approaches landward to this position were impeded by two lines of strong barricades, and communication with the shore was destroyed by the removal of portions of the wharf in front of the barricades. It thus became necessary for our storming party to advance by wading through the water, and to enable them to mount on the end of the wharf fifty scaling ladders were constructed. As there were no breastworks or other protection for our artillery making the attack on the enemy's ships and land forces, my object was to bring to bear as heavy a fire of artillery as possible after reaching the wharves and other points selected for the purpose under cover of night. I knew that the co-operation of the cotton boats with the land forces would be extremely difficult to attain, the distance the former had to run being 30 miles. I therefore had not calculated with confidence on a success greater than that of the expulsion of the enemy's fleet from the harbor. If the desired co-operation should be secured, the result would be immediately accomplished and would be attended probably with the capture or destruction of some of the enemy's ships. If the co-operation should fail, I nevertheless felt satisfied that by throwing up intrenchments at the end of the streets leading to the water I could gradually expel the fleet from the harbor. For this purpose intrenching tools in large quantities were prepared.

To attain the object in view, I had at my disposal six siege pieces, the heaviest weighing 5,400 pounds. I also caused to be constructed a railroad ram, armed with an 8-inch Dahlgren and mounted on a railway flat. This flat and gun were carried by railway to a point within a few hundred yards of the Harriet Lane. A large quantity of cotton was transported in the same way, with the view of using it in making a breastwork for this gun should we not succeed in our object before daylight. In addition I had fourteen field pieces, some of them rifled and some smooth bore. Three of the heaviest of the siege guns had to be transported nine miles, the others seven miles, between sunset and 12 o'clock under cover of the darkness and over very difficult roads. A system of rapid communication with our gunboats by telegraph and otherwise having been established, it was arranged that the attack should take place at 12 midnight, the fire of our land batteries constituting the signal for the naval attack. Nevertheless I informed Commodore Smith, in command of the naval expedition, that I would attack the enemy's fleet whether the gunboats made their appearance or not.

The key of the whole position was Fort Point at the mouth of the harbor, two miles below the town. This fort was entirely open in the rear, thus affording no protection for our artillery against the enemy's vessels inside of the harbor. The attack from this point was intrusted to Capt. S. T. Fontaine, of Cook's regiment of artillery, supported by six companies of Pyron's regiment, dismounted dragoons, under command of the gallant Colonel Pyron. Wilson's battery of six pieces was to attack the enemy from the center wharf; the railroad ram was sent to the upper wharf. The remainder of the artillery was manned from Cook's regiment and posted in eligible positions. Col. J. J. Cook himself was intrusted with the command of the storming party of about 500 men, composed of details from Pyron's and Elmore's regiments and Griffin's battalion, and furnished with ladders to scale the wharf on which the enemy's land forces were barricaded. Brig.-Gen. W. R. Scurry was placed in command of Pyron's regiment and of the remainder of Sibley's brigade, and Elmore's men, commanded by Lieut.-Col. L. A. Abercrombie, the latter acting as a support for the whole. Lieutenant-Colonel Manly, of Cook's



regiment, was ordered to Virginia point to defend that work, which was our base of operations, and which was connected with Galveston island by a railroad bridge two miles in length, open to the attack of the enemy.

Leading the center assault in person, I approached within two squares of the wharves, at which point I directed the horses of the field pieces to be removed from them and placed behind some brick building for shelter from the anticipated discharge of grape and canister. After allowing the lapse of what turned out to be ample time for Captain Fontaine to reach and occupy his more distant position, the guns were placed along a line of about two and one-half miles, principally within the limits of the city. It having been agreed that the fire of the center gun should furnish signal for a general attack, I proceeded to carry out this portion of the plan by discharging the piece myself. The signal was responded to by an almost simultaneous and very effective discharge along the whole line. The moon had by this time gone down, but still the light of the stars enabled us to see the Federal ships. The enemy did not hesitate long in replying to our attack. He soon opened on us from his fleet with a tremendous discharge of shell, which was followed with grape and canister. Our men, however, worked steadily at their guns under cover of the darkness. Colonel Cook now advanced with his storming party to the assault; his men wading through the water and bearing with them their scaling ladders endeavored to reach the end of the wharf on which the enemy were stationed. Colonel Cook was supported by Griffin's battalion and by sharpshooters deployed on the right and left, in order to distract the enemy's attention. A severe conflict took place at this point, our men being exposed to a fire of grape and canister and shell from the ships, as well as of musketry from the land forces. The water was deep, the wharf proving higher than was anticipated, and the scaling ladders, as was reported to me by Colonel Cook, were found to be too short to enable the men to accomplish their object. After an obstinate contest the infantry were directed to cover themselves and fire from the buildings nearest this wharf, which was accordingly done.

The enemy's fire was deadly. The ships being not more than 300 yards from our batteries it was ex-

tremely difficult to maintain the position we had assumed, and some of the artillerymen were driven from their pieces. As daylight, which was now approaching, would expose these men still more to the enemy's fire, and as our gunboats had not as yet made their appearance, I ordered the artillery to positions which offered more protection, but from which the fire could be continued on the adversary with greater advantage to us. Knowing Captain Fontaine to be in a position the most exposed of all, I at the same time dispatched a staff officer with instructions to have his pieces likewise withdrawn. This order reached Captain Fontaine's men before it was received by the captain, and the concentrated fire from the enemy's ships but a few hundred yards distant having increased in intensity, they were compelled to leave their pieces. They were, however, soon formed by Captain Fontaine in a position of greater security.

The delicate duty of withdrawing the pieces in the city from the close vicinity of the enemy was intrusted to Brigadier-General Scurry, who performed it with skill and gallantry. Preparations were then ordered for the immediate fortification and permanent occupation of the city. But at this moment, our fire still continuing, our gunboats came dashing down the harbor and engaged the *Harriet Lane*, which was the nearest of the enemy's ships, in the most gallant style, running into her, one on each side, and pouring on her deck a deadly fire of rifles and shotguns. The gallant Captain Wainright fought his ship admirably. He succeeded in disabling the *Nep-tune* and attempted to run down the *Bayou City*, but he was met by an antagonist of even superior skill, coolness and heroism. Leon Smith, ably seconded by Capt. Henry S. Lubbock, the immediate commander of the *Bayou City*, and by her pilot, Captain McCormick, adroitly evaded the deadly stroke, although as the vessels passed each other he lost his larboard wheel-house in the shock. Again the *Bayou City*, while receiving several broadsides, almost at the cannon's mouth, poured into the *Harriet Lane* a destructive fire of small-arms. Turning once more she drove her prow into the iron wheel of the *Harriet Lane*, thus locking the two vessels together. Followed by the officers and men of the heroic volunteer corps, Commodore Leon Smith leaped to the deck of the

hostile ship, and after a moment of feeble resistance she was ours. The surviving officers of the *Harriet Lane* presented their swords to Commodore Leon Smith on the quarter-deck of the captured vessel. After the surrender the *Owasco* passed alongside, pouring into the *Harriet Lane* a broadside at close quarters, but she was soon forced to back out by the effect of our musketry.

Commodore Smith then sent a flag to Commodore Renshaw, whose ship had in the meantime been run aground, demanding the surrender of the whole fleet, and giving three hours' time to consider. These propositions were accepted by the commanding officer, and all the enemy's vessels were immediately brought to anchor, with white flags flying. Most of this time was occupied in attempting to get the *Harriet Lane* to the wharf in order to remove the wounded to a place of safety. The ships and boats were so much damaged that this was found to be almost impossible with the means at hand. Proceeding myself to the wharf I found one of my most distinguished and scientific staff officers, Maj. A. M. Lea, who informed me that on board the *Harriet Lane* he had found his son, the second in command, mortally wounded. He represented to me that there were other officers badly wounded and urged me to delay, if possible, their removal. It now being within an hour of the expiration of the period of truce, I sent another flag to Commodore Renshaw, whose ship was among the most distant, claiming all his vessels immediately under our guns as prizes, and giving him further time to consider the demand for the surrender of the whole fleet. This message was borne by Colonel Green and Captain Lubbock. While these gentlemen were on their way in a boat to fulfill their mission, Commodore Renshaw blew up his ship and was himself accidentally blown up with it. They boarded the ship of the next in command, who dropped down the bay, still having them on board, and carried them some distance toward the bar, while still flying the white flag at the masthead.

In the meantime General Scurry sent to know if he should fire at the ships immediately in his front, at the expiration of the period of truce. To this I replied in the negative, as another demand under a flag of truce by me had been sent to the commodore. When the first period of truce expired the enemy's ships under our

guns, regardless of the white flags still flying at their mastheads, gradually crept off. As soon as this was seen I sent a swift express on horseback to General Scurry, directing him to open fire on them. This was done with so much effect that one of them is reported to have sunk near the bar and the Owasco was seriously damaged.

I forward a correspondence on this subject between Commodore Bell and myself. In this correspondence Commodore Bell states that the truce was violated by the firing of cannon and small-arms by our men on the shore, as he has been informed. This is an error. Not a gun or small-arm was discharged during the stipulated period, or until the enemy's vessels were discovered to be creeping off out of the harbor. Commodore Leon Smith fired a heavy gun at the retiring ships, with effect, from the Harriet Lane. Jumping on board the steamer Carr, he proceeded to Bolivar channel and captured and brought in, in the immediate presence of the enemy's armed vessels, the two barks and schooner before spoken of. As soon as it was light enough to see, the land force surrendered to General Scurry.

We thus captured one fine steamship, two barks and one schooner. We ran ashore the flagship of the commodore, drove off two war steamers and sunk another, as reported, all of the United States navy and the armed transports, and took 300 or 400 prisoners. The number of guns captured was fifteen, and, being found on Pelican Spit, a large quantity of stores, coal and other material also was taken. The Neptune sank; her officers and crew, with the exception of those killed in battle, were saved, as were also her guns. The loss on our side was 26 killed and 117 wounded. Among the former was the gallant Captain Wier, the first volunteer for the expedition. The alacrity with which officers and men, all of them totally unacquainted with this novel kind of service, some of whom had never seen a ship before, volunteered for an enterprise so extraordinarily and apparently desperate in its character, and the bold and dashing manner in which the plan was executed, are certainly deserving of the highest praise.

Although it may appear invidious to make distinctions, I nevertheless regard it as a duty to say that too much credit cannot be bestowed on Commodore Leon Smith, whose professional ability, energy and persever-



ance, amidst many discouraging influences, were so conspicuously displayed in the preparation for the attack, while in its execution his heroism was sublime. In the latter he was most ably and gallantly seconded by Colonel Green, commanding the land forces serving on board of our fleet; by Captain Lubbock, commanding the Bayou City; by her pilot, Captain McCormick; Captain Wier, commanding the artillery; Captain Martin, commanding dismounted dragoons; and by the officers and men on that boat. Though in the case of the Neptune the result was not so favorable, her attack on the Harriet Lane was equally bold and dashing and had its weight in the capture. Colonel Bagby commanding the land troops on board the Neptune; Captain Slaughter; her pilots, Captains Swift and McGovern; Captain Harby, and the officers and crew of the ship, likewise deserve, as they have received, my thanks for their participation in this brilliant battle. The engineers, among whom Captain Seymour, of the Bayou City, and Captain Connor, of the Neptune, were distinguished by remarkable coolness, skill and devotion in the discharge of their important duties.

In the land attack especial commendations are due to Brig.-Gen. W. R. Scurry, Col. X. B. Debray, Major Von Harten, Cook's regiment of artillery; Captain Fontaine, Cook's regiment; Maj. J. Kellersberg of the engineer corps; also to Colonels Cook, Pyron, Lieutenant-Colonel Abercrombie, commanding Elmore's men; Major Griffin, Major Wilson, of the artillery; Captain Mason, Captain McMahan, and to the accomplished and devoted Lieutenant Sherman, who fell at his piece mortally wounded, and to Privates Brown and Shoppman, of Daly's company of cavalry, the latter of whom kept up the fire of one piece, without assistance, under the enemy's grape and canister.

The officers of my staff exhibited on this, as on previous occasions, conspicuous ability and gallantry. When some of the men were compelled to leave their pieces at one of the wharves nearest the enemy, Major Dickinson, assistant adjutant-general, calling for volunteers, dashed down the street in order to withdraw the piece. Whilst in the act of consummating this design he was badly wounded by a fragment of a shell striking him in the left eye, which unfortunately has lost its sight. Capt. E. P.

Turner, assistant adjutant-general, likewise behaved with conspicuous gallantry. Lieutenants Geo. A. Magruder and H. M. Stanard, my aides-de-camp, executed my orders with remarkable gallantry, promptness and intelligence. These two officers have thus been distinguished in the battles of Bethel, Yorktown, Savage Station and Malvern Hill. It is only just that I should commend them to the special consideration of the government. Lieutenant Magruder volunteered for the service, and brought off in the most gallant manner some pieces which the men had been compelled to retire from. Lieutenant Stanard behaved with equal gallantry in the execution of orders, exposing himself to the enemy's fire. Lieutenant-Colonel McNeill, of Sibley's brigade, adjutant and inspector-general, rendered distinguished service in carrying out my orders, as also did Lieutenant Carrington of the same regiment, acting on my staff. Mr. Dennis Brashear, who has been in every battle in which I have been engaged, except that of Bethel, and served with great gallantry everywhere without pay or reward of any kind for more than a year, rendered important and most gallant service on this occasion. I am also under obligations to Lieutenant-Colonel Nichols, volunteer-aide, whose ability and local knowledge were of great service in organizing the details of the attack. I likewise thankfully acknowledge the services of Judge P. W. Gray and the Hon. J. A. Wilcox, members of Congress from Texas, who as volunteer aides accompanied me to the front when the battle opened, and remained with me during the continuance. The assistance of Gen. Thomas B. Howard, of the militia, and his adjutant-general, Major Tucker, residents of Galveston, was of great value, as was also that of Mr. E. W. Cave, volunteer aide, from Houston. Hon. M. M. Potter, of Galveston, was likewise conspicuous during the engagement for his activity and devotion. I take this occasion to recommend to the special consideration of the President the conduct of Gov. J. R. Baylor, of Arizona, who, though not in command of any troops nor attached to any staff, was conspicuous for his gallant conduct as a private, serving the guns during the hottest of the fight, and with his coat off working to place them in position during the night.

Lieutenant-Colonel Manly sustained the operations from Virginia point with great ability and activity. Capt.

W. J. Pendleton, acting aide-de-camp, who accompanied the troops, proved himself to be an officer of very remarkable ability, energy and devotion. Captain Stoy, assistant quartermaster, is also deserving of high commendation. Maj. J. B. Eustis, acting ordnance officer on my staff, assisted by Lieut. M. Hughes, of the artillery, performed admirably his difficult and important duties in the preparation for the attack. The former by my order remained in charge of his depot at Virginia point, while the latter discharged gallantly his duties on the field. I likewise take pleasure in recognizing the efficient and gallant service of Maj. O. M. Watkins, in charge of conscript business, on my staff; of Col. C. G. Forshey, of the engineer corps; of Capt. H. Pendleton, assistant quartermaster, who accompanied me to the front, and of Maj. E. B. Pendleton, chief commissary on my staff, who discharged his important duties with gallant ability. Lieutenants Stringfellow, Jones and Hill, of the artillery, behaved with remarkable gallantry during the engagement, each of them volunteering to take charge of guns and personally directing the fire, after the officers originally in charge of them had been wounded.

It would be improper to close this report without directing the particular attention of the government to invaluable services rendered by Maj. B. Bloomfield, quartermaster on my staff, and by Capt. E. C. Wharton, assistant quartermaster at Houston. The officers, by their intelligence, energy and activity, proved themselves fully adequate to all the demands made upon them in the preparation of the means appropriate to their department, and contributed materially to the successful result of the expedition. Nor should I here omit to mention Capt. W. S. Good, in command of ordnance. I commend him specially to the chief of ordnance and to the consideration of his excellency, the President. Besides the names mentioned above I would call attention to the names of the officers and men reported by their respective commanding officers to have distinguished themselves by gallant and meritorious services.

As it would have been imprudent to give full warning to the inhabitants of Galveston of my intention to attack the Federal fleet, lest information of the design might reach the enemy, as soon as the head of the column entered the suburbs of the town I directed the am-



balance, in charge of one of my staff officers, to proceed to the convent of Ursuline nuns near that point, and place the conveyances at their disposal for their immediate removal to the houses provided for them. I also in like manner informed the foreign consuls and the mayor of the contemplated attack, and gave them time to move their families and the citizens most exposed to a place of safety. The noble women of the convent, while recognizing the courtesy extended to them, expressed a preference to remain and nurse the wounded, offering their building as a hospital. Many of the inhabitants left the houses most exposed to the enemy's fire, and I am happy to state that, although many edifices were much injured and the town riddled by balls, no casualty occurred among the citizens. The wounded of the enemy were conducted to the same hospital, and the same attentions were bestowed on them as if they had been our own men. Captain Wainright and Lieutenant Lea, of the Federal navy, were buried with masonic and military honors in the same grave; Major Lea, of the Confederate army, father of Lieutenant Lea, performing the funeral services.

Having buried the dead, taken care of the wounded, and secured the captured property, my exertions were directed to getting the *Harriet Lane* to sea. The enemy's ships fled to New Orleans, to which place one of their steam transports was dispatched during the action. I knew that a large naval force might be expected to return in a few days. I therefore ordered the employment, at high wages, of all the available mechanics to repair the *Harriet Lane*, her main shaft having been dislocated and her iron wheel greatly disabled, so that the engine could not work. The United States flags were ordered to remain flying on the custom-house and at the mastheads of the ships, so as to attract into the harbor any of the enemy's vessels which might be bound for the port of Galveston. A line of iron buoys, which they had established for the guidance of his ships in the harbor, were displaced and so arranged as to insure their getting aground.

On the 3d of January, I being then on board of the *Harriet Lane*, a yawl boat containing several men, in command of a person named Thomas Smith, recently a citizen of Galveston, and who had deserted from our army, was re-



ported alongside. He informed me that he was sent from the United States transport steamship Cambria, then off the bar, for a pilot, and that they had no idea of the occupation of the city by us. I forthwith ordered a pilot boat, under command of Captain Johnson, to bring in the ship, but through a most extraordinary combination of circumstances, the vessel, which contained E. J. Davis and many other apostate Texans, besides several hundred troops and 2,500 saddles for the use of native sympathizers, succeeded in making her escape. The man Smith, who had, it is said, several times set fire to the city of Galveston before he deserted, had been known as Nicaragua Smith, and was dreaded by every one. He returned to Galveston in order to act as Federal provost-marshal. His arrival produced much excitement, during which some one without orders sent a sailboat to Pelican Spit, now occupied by our troops, to direct the commanding officer there not to fire on our pilot boat, although she was under Yankee colors. The sailboat thus sent was at once supposed to be destined for the Yankee transport. The pilot boat gave chase to her, and the guns from the shore opened on her within hearing of the ship.

Night coming on, I thought it surer, as the alarm might be taken, to capture her at sea before morning, but the Harriet Lane could not move, and our cotton gunboats could not live on the rough sea on the bar. Hence one of the barks, the Royal Yacht, a schooner of ours, the pilot boat, and the Leader, a schooner loaded with cotton, which I had ordered to be sent to a foreign port with a proclamation of the raising of the blockade at Galveston, were directed to be prepared and armed with light artillery. This was done by 2 o'clock the same night, our little fleet being manned by volunteers under the command of Captain Mason, of Cook's regiment of artillery. Unfortunately the wind lulled and none but the pilot boat could reach the enemy's ship. The pilot boat went out under the command of a gallant sailor, Captain Payne, of Galveston. The enemy's ship proved to be a splendid iron steamer, built in the Clyde. I had ascertained from her men taken ashore that she had only two guns, and they were packed on deck under a large quantity of hay, and I anticipated an easy conquest and one of great political importance, as this ship contained almost all of the Texans out of the State who had proved

recreant to their duty to the Confederacy and to Texas. The pilot boat was allowed to get close to the ship, when the boat was hailed and the pilot ordered to come on board. Captain Payne answered that he thought there were rather too many men to trust himself to; whereupon he was directed to come on board or he would be fired into. He went on board as ordered, and soon after the steamer sailed in all haste seaward, leaving the pilot boat and hands to return to us. I am thus particular in this narration, as the friends of Captain Payne fear that he may meet with foul play from the enemy. I shall ascertain through Commodore Bell his fate, and act accordingly. Smith, the deserter, was tried regularly the next day before a general court-martial, and being convicted of deserting to the enemy, was publicly shot in Galveston in accordance with his sentence. The proceedings, which were formal in all respects, legal and regular, are forwarded.

At the time of these occurrences, I received through Col. W. G. Webb reliable information of an insurrection among the Germans in Colorado, Fayette and Austin counties, 800 being reported in arms to resist the conscript law and the State draft. I immediately ordered the Arizona brigade, with a section of artillery, to the disaffected region, declared martial law in these three counties, and had the ringleaders arrested and lodged in jail. The rest yielded, and tranquillity and obedience to the laws are now prevalent. Major Webb contributed much by his personal activity and influence to produce these results, and I earnestly recommend him to the President for the appointment of assistant adjutant-general, with the rank of lieutenant-colonel, to be stationed in the disaffected regions, and to take charge of the business growing out of these affairs and those of the militia. He was an officer of the old army and colonel under General Taylor in the Mexican war. The German ringleaders above mentioned have been turned over to the civil authorities for trial.

I have the honor to announce that the whole coast and islands are now in our possession and that the Rio Grande is strongly occupied.

I am, very respectfully, your obedient servant,

J. BANKHEAD MAGRUDER,  
Major-General Commanding.

Rev. Wm. A. Bowen, of Texas, son of Capt. Wm. A. Bowen, pilot of the *Neptune*, gives information of the naval battle above mentioned, derived directly from his father, that differs from the report in two respects: First, as to the manner in which the *Harriet Lane* and *Bayou City* were locked together; second, that it was the *Neptune* and not the *Bayou City* that drove her prow into the iron wheel of the *Harriet Lane*, and was thereby disabled, and not by a shot of the enemy's ship. This was explained as follows by Captain Bowen, an experienced pilot, who lived several years afterward, a respected citizen of Galveston:

When the battle opened, the *Bayou City*, which had huge steel grappling-hooks, run by the steam "nigger," with a chain around her capstan, managed to fasten this on the *Harriet Lane*, and hauled it taut with a view to prevent her escape while the soldiers boarded her. When the *Harriet Lane* saw the *Clifton*, *Owasco* and *Sachem* going out, in answer to the signal of Commodore *Renshaw* from the flagship *Westfield*, then aground at the east end of *Pelican island*, she started to follow. The *Bayou City* was being towed, as the grapples were fouled, and could not be cast off. A gun had just burst on her bows, killing the brave Captain *Wier* and others, and the remainder had no notion of being towed out by the Federal fleet. She seemed doomed when the situation was discovered by Captain Bowen, of the *Neptune*. He immediately rang the bells to go ahead, and halloed through the speaking trumpet to the engineer (*Nelson Henry*) to give all the steam she had, as the Yankees were trying to tow the *Bayou City* outside. He then pointed the bow of the *Neptune* right for the port wheel of the *Harriet Lane*, and in a few moments struck with a terrific impact, as she could not be slowed down in time. The shock tore a large section of the *Harriet Lane's* wheel out, but stove in the bows of the *Neptune*, so that she immediately began to fill. Captain Bowen saw this, and immediately turned her around, and headed for the flats so as to let her settle in shallow water. She became logged just before reaching the shallow water, sinking in about twelve feet of water, near where the upper (west)

wharf is now. The soldiers and crew all jumped overboard and swam ashore, except Captain Bowen and the carpenter, who remained on board to take the wounded and dead above water.

It is not strange that General Magruder was not able to report all the minute details of the confused and desperate conflict, as he doubtless wished to do in order to give every participant the proper credit for his actions in it.

As is stated in Debray's history: "General Magruder's success raised popular enthusiasm to the highest pitch and his call for more troops was responded to with alacrity. Debray's regiment and other troops were ordered to re-occupy Galveston, while an appeal to the planters, promptly complied with, brought to the island numerous gangs of negroes who, under the supervision of their own overseers, worked diligently on new fortifications planned by the commanding general. Colonel Debray having been assigned to the command of Galveston island, Lieutenant-Colonel Myers remained in command of the regiment.

"The blockade of Galveston, forcibly raised on January 1st, was not resumed until the 13th of the same month, when seven gunboats came to anchor about 3 miles from the city, to which they prepared to pay their compliments. A shelling was opened and kept up for six hours, to which the garrison, having no artillery to reply, had to submit goodhumoredly. Strange as it may appear, although the Federals covered the whole city with their shells and solid shot, some of which reached the bay, there was no loss of life and the injury to houses was trifling. It will be remembered that on the evening after the shelling, flashes of light were seen, and a rumbling noise resembling broadsides was heard from a distance westward; thereafter a few minutes' darkness and silence prevailed again. Many were the surmises upon this incident, and several weeks intervened before the



sinking of the Federal ship Hatteras by Captain Semmes off St. Louis pass became known on the island. [This refers to the victory of the Confederate ship Alabama in the Gulf, 16 miles from Galveston.] For nine months all was quiet in Texas. The defenses of Galveston soon assumed shape, and Quaker guns, frowning from the crest and casements of the fort, held the Federals in check until real artillery could be placed in battery."

## CHAPTER X.

### A FAMOUS NAVAL EXPLOIT—CAPTURE OF FEDERAL VESSELS OFF SABINE PASS—A LADY'S DESCRIPTION—ENGAGEMENT AT LIGHTHOUSE, SABINE PASS—DEFENSE OF ST. JOSEPH'S ISLAND.

THE capture of the United States warship Morning Light and schooner Velocity, 30 miles off Sabine pass, January 21, 1863, by Confederates on the two steamboats, the Josiah H. Bell and the Uncle Ben, was one of the most extraordinary and hazardous naval exploits during the war, though of small proportions compared to many other battles. It was described as follows in the general orders, March 11th, of General Magruder:

The commanding general having been prevented by various circumstances from acknowledging the services of the brave Major Watkins, and the gallant officers and men under his command in the recent victory at Sabine pass, takes this occasion to return them his public and official thanks for the accomplishment of a purpose of great importance to us, and their participation in an exploit almost unparalleled in the annals of warfare.

After driving the enemy's blockading squadron from our immediate waters, these devoted and heroic men in their frail boats pursued him some 30 miles to sea, and after a fight of nearly two hours, on an element on which he considered himself invincible, captured a ship-of-war of nine guns and an armed schooner of two guns of the United States navy, forcing their commanding officers to surrender at discretion.

The perseverance, industry and firmness of the commanding officer, Maj. Oscar M. Watkins, of the provisional army, were only equaled by his intrepidity, admirable coolness and skill in battle. Entirely unaccustomed to the sea, his devotion overcame all obstacles. He was ably and heroically seconded by Captains Fowler and Johnson,

respective commanders of the steamers *Bell* and *Uncle Ben*, by Captains Odlum, O'Bryan, Noland and Aycock, and Lieutenants Dowling and Aikens, of the land forces, and by the engineers, pilots, troops and crews of the expedition.

As there are but few battles to be reported in Texas during the war, and this naval affair was of a remarkable character, it is deemed proper to insert a full description of the preparations for and execution of it, prepared by an accomplished lady, Mrs. M. Looscan, wife of Major Looscan, of the Confederate army, derived directly and personally from the participants in that battle. Its general tenor and minute detail are evidence of correctness, in addition to the high social standing of the lady. It was first published in the *Houston Post* of May 23, 1895, and is here quoted as supplementary to the report of the commanding general:

Capt. Charles Fowler, whose recent death is deplored by all who love and appreciate the highest type of true heroic manhood, was a prominent actor in one of the most daring naval expeditions of the late civil war. The story of this achievement, of which he was chief director, and in which his inspiration called forth all the dare-devil bravery of his followers, was obtained from the lips of men who were with him, who shared his danger, who admired his courage, and who were ready to risk their lives at his bidding. The engagement to which I refer was the capture of the United States warship *Morning Light* and schooner *Velocity*, on January 21, 1863.

Early in December, 1862, Captain Fowler was instructed by Gen. J. B. Magruder, commanding the military district of Texas, New Mexico and Arizona, to proceed to the Sabine river and there make selection of two or three steamboats and fit them up as gunboats, for the purpose of attacking the Federal gunboats which were in possession of Sabine pass. Having been vested with full power of impressment of such materials as might be necessary for carrying out the proposed plans in the shortest possible space of time, Captain Fowler selected the steamboats Josiah H. Bell and the *Uncle Ben*, the former about

180 feet long, and the latter probably 135 feet, both about ten years old, which is about the usual life of high pressure river boats. However, they were the best material at hand, and in fairly good condition for their age. Operations were begun immediately, details of soldiers being employed to transform them into savage looking gunboats. Breastworks were formed by putting heavy 14x14-inch timbers through the decks, fastening them to the floor timbers in the hold, and allowing them to extend up through the boiler deck, thus affording protection to the sharpshooters with which the boats were to be partly manned. Construction progressed slowly, as but few skilled mechanics could be had.

The preparation and equipment of these boats were effected at Orange, which is situated on the Sabine river, and was at that time not reached by any railroad. The Texas & New Orleans railroad, extending from Houston to Beaumont, the nearest point to Orange, was in a very unsafe and at times impassable condition, but as Sabine pass at the mouth of Sabine river was blockaded, the railroad formed the only means of communication with the other portions of the military department of Texas. The Sabine river below Orange and at a distance of about four miles from its mouth, widens into a large basin which is known as Sabine lake; the remainder of the river's course to the Gulf of Mexico is much narrower and also deeper, and is known as Sabine pass. Here the Federal blockading fleet lay at anchor when the fitting up of the river steamboats was begun by Captain Fowler, and it was intended to drive them from their position and capture them as soon as the equipment of the improvised Confederate gunboats was completed. An artillery company, composed entirely of Irishmen, and known as the Davis Guards, was detailed for service on these boats. Captain Odlum was the captain of the company, but under Lieut. Dick Dowling they had seen some service at Galveston in the capture of that place a few days before, and it was under his command that they were later to link their names in immortal bands with that of Sabine pass.

They reported for duty at Orange and assisted in mounting a 6-inch rifle gun on board the Josiah H. Bell. Maj. O. M. Watkins, of General Magruder's staff, also arrived at Orange accompanied by Captain Aycock's company, and others of Pyron's regiment of dismounted



cavalry to the number of 90 or 100. A detachment of Spaight's battalion was likewise detailed for service as sharpshooters on board the boats.

About the last of December, 1862, the Federal fleet abandoned their anchorage at Sabine pass and sailed out into the Gulf of Mexico, beyond the bar, no doubt having been notified of the preparations going forward for their attack. The Bell was commanded by Capt. Charles Fowler, with Green Hall as first officer. The Uncle Ben was under charge of Captain Johnson. The Davis Guards and Captain Aycock's company were assigned to duty on the Bell, the former as artillerymen, and the latter as sharpshooters, and the detachment of Spaight's battalion did similar service on board the Uncle Ben. There was a delay of several days on account of obstructions which had been placed in the channel between the mouth of the Sabine river and the lake for the purpose of preventing the passage of Federal vessels. . . . .

The north wind had made the tide very low again, but about noon of the same day the tide rose and floated the Bell and Uncle Ben, and steaming through the lake toward the town of Sabine pass, they arrived at the wharf at about 10 p. m. of the same evening. Here several citizens of the place came aboard and informed Captain Fowler of the position of the Federal gunboats, which lay at anchor some five miles off the bar. This news was discouraging. It looked as if the game had escaped, but there was a universal desire to run great risk for the chance of success. The Federal fleet at this time consisted of the Morning Light, twelve guns, and the schooner Velocity, carrying four small guns. The number of boats on each side was equal, but here the resemblance in force ceased. Nevertheless Captain Fowler determined to carry out the plan of attack, although the position of the Federal fleet was very different from that which it occupied when the expedition was first designed. The armament of the Confederate boats was very light, and it was not expected to cut much figure in the fight about to take place. The J. H. Bell had a 6-inch rifle gun in her fore-castle, and the Uncle Ben two small 12-pounder smooth-bore, old-time guns. The Davis Guards, under Lieut. Dick Dowling, had had some practice and could be relied upon for long range firing, but the sharpshooters could only be effective when brought into close contact with the enemy.

At daylight, January 21st, the boats proceeded out to sea. Putting on all steam the Bell and Uncle Ben headed toward the Federal fleet, some 5 miles beyond the bar, but the latter, perceiving their intention and supposing them to be ironclads, took to flight, keeping up a running fire as they retreated. After pursuing them for many miles the Bell came near enough to open fire; the gunners were anxious to begin work, and the first few shots produced telling results, one of the guns of the Morning Light being dismounted by a shell, which killed and wounded all the men at her No. 2 port gun. Both head and feet of one man were taken off, and another was killed by a fragment of shell, and 16 were wounded, two of whom afterward died. But scarcely were the gunners aware of the great execution their gun was doing, when it was incurably disabled by a conical shell stopping about halfway down the gun. It could not be rammed down, neither could it be drawn. Lieutenant Dowling, with his characteristic daring, wanted to chance it by firing; Captain Fowler told him they could not risk firing with shell half home, but assured him that they would go on and take the ship with their rifles.

Henceforth all became riflemen. The Bell continued to pursue the Morning Light directly away from the land for many miles, with all the speed they could make, burning resin and pine knots for fuel. When they had approached within about 200 yards of her, the riflemen opened fire with volleys from about 40 rifles at a time. With this constant rain of bullets on her deck, the men of the Morning Light became demoralized and could not be kept at their guns. The Bell was soon alongside with grappling fast to her main chains. By this time the crew of the Morning Light had stampeded to the between decks, for they could not stand the shower of shot poured on them by the riflemen of the Bell. Some of the ship's men from the top of the mast still fired down upon the Bell, but Captain Dillingham, who had remained at his post on the quarterdeck, seeing that there was nothing left for them but surrender, struck his flag. The men of the Bell were firing like savages and it was almost impossible to make them cease, for they knew and understood little about striking flags or surrender. The surrender was made unconditionally. As the Bell had but two or three seamen, the men of the captured ship were used to clear her

up, furl sails and brace the yards. Another detail of men and the ship's surgeon were assigned to the care of the dead and wounded on the deck, while still another party was employed to get the ship's hawser up from between decks to be used for towing her into Sabine pass. The officers of the ship were taken on board the *Bell*, and great was their surprise to discover what manner of frail craft they had mistaken for an ironclad. While the *Bell* was capturing the *Morning Light*, the *Uncle Ben* had veered to the eastward and achieved the same success in her encounter with the *Velocity*, which she promptly towed into port.

Captain Fowler, with characteristic modesty, lavished unqualified praise upon the detachment of Pyron's regiment on board the *Bell*, and also upon the Davis Guards for their bravery and readiness to obey orders, taking no credit to himself for the successful result of the daring expedition. They were brave men, but so gallant a leader would have lent courage to less valiant hearts than theirs. Many hearts sincerely mourn his death, but perhaps none more truly appreciated the intrepid courage of his grand nature than those who shared his danger in the capture of the *Morning Light* and *Velocity*.

The report of Lieut.-Col. W. H. Griffin, in command at Sabine pass, mentions the victory of a small body of Texans in an engagement there, April 18, 1863, as follows:

"Last night I placed 30 men in the lighthouse under Lieutenant Jones, of Griffin's battalion. To-day at 11 o'clock, 13 Federals came up to the lighthouse in two small boats. We captured 6 men, including Captain McDermot, of the Cayuga, who was mortally wounded, and the captain's gig. The other boat escaped with 3 men. Four were killed in the water. Second Lieutenant Wright, of Company D, Griffin's battalion, was killed, gallantly leading the men. No other casualties."

On May 3d the enemy attempted to make a landing on St. Joseph's island, near Corpus Christi, but were brilliantly repelled by a small force under Capt. E. E. Hobby. Col. A. M. Hobby, Eighth Texas infantry, in command at Corpus Christi, in transmitting the reports of Capts. B. F. Neal and E. E. Hobby, said of the latter:

His men behaved most creditably. Both the officers and the men were exposed to the rain without shelter and short of provisions, but determined to remain until an opportunity was offered to attack the enemy. The boats approached in rear of each other, the first only landing, so the capture of the others was impossible. Nearly all, so the prisoners state, were killed in the second boat; the third had a gun but were unable to use it under the fire of the riflemen. The captured launch is now in the service, and the cotton secured, awaiting your orders. The Sharp's shooters I have repaired and turned over to the ordnance officer, who issued them to Captain Hobby's company as they were greatly in need of guns, having 64 men and only 40 guns.

The report of Capt. E. E. Hobby was as follows:

On the 3d inst., about 2 p. m., I attacked with 28 men of my company three Federal launches, containing about 40 of the enemy, and succeeded in capturing one launch (captain's gig), 5 prisoners, 6 new superior Sharp's rifles, 5 cartridge boxes and 1 ammunition chest. One of the remaining launches, being about 300 yards from the shore, had also surrendered and was pulling toward us. I ordered the fire on it to cease and the men to secure the property belonging to the gig already captured. While busily engaged in this the bark opened fire upon us and the launch began to pull to her. We again fired upon it, doing much execution. We could distinctly see the men in the launch drop their oars and fall over as we fired. Several bodies were also seen floating in the water. One of the launches reached the bark with only 2 men in it. The third launch being still further out in the gulf, pulled out of our range at the beginning of the fight. I do not think I am mistaken in estimating the loss of the enemy at 20 in killed, wounded and prisoners. I cannot too highly praise the conduct of the men on this occasion; they were regardless of danger. Their enthusiasm was only equaled by their bravery, and they promptly obeyed every command. The captured launch was carried by the men across the island, a distance of 2 miles, to Aransas bay. On the night of the 3d I removed ten bales of cotton, which had been captured by the enemy and placed on the shore of St. Joseph's island, and carefully concealed it, where it now awaits transportation. Privates Smith and



Bell, of Captain Brackenridge's cavalry, accompanied me in the attack upon the launches, and also assisted in concealing the cotton. I am happy to say I have no casualties to report.

## CHAPTER XI.

MOVEMENT OF TROOPS FROM ARKANSAS TO NORTHERN LOUISIANA—THE ENGAGEMENTS THERE—GEN. E. KIRBY SMITH ASSUMES COMMAND OF THE TRANS-MISSISSIPPI DEPARTMENT—HEADQUARTERS MOVED TO SHREVEPORT—MAILS SUPERINTENDED BY DR. J. H. STARR—SABINE PASS—FEDERAL PREPARATIONS TO CAPTURE IT—SPLENDID NAVAL BATTLE IN ITS DEFENSE.

IN April, 1862, Walker's division of infantry left Arkansas and moved down to the northern part of Louisiana, where portions of the command, with Colonel Parsons' cavalry brigade and some artillery companies, had engagements on and near the Mississippi river, at Milliken's bend and at the Great mound, as it was reported, to draw off Federal forces from Vicksburg. After the fall of Vicksburg, July 4, 1863, the command moved to the vicinity of Alexandria, La. On August 26th, Brig.-Gen. Henry E. McCulloch was ordered to take command in the Northern sub-district of Texas, with headquarters at Bonham. The object of his going there was by either forcible or pacific efforts to get men out of what was called "Jernigan's thicket," which had been made a place of refuge by deserters and others that avoided conscription. It was reported that he had good success in doing it.

After the posts on the Arkansas river had been taken by the Federals, the headquarters of the Trans-Mississippi department was moved to southern Arkansas. Shortly thereafter General Holmes was superseded in its command by Lieut.-Gen. E. Kirby Smith, who fixed his headquarters at Shreveport, on Red river, in Louisiana. After the fall of Vicksburg, on account of the difficulty of passing the mails across the Mississippi river, Dr. Jas. H. Starr,

of Marshall, Tex., was placed in charge of the business of the postmaster-general on the west side of that river. His chief clerk was Washington D. Miller, who had been chief clerk of that department at Richmond.

The Federals evidently desired after their defeat at Galveston to gain a position in Texas from which the interior of the State could be subjected to their control. They selected Sabine Pass as the place that would suit their purpose, the conquest of which was thought to be easy of accomplishment. In 1861 Major Likens' battalion had been stationed there, and had erected an earthwork at the pass below the town. The post was afterward under the command of Lieut.-Col. A. H. Spaight, who removed his command to Beaumont, September 23, 1862. The Federal vessels were driven from it and captured in January, 1863. In the summer following, the defenses were under the command of Capt. Frank H. Odlum, of the First Texas heavy artillery, with Lieuts. Richard W. Dowling, Pat. H. Hennessy, and Wm. P. Cunningham, and about seventy men, most of whom were Irishmen.

At New Orleans, in September, 1863, an expedition of large proportions was fitted up for its capture, the following account of which was published in the New York Herald by Lieut. Henry C. Dane, who was on that occasion attached to the Federal service as a member of the signal corps:

The city of New Orleans was in a state of great excitement on the morning of September 4, 1863. A large expedition was leaving on some unrevealed, but avowedly very important mission. The levee was crowded with men, women and children, where troops were embarking and transports were moving away down the Mississippi river, among grim and sullen-looking men-of-war. The object of the expedition was to capture a small fort at Sabine pass at the mouth of the Sabine river, and establish a base for larger operations. The Suffolk left New Orleans on the 5th and arrived off the pass, and stopped just out of sight of land on the 7th, where the

entire fleet had been ordered to rendezvous to await the arrival of the general-in-chief. On the morning of the 8th a general council of war was held on the Suffolk, when it was decided to indulge in a little supreme strategy. Two gunboats, the Clifton, a New York ferryboat transformed into a warship, and the Sachem, a miserable steam scow which had "come down from a former generation," were to be sent up the river to "draw the fire of the fort" while General Weitzel with 500 men landed on the Texas shore and marched up to storm it in the rear. At 12 o'clock I went on board the Sachem, and Lieut. John W. Dana to the Clifton for signal duty. We knew the work these two gunboats would do would be of a desperate character. We anticipated a thorough pelting, and we were in no way disappointed. General Weitzel and his men mustered on the banks and moved into position ready for sudden action. The scene now was quite imposing. The large fleet of transports, attended by six gunboats, including the "blockader," were now ready to assault, capture and possess the southern half of the great State of Texas.

The remarkable Confederate victory which followed is well told in the general orders of Major-General Magruder, and the report of Lieut. R. W. Dowling, which follow:

General Orders, No. 154.

Headquarters, Dist. of Texas, N. M. and Arizona,  
Houston, September 9, 1863.

1. The major-general commanding has the satisfaction of announcing to the army a brilliant victory won by the little garrison of Sabine pass against the fleet of the enemy. Attacked by five gunboats, the fort, mounting but three guns of small caliber and manned by the Davis Guards, Lieut. R. W. Dowling, assisted by Lieut. N. H. Smith, of the engineers, supported by about 200 men, the whole under the command of Capt. F. H. Odum, steadily resisted the fire, and at last forced the surrender of the two gunboats, Clifton and Sachem, badly crippling another, which, with the others, escaped over the bar. The result of this gallant achievement is the capture of 2 fine gunboats, 15 heavy guns, over 200 prisoners, among them the commodore of the fleet, and over 50 of the enemy killed



and wounded, while not a man was lost on our side or a gun injured.

2. The enemy's fleet, with his land forces, is still off the coast, no doubt intending a landing at the first favorable moment. He may endeavor to retrieve his losses at Sabine pass by an attack upon the works at other points on the coast. Should this be the case the major-general commanding confidently expects to receive from his troops at these points as cheering a report as that which he now communicates to the army from the defenders of the Sabine.

By command of Maj.-Gen. J. B. Magruder:

EDMUND P. TURNER, Asst. Adjt.-Gen.

Fort Griffin, Sabine Pass, September 9, 1863.

Captain: On Monday morning, about 2 o'clock, the sentinel informed me the enemy were signaling, and fearing an attack, I ordered all the guns at the fort manned, and remained in that position until daylight, at which time there were two steamers evidently sounding for the channels on the bar, a large frigate outside. They remained all day at work, but during the evening were reinforced to the number of 22 vessels of different classes. On the morning of the 8th the United States gunboat Clifton anchored opposite the lighthouse and fired 26 shells at the fort, most of which passed a little over, or fell short, all, however, in excellent range, one shell being landed on the works and another striking the south angle of the fort without doing any material damage. The firing commenced at 6:30 o'clock and finished at 7:30 by the gunboat hauling off. During this time we had not replied by a single shot. All was then quiet until 11 o'clock, at which time the gunboat Uncle Ben steamed down near the fort. The United States gunboat Sachem opened on her with a 30-pounder Parrott gun. She fired three shots, but without effect, the shots all passing over the fort and missing the Ben. The whole fleet then drew off and remained out of range until 3:40 o'clock, when the Sachem and Arizona steamed into line up the Louisiana channel, the Clifton and one boat, name unknown, remaining at the junction of the two channels. I allowed the two former boats to approach within 1,200 yards, when I opened fire with the whole of my battery on the foremost boat (the Sachem), which after the third or fourth round hoisted the white

flag. One of the shots passed through her steam drum. The Clifton in the meantime had attempted to pass through Texas channel, but received a shot which carried away her tiller rope. She became unmanageable and grounded about 500 yards below the fort, which enabled me to concentrate all my guns on her, which were six in number—two 32-pounder smooth-bores, two 24-pounder smooth-bores, two 32-pounder howitzers. She withstood our fire some 25 or 35 minutes, when she also hoisted a white flag. During the time she was aground she used grape, and her sharpshooters poured an incessant shower of minie-balls into the works. The fight lasted from the time I fired the first gun until the boats surrendered; that was about three-quarters of an hour. I immediately boarded the captured Clifton and proceeded to inspect her magazine, accompanied by one of the ship's officers, and discovered it safe and well stocked with ordnance stores. I did not visit the magazine of the Sachem in consequence of not having any small boats to board her with. The gunboat Uncle Ben steamed down to the Sachem and towed her into the wharf. Her magazine was destroyed by the enemy flooding it.

During the engagement I was nobly and gallantly assisted by Lieut. N. H. Smith, of the engineers corps, who by his coolness and bravery won the respect and admiration of the whole command. This officer deserves well of the country. To Asst.-Surg. Geo. H. Bailey I am under many obligations, who, having nothing to do in his own line, nobly pulled off his coat and assisted in administering Magruder pills to the enemy, and behaved with great coolness. During the engagement the works were visited by Capt. F. H. Odlum, commanding post; Col. Leon Smith, commanding marine department of Texas. Capt. W. S. Good, ordnance officer, Dr. Murray, acting assistant surgeon, behaved with great coolness and gallantry, and by them I was enabled to send for reinforcements, as the men were becoming exhausted by the rapidity of our fire; but before they could accomplish their purpose the enemy surrendered.

Thus it will be seen we captured with 47 men 2 gunboats mounting 13 guns of the heaviest caliber, and about 350 prisoners. All my men behaved like heroes; not a man flinched from his post. Our motto was, "Victory or death." I beg leave to make particular mention of Pri-

vate Michael McKernan, whom I assigned as gunner to one of the guns, and nobly did he do his duty. It was his shot struck the Sachem in her steam drum. Too much praise cannot be awarded to Col. Leon Smith for his activity and energy in saving and bringing the vessels to port. I have the honor, Captain, to remain, with great respect, your most obedient servant,

R. W. DOWLING, First Lieut., Commanding Co. F,  
Cook's Artillery, Fort Griffin, Sabine Pass.

Col. Leon Smith in his report said that the enemy's fleet consisted of 20 vessels, and that they had about 1,500 men on board. The 200 Confederates at Sabine pass were composed of detachments from Griffin's and Spaight's battalions.

In his report to General Banks, Maj.-Gen. W. B. Franklin, who was in command of the Federal troops, says "200,000 rations and 200 mules were thrown overboard by the transports that had crossed the bar, to enable them to get outside again."

General Magruder ordered the following troops to Sabine pass and vicinity immediately:

Third regiment infantry, Gould's regiment, four companies Griffin's battalion, Jones' company light artillery, Captains Nichols' and Gonzales' battalions, and First Texas cavalry who were encamped near Alleyton, Tex.

The roster of Company F, First Texas heavy artillery, present at the battle, is as follows: First Lieut. R. W. Dowling; Sergeants, Corporals and Privates: Jack W. White, Timothy McDonough, Thomas Dougherty, David Fitzgerald, Michael Monohan, John Masset, John McKeefer, Patrick McDonald, William Gleason, Michael Carr, Joseph Wilson, Thomas Hagerty, Thomas Huggins, Abram McCabe, James Fleming, Patrick Fitzgerald, Thomas McKernan, Edward Pritchard, Charles Rheims, Timothy Hurley, John McGrath, Matthew Walshe, Patrick Sullivan, Patrick Clare, John Hennessy, Hugh Deagon, Maurice Powers, Abner Carter, Daniel McMurray, Patrick Malone, James Corcoran, Patrick Abbot, John McNealus,

Michael Eagan, Daniel Donovan, John Wesley, John Anderson, John Flood, Peter O'Hara, Mike Delany and Terrence Mulhern. The above were enlisted men. Lieut. N. H. Smith, a Louisianian, and Dr. George Bailey, assistant surgeon, volunteered to aid the gunners in the fort, both taking their places at the guns. These names deserve to go down in Texas history as of men who were heroes in a naval battle in defense of the State.

Lieut. Henry Dane, previously quoted, as a prisoner had an interview with Lieutenant Dowling, which he reported as follows: "The commander of the fort was a modest, retiring, boyish-looking Irish lad 19 years old. I could not refrain laughing in his face when he was introduced to me as Lieut. Dick Dowling, in command of the fort. 'And are you the shaughran,' I asked, 'who did all that mischief? How many men and guns did you have?' 'We had four 32-pounders and two 24-pounders, and 43 men,' was his reply with a blush. 'And do you realize what you have done, sir?' I asked. 'No,' he said frankly; 'I do not understand it at all.' 'Well, sir, you and your 43 men, in your miserable little mud fort in the rushes, have captured two gunboats, a goodly number of prisoners, many stands of small arms, and plenty of good ammunition, and all that you have done with six popguns and two smart Quakers. And that is not the worst of your boyish tricks. You have sent three Yankee gunboats, 6,000 troops and a general out to sea in the dark.'"

By resolution, approved February 8, 1864, the thanks of the Confederate Congress were extended to Captain Odlum, Lieut. Richard W. Dowling, and the 41 men composing the Davis Guards, for their gallant defense, which was characterized as "one of the most brilliant and heroic achievements in the history of this war, and entitles the Davis Guards to the gratitude and admiration of their country."



## CHAPTER XII.

HOME SUPPLIES BY HOME INDUSTRY—THE COLLECTION OF ARMY SUPPLIES—SALT MANUFACTURE—IRON WORKS—PENITENTIARY CLOTH—ITS DISTRIBUTION—A NEW MILITARY BOARD—PURCHASE AND IMPORTATION OF COTTON—GUNSHOPS AND ARMORY—LARGE PRISON CAMP NEAR TYLER—OPERATIONS OF MILITARY BOARD—DISPOSITION OF HOSPITAL FUND.

**D**URING the fifteen years between the annexation of Texas to the Union and the secession of the States of the South, there had been in this State a large increase of population and wealth, both imported into and produced in it, and the country had become quite prosperous generally. This had caused large stocks of goods of every description to be introduced by merchants, which induced the people largely to depend upon such importation to supply them with clothing, domestic utensils of all sorts, and many other articles of necessity for family use and farming purposes. The blockade of our Gulf ports and the war operations north of the State stopped the trade, and the supply on hand gradually diminished with no opportunity to replenish it, so that by the first of 1862 the people in most parts of the State set about providing themselves with the necessities of life. From that time to the end of the war a person traveling past houses on the road could hear the sound of the spinning-wheel and of the looms at which the women were at work to supply clothing for their families and for their husbands and sons in the army. Thus while the men were struggling valiantly with all their martial efforts in camp and in battle, the work of the women was no less heroic and patriotic in their homes.

Nor was that kind of employment all; for many a wife or daughter of a soldier went out on the farm and bravely did the work with plow and hoe to make provision for herself and little children. Shops were established extensively to manufacture domestic implements. Wheat and other cereals were produced, where practicable, in large quantities; hogs and cattle were raised more generally; and before the passage over the Mississippi was closed by the Federal gunboats, droves of beef-cattle and numerous wagon-loads of bacon and flour were almost constantly passing across that river from Texas to feed the soldiers of the Confederate army. Texas had a large surplus of provisions beyond the needs of home consumption and the soldiers stationed within the State.

An almost universally humane feeling inspired people of wealth as well as those in moderate circumstances to help the indigent families of soldiers in the field and the women who had lost their husbands and sons by sickness or in battle. There were numerous slaveholders who had only a few slaves, such as had been raised by themselves or by their parents as part of the family, and so regarded themselves. In the absence of the husband in the service, the wife, though never having been used to hardships, and even though delicately reared and educated, assumed the management of the farm and the control of the negroes on it. It was a subject of general remark that the negroes were more docile and manageable during the war than at any other period, and for this they deserve the lasting gratitude of their owners in the army. Their children since the war have been taught in the free public schools of the State, in separate schools by teachers of their own color, many of whom have been educated at public expense at the colored normal institute. The interior of the State not having been invaded by the enemy, the negroes were not demoralized and constituted an element of strength to the Confederate cause by their faithful labor on the farms, and by their

manual services at the military posts when required.

At most of the towns there were posts established with officers for the collection of the tithes of farm products under an act of Congress for the use of the army, and wagons were used continually for their transportation to different places where the soldiers were in service. In addition, wagons under private control were constantly running from Texas to Arkansas and to Louisiana loaded with clothing, hats and shoes, contributed by families for their relatives in the army in those States. Indeed, by this patriotic method the greater part of the Texas troops in those States were supplied with clothing of all kinds.

Salt being a prime necessity for family use, salt works were established in eastern Texas, in Cherokee and Smith counties, and at Grand Sabine in Van Zandt county, where before the close of the war there were about forty furnaces operating and turning out to supply the country hundreds of bushels of salt every day. In the west salt was furnished from the salt lakes. Iron works were established for making plows and cooking vessels near Jefferson, Rusk and Austin, and perhaps at other places. At jug factories in Rusk and Henderson counties were made rude earthenware dishes, plates, cups and saucers, and bowls for family use, that were spread over the country. At other shops wagons were made and repaired, and in small domestic factories chairs, tables and other furniture were made. Shoe-shops and tailor-shops were kept busy all over the country. Substitutes for sugar and coffee were partially adopted, but without much success. By such devices the people of Texas became self-supporting, and being blessed with a fertile soil, plenty abounded everywhere within the State.

The county courts, under a law of the legislature, levied a tax to raise a fund to aid indigent families of soldiers, and by another proper provision the children of indigent families attended the schools free of charge. The

penitentiary at Huntsville, under the control of the State government, was busied in manufacturing cotton and woolen cloth, and made each year over a million and a half yards of cloth, which under the direction of the government was distributed first, to supply the soldiers in the army; second, the soldiers' families and their actual consumers, with the restriction that not a yard be sold to retailers and speculators. This provision was a great aid to the families, as it added to private domestic production.

The military board, established by the legislature on the 11th of January, 1862, with Governor Lubbock, Comptroller C. R. Johns and Treasurer C. H. Randolph as its officers, all of them long and closely identified with the people of Texas and fast friends of their well-being, had procured from Mexico and Europe before November, 1863, over 40,000 pairs of cotton and woolen cards, to be supplied to Texas families for home use, at greatly reduced cost, by which the people were saved thousands of dollars.

The general commanding the district of Texas early in 1862 commenced, through agents, the purchase of cotton and the transportation of it to Mexico to purchase arms, cloth and the munitions of war, and this was kept up during the war. On November 21, 1862, General Hébert issued an order prohibiting the exportation of cotton, except by the authorized agents of the government. In February, 1863, General Magruder also issued similar orders, but in April afterward gave instructions much more favorable to the business of transporting cotton. Notwithstanding that, however, there continued to be some embarrassment experienced by the State in this branch of business.

By authority of the general commanding, workshops for the manufacture of articles useful in the service were established at Tyler and Bonham and at various other places. At Tyler there was a distillery, superin-



tended by a surgeon, for making whisky and medicine for the army. At that place in May, 1862, a partnership was formed, consisting of Geo. Yarbrough, J. S. Short and W. S. N. Briscoe, the latter two of whom were gunsmiths, for the establishment of an armory. They purchased one hundred acres of land one mile south of Tyler, built a large brick house and purchased all the necessary machinery and materials for making 5,000 guns, under a contract with the military board at Austin, at \$30 each. After having had much difficulty in securing proper workmen, they succeeded in making 1,000 rifles by September, 1863. Mr. Geo. Yarbrough, previously a leading merchant of Tyler, furnished for this enterprise \$80,000. When the Confederates were forced to abandon Little Rock, Ark., Lieutenant-Colonel Hill, ordnance officer there with an armory under his control, moved to Tyler with his machinery and working force of sixty men, procured the purchase of the Tyler armory property at \$100,000, and continued the manufacture of arms and fixed ammunition, employing in all 200 men and boys. This private enterprise, the only one of such proportions in Texas to aid the Confederate cause, deserves to be recorded in history to the credit of those gentlemen for their devoted patriotism.

Maj. J. C. Kirby, who was sent to Tyler in 1862 as post quartermaster by General Hébert, established shops near that place for making harness and blacksmithing, and collected leather from small tanyards, and wool hats made in the adjoining counties. He also purchased horses, mules and wagons, and wagon-sheets and sacks made in the vicinity, and was in the act of establishing a large tannery at the surrender. At the same time was sent to Tyler, to act as post commissary, Captain Sidnor, and afterward Captain Sinclair, who purchased and sent to the troops in the field large amounts of provisions. Near Tyler, also, was established a prison camp, in which first and last there were 6,000 Federal prisoners confined.

It was under command successively of Colonel Allen, Colonel Anderson and Lieutenant-Colonel Border (and another officer at the surrender, whose name is not obtained). These operations at Tyler are mentioned because of the means of information available. With similar means of information in regard to other places in the State, doubtless a vast amount of military operations could be described, of which no account can be given.

The military board for three years from the time of its creation did a large amount of business of varied character. In January, 1862, they appointed agents who bought for them 3,659 bales of cotton, and their purchases of cotton were largely increased afterward. The cotton was transported to Mexico, and used in the purchase of cotton and woolen cards, arms, munitions of war, and machinery of different kinds. On the 11th of April, 1862, John M. Swisher, of Austin, was sent to Europe with \$300,000 in United States bonds to purchase munitions of war and supplies for the board. On April 29, 1862, John M. Moore was sent to Mexico on a similar mission, and it was agreed to place in his hands for that purpose from 2,000 to 4,000 bales of cotton. The board established a gun factory and a cap factory at Austin. Governor Lubbock, in his message of November 2, 1863, stated that "the foundry at Austin has not been a success in making cannon, but has done great good in repairing threshing and reaping machines and other agricultural implements and mill machinery. This establishment has supplied the wants of the percussion cap factory, which is now in successful operation." On the 12th of April, 1864, a new military board was established by the legislature, by the appointment of the governor and two citizens, Jas. S. Holman and N. B. Pearce, with the same powers as those conferred on the old board.

In November, 1864, a joint committee of the legislature, composed of Spencer Ford, of the senate, and M. W. Baker and Ed. Gibbons, of the house, made a report of

the operations of both the old and new board up to that time, in which it is stated that the old board received from the State \$1,048,975. After recounting numerous contracts made by the board with different persons for guns, rifles, powder and other war materials, they make a summary statement that "the board has received 1,414 cartridge boxes, 1,097 powder flasks, 125 sabers, 14,261 pounds of powder, 797,000 percussion caps, 2 Nicholas guns, 1,695 rifles, 299 lances, 6,762 pounds of powder, 3,164,550 percussion caps." Powder was made at powder mills in the counties of Travis, Burnett, and Comal. Many contracts were made in permitting different persons to transport cotton to Mexico with stipulated benefits to be rendered to the board for the State. The committee estimated that not less than \$2,000,000 were received and disbursed by the old board. They stated that the board had purchased and fitted up the steamer Bayou City for the use of the army in the recapture of Galveston. The Confederate government afterward paid the State \$50,000 for it.

Under the act of the legislature appropriating \$150,000 for a hospital fund, placed under the control of the governor, he gave large amounts to physicians, with directions to visit our Texas troops in Arkansas, Mississippi, Tennessee, Kentucky and Virginia, and when practicable to establish hospitals for the care of Texas troops that were sick or wounded. A hospital was established in Virginia and another in Mississippi. Governor Lubbock manifested an earnest disposition to aid the military operations and provide for the necessities of the people, in which he was ably seconded by the legislature. At the expiration of his two years' term he became aide-de-camp to President Jefferson Davis, and adhered to him until their arrest in Georgia.

## CHAPTER XIII.

FORT BROWN EVACUATED—GENERAL BANKS' EXPEDITION ON THE TEXAS COAST—OCCUPATION OF CORPUS CHRISTI AND OTHER PORTS—DEPARTURE OF BANKS—AUGUST ELECTION, 1863—MILITARY AND OTHER OPERATIONS CONTINUED—FRONTIER PROTECTION—EXPEDITION AGAINST THE FEDERALS ON THE RIO GRANDE—"THE LAST BATTLE OF THE WAR."

ON October 12, 1863, Brigadier-General Slaughter was ordered to take command of the Western sub-district of Texas, and General Bee was ordered to Goliad, but it appears from subsequent events that General Bee did not immediately leave Brownsville, and that Slaughter was not there until the next year.

In the latter part of October, Gen. N. P. Banks again prepared to attack the coast defenses, with a fleet and a division of about 4,500 men, under Gen. N. J. T. Dana. From Fort Brown, on November 3d, General Bee notified General Magruder of the appearance of the Federal fleet off the mouth of the Rio Grande, and on the 5th he reported that he had been forced to evacuate Fort Brown, and was then retiring with a large and valuable train and 100 men; that he would await orders at King's ranch, and that the enemy was in large force on Brazos island, which had been taken possession of on November 2d.

The Federals held Fort Brown and garrisoned posts for some distance up the river. Their object in part was, presumably, to stop the trade that had been carried on from Texas to Mexico across the Rio Grande, and to hold their position permanently on that river for that purpose. Corpus Christi was taken on November 16th, and a strong expedition sent against the defenses of Aransas pass and



Pass Cavallo. Col. W. R. Bradfute, with Maltby's company, Eighth infantry, and Garrett's battalion, State troops, on the steamer Cora, endeavored to rescue the small body garrisoning Mustang island, at Aransas pass, but was unable to do so. The two companies there were compelled to surrender November 17th after a severe fight. Maj. Charles Hill had a spirited combat at Cedar bayou, St. Joseph's island, November 23d, in which he was killed. The Federal brigade, whose advance he had contested, then moved up on Matagorda island and invested Fort Esperanza. The force there, under Colonel Bradfute, successfully sustained an assault and bombardment through the 29th, and in the night spiked the guns, blew up the magazines, and made a safe retreat.

It is learned from a report of General Banks of November 30th, that upon the capture of Fort Esperanza he stated that if he was furnished with another division he would capture Houston and Galveston. And in his report of December 1st, he announced his intention to move up the Matagorda peninsula to the mouth of the Brazos, and after capturing the forts at that place, make it his base for supplies in the movement against Houston and Galveston. But this movement had been anticipated, and General Magruder had collected a large force of Confederate and State troops on the prairie west of the Brazos to resist his invasion of the mainland. That may have somewhat influenced General Banks to suddenly change his plan of reaching the interior of Texas. At any rate, leaving a force in possession of the lower Rio Grande, he sailed with his main strength back to New Orleans. As indicated by subsequent events, he had probably concluded that he could better attain his object by carrying his forces up the Mississippi and along the bayous west of that river, aided by his gunboats and transports, and advance upon Texas from some base selected in Louisiana. That, too, was anticipated and provided against by Generals Taylor and E. Kirby Smith, as will be shown further

on, from which it will appear that wherever an invasion of Texas was planned, Texas soldiers would be found at the point of danger in full force to resist it.

At the August election in Texas, Pendleton Murrah had been elected governor and Fletcher S. Stockdale, lieutenant-governor. The following were elected representatives in the Confederate Congress: B. F. Sexton, A. M. Branch, John R. Baylor, S. H. Morgan, Stephen H. Darden, C. C. Herbert. The Texas legislature met in regular session on November 2d, and Governor Murrah was inaugurated on the 5th. In his message he recommended that the State troops, consisting of men between 18 and 50 years of age be made permanent, and those between 50 and 60 be organized into companies in their respective counties, to be held as a reserve force to meet emergencies. A Texas reserve corps was organized, with Jas. W. Barnes, colonel, and Elwood M. Bean, K. B. Dewalt and C. C. DeWitt, majors. The governor earnestly advised the protection of the frontier more efficiently, which the State under the conscript law was rendered powerless to do with State forces, and recommended that it be intrusted to the Confederate States. This was authorized by an act of the legislature and was soon thereafter accomplished. The governor further recommended the continuance of a liberal support for the soldiers' families (the legislature appropriated large amounts of money for that purpose); the enlargement of the operations of the penitentiary, and the distribution of cloth to the different counties to aid in supplying families; and an appropriation was called for to enable the military board to establish large iron works, which resulted in the establishment of a large iron factory in the eastern portion of Anderson county, which was nearly completed at the time of the surrender. The cotton transportation to Mexico, for sale there in exchange for arms and munitions of war, was continued as far as practicable during his administration.

The frontier regiment having been transferred to the Confederate States, the governor in May, 1864, reported to the legislature that he had appointed Wm. Quale, Geo. Erath, Jas. M. Hunter (succeeded by John Henry Brown), with the rank of major, to command "minute" companies on the frontier, and that they were doing good service. Major Throckmorton was made brigadier-general of the militia force on the frontier. Governor Murrah also made the complaint that "subordinate officers on the Rio Grande, claiming to act under orders of officers higher in rank in the Confederate States service, had interfered with cotton transportation under the authority of the State, and have delayed and prevented its transportation." Such conflicts of authority were occasionally to be expected, where the agents or officers of the two governments were engaged in the same line of business.

On the 22d of December, 1863, Col. John S. Ford was ordered by General Magruder on a secret expedition to the Rio Grande, naming the troops to go with him. The Federal forces at that time at Fort Brown, Ringgold barracks and some other points on the river were estimated to number 3,500. Colonel Ford was selected for this duty in order to exert an influence upon the inhabitants of that region, and enlist their assistance in any way desirable, for which he was peculiarly fitted, from his service and intimate association in that part of the State previous to the war, as well as at the commencement of it. He took position at San Antonio, where Colonel Dickinson, chief of General Magruder's staff, in command of the Western sub-district, rendered what assistance he could to Colonel Ford. The report of this expedition was published by Colonel Ford, himself then alive, in October, 1897. At San Antonio, February 27, 1864, he published a call for troops, and by March 17, 1864, had made arrangements for about 2,000 men to accompany him, which force, however, was not fully collected. While still at San Antonio he received information that parties were sent by the Federals

over on the Nueces river to collect beef-cattle and to capture cotton. He sent some companies to that quarter as fast as they were sworn into the service, to aid Major Nolan, who was in command at Corpus Christi, and who had reported the recapture of some cotton that was being carried to Corpus Christi for shipment. Colonel Ford learned from Major Nolan that a Mexican by the name of Cecilio Balirio had joined the Federals, and was made captain of a small company. He was in a concealed camp and was operating in aid of the Federals in the region of the Nueces, getting the cotton and stock for them. By using some strategy the locality of his camp was discovered. In the attack which followed, nine of Balirio's men were killed and a number of horses and some arms and ammunition were captured, with the loss of three men killed. This broke up that business in that region. Colonel Ford requested General Magruder to have him furnished with 200 bales of cotton, as that was the only way to get funds for the expedition. His route of march was down to the Nueces near to Corpus Christi, reaching Camp San Fernando, where he found Major Nolan and Captain Ware in charge of the troops. There were a great many bales of cotton secreted between the Nueces and Rio Grande, which were hunted up by Colonel Ford's men and turned over to the officers there.

While stationed there he received the following report (March 19th) from Col. Santos Benavides, commanding the line of the Rio Grande, relating to a battle at Laredo:

Sir: I have the honor to inform you that the town of Laredo has been attacked this afternoon by the enemy's forces, consisting of about 200 cavalry, Mexicans and Americans. I think this is the advance guard of the forces en route for this place. I have received positive information from my spies below on the river that about 300 men, infantry, and 2 pieces of artillery will arrive here in about two days. I have resisted the attack this afternoon with about 60 men. The affair lasted until night. The main body of the enemy retired about one-



half mile from the city, but still continued their fire. Their arms are superior to ours. We have barricaded the plaza and some of the main streets. We would be glad to receive reinforcements, but are determined to do our utmost in defense of our homes. The greater part of my command are at La Para, 25 miles north of here. A messenger has been sent to them. They are expected tonight. When they arrive, I propose to move out and attack the enemy. I have dispatched a courier to Colonel Giddings at Eagle Pass, requesting him to reinforce me as soon as possible. If the enemy from below join those now near the town, I shall be compelled to evacuate, unless I am reinforced. Our ammunition, I fear, would not be sufficient to make a long fight. We shall do our best. I would suggest to you to make an effort to place your command in the enemy's rear. In that event he would be in a bad fix. The reason of our not being notified and in readiness is that the Yankees traveled no road. They had good guides and encountered scarcely a man.

Luckily a Mexican had seen the Yankees, and crossing the Rio Grande came in haste to New Laredo, then recrossed the river and informed Colonel Benavides. He had but a short time for preparation, but he repelled the attack, and the Yankees passed down the river. Ford's camp was over 100 miles from Laredo. When the news reached him of the attack, it was known that the United States forces had retreated from Laredo. From Laredo to Brownsville was about 210 miles, and from his camp to Brownsville about 165 miles. Colonel Benavides, in going up to hasten his force to Laredo, left Capt. Cristobal Benavides with his company in the plaza, with positive orders what to do in the event the enemy should defeat him, as follows: "There are 5,000 bales of cotton in the plaza. It belongs to the Confederacy. If the day goes against us, fire it. Be sure to do the work properly, so that not a bale of it shall fall into the hands of the Yankees. Then you will set my new house on fire so that nothing of mine shall pass to the enemy. Let their victory be a barren one." The opportunity has been furnished, by giving this ex-

tended account, of exhibiting the patriotism of this family of Benavides, of Spanish-Mexican origin, during the war between the States. The members of the family are now highly-honored citizens of Texas.

The drouth of 1863 and 1864 dried up the water and grass between the Nueces and Rio Grande, so that the passage of the troops from one to the other was attended with much suffering to the men and teams; but by going over to the Rio Grande they could be supplied with water going down it from Laredo, which place they reached by the 17th of April, 1864, when Colonel Ford reported to General Magruder the disposition of his forces at different points. A part of his business was to so place his companies as to keep the way open for the trade in cotton and army stores with Mexico, at points of the river above Brownsville; and thereby we may account for his protracted delay in getting to the Rio Grande and moving down the river to Brownsville, which he reached without encountering any hostile opposition, only some time before February, 1865.

According to Capt. W. H. D. Carrington, of Ford's command, "the United States forces under Colonel Barrett (brevet brigadier-general), consisting of the Thirty-second Indiana, better known as the Morton rifles, a regiment of negro troops officered by Lieutenant-Colonel Branson, a part of a New York regiment, and a company of the Second (Federal) Texas, under command of Lieutenant or Captain Hancock, numbering about 1,600 or 1,700 men, advanced from Brazos island upon Brownsville. They were held in check by Captain Robinson, commanding Giddings' regiment, on the evening of the 12th of May, 1865."

The following report of the battle that ensued May 13, 1865, the last battle of the war, was furnished by Col. John S. Ford for this history:

During the month of February, 1865, Gen. Lew Wal-

lace, of the United States army, came to Brazos island, which lies a little north of the mouth of the Rio Grande. He was accompanied by Mr. Charles Worthington, of Texas, who addressed a letter inviting General Slaughter and Colonel Ford to meet Gen. Lew Wallace at Point Isabel and discuss some matters pertinent to the then existing war. Both these gentlemen met Gen. Lew Wallace, and they had a long interview. General Wallace observed that it was useless to fight on the Rio Grande; that should the forces meet and kill all on both sides it would not effect the result. To this proposition General Slaughter and Colonel Ford both agreed. After returning to Brownsville the Confederate mounted forces were sent to wherever they could find wood, grass and water. In this manner the Confederate forces were scattered between the Rio Grande and Arroya Colorado. There was no fighting and none expected. On the 12th of May, 1865, Colonel Ford received a communication from Captain Robinson, then commanding Colonel Giddings' regiment, saying he had been attacked by the enemy. Colonel Ford assured him that he would collect troops that night and come to his assistance in the morning. Couriers were sent in every direction to the different camps, directing the officers to proceed at once either to Fort Brown or directly to the assistance of Captain Robinson. These things were done with the approval of General Slaughter.

These events and the subsequent engagement are described as follows in the report to Capt. L. G. Aldrich, assistant adjutant-general, Brownsville:

"On the 12th inst., Capt. W. N. Robinson, commanding Giddings' battalion, 300 strong, reported the enemy advancing. They drove in his pickets, captured their rations, clothing, two sick soldiers, etc., and burnt Palmetto rancho. In the evening Captain Robinson attacked with 60 men and drove them back to the White House. Orders were given to concentrate the command on the Brownsville and Brazos island road, in Captain Robinson's rear. On the morning of the 13th, Captain Robinson reported the enemy reinforced and again advancing. Steps were taken to meet him at once. At 11 o'clock a. m. I made a forward movement with Capt. O. G. Jones' light battery and a portion of the cavalry. Learning that Captain Robinson was hard pressed and forced to give ground, I directed Lieutenant Vineyard, commanding a detachment

of Capt. A. C. Jones' company, to move briskly to Captain Robinson's support. The order was executed with promptitude. After 3 o'clock I arrived on the field. Our troops were a short distance below the ranch of San Martin the enemy some half a mile lower down their line, cutting the road at right angles. I found myself in the presence of 800 infantry. I had 300 cavalry and a light battery.

"Having made a reconnoissance and determined to attack, I directed Captain Jones to place one section of his battery in the road under Lieutenant Smith, another under Lieutenant Gregory on the left, supported by Lieutenant Vineyard's detachment. The other section was held in reserve, the guns directed to move in advance of the line. Captain Robinson was placed in command of the main body of cavalry, Anderson's battalion, under Capt. D. W. Wilson, on the right, and Giddings' battalion on the left. Lieutenant Gregory had orders to move under cover of the hills and chaparral to flank the enemy's right, and if possible to get in an enfilading fire. Captain Gibbons' and Cocke's companies were sent to the extreme left, with orders to turn the enemy's right flank. Skirmishers were advanced. The artillery opened fire before the enemy were aware we had guns in the field. Lieut. M. S. Smith threw several well-directed shells and round shot into the enemy's lines. He is a promising young officer. Lieutenant Gregory's fire annoyed the enemy. Skirmish firing soon became brisk. I waited until I heard Gibbons and Cocke open on my left. I saw the enemy's skirmishers, which were well handled, left without support by the retreating main body, and I ordered an advance. Very soon Captain Robinson charged with impetuosity. As was expected, the Yankee skirmishers were captured, and the enemy were retreating at a run. The guns pursued at a gallop; the shouting men pressed to the front, occupying the hill adjacent to the road, and fired in security from behind the crest.

"The enemy endeavored to hold various points, but were driven from them. The pursuit lasted for nearly 7 miles, when the artillery horses were greatly fatigued; some of them had given out, and the cavalry horses were jaded. I was convinced the enemy would be reinforced at or near the White House, and for these reasons I ordered the officers to withdraw the men. After having withdrawn a short distance Brigadier-General Slaughter, accompa-



nied by Captain Carrington, commanding Cater's battalion, arrived and assumed command. It will not be inappropriate to state that the resumption of the pursuit by his orders proved the correctness of my course. The enemy had been reinforced and were followed within a mile of Brazos island. In this affair the enemy lost 25 or 30 killed and wounded and 113 prisoners. While the fight was going on, one of King & Kennedy's boats came steaming up the river. We could not satisfy ourselves as to the flag she bore. Two round balls were thrown at her from one of our cannons. Luckily she was missed."

We had some volunteer French cannoneers in charge of the pieces in front. Colonel Ford galloped past them a short distance above Palmetto ranch, and gave them a command to hurry up. After having gone 200 or 300 yards, a ranger came up at full speed and informed him the Frenchmen had halted and unlimbered the pieces. Ford moved back at full speed and told the Frenchmen "Allons." They limbered up briskly and went forward with celerity, but the chance of a good shot was missed. The colonel had not previously known of their presence. After General Slaughter joined the retiring Confederates, he sent one of his staff, Capt. W. R. Jones, directing Colonel Ford to resume the pursuit. This Colonel Ford declined to do unless he could first see General Slaughter and explain to him the fatigued condition of the horses of his command. We were then too near Brazos island not to expect reinforcements to be hastened to meet their retiring troops. The firing of the artillery could be heard distinctly on Brazos island. Their troops had moved without a single big gun and these reports could only be made by Confederate cannon and they were approaching the island. These reasons, if reported to General Slaughter, were ignored, and he ordered skirmishers to be thrown out. This line was met by a similar one on the part of the Yankees. It was about dark, but they fired at each other. If anybody on the other side was scratched, it was not mentioned.

After General Slaughter had indulged in skirmish firing for a short time, perhaps ten minutes, he withdrew the Confederates and rode up to where Colonel Ford was standing. We were then near Palmetto ranch. The general said, "You are going to camp here to-night, are you not?" Ford replied, "No, sir." Said the general:

"I have ordered down several wagons loaded with subsistence and forage." "I am not going to stop here in reach of the infantry forces on Brazos island," said the colonel, "and allow them a chance to gobble me up before daylight." "But remember the prisoners." "I do, sir;" Ford retorted, "if we Confederates were their prisoners, we would be compelled to march to a place of safety from attack by Confederates." We moved about 8 miles further up and encamped.

This was the last battle of the war in Texas. Why, under the then existing circumstances, it was brought on and fought, was not explained.

## CHAPTER XIV.

TEXAS TROOPS IN SERVICE IN OTHER SOUTHERN STATES—THE BATTLES OF SHILOH, VICKSBURG AND CHICKAMAUGA—TEXAS TROOPS IN LOUISIANA AND ARKANSAS—ENGAGEMENTS AT CAMP BISLAND, BERWICK'S BAY, FORDOCHE, BAYOU BOURBEAUX, MANSFIELD, PLEASANT HILL AND JENKINS' FERRY.

HAVING completed a statement of the campaigns within the State, it is but an act of justice to the Texas troops who were engaged in other States during the war to give some account of their service additional to the reference which has already been made to Texas troops in Virginia or elsewhere.

At the battle of Shiloh there were present the Ninth Texas infantry, Col. W. A. Stanley; Second Texas infantry, Col. John C. Moore; the Texas Rangers (Eighth), now under Col. John A. Wharton. In service in Tennessee in 1862-63 were the Tenth Texas cavalry, Col. M. F. Locke; Eleventh cavalry, Col. J. C. Burks, Lieut.-Col. J. M. Bounds; Fourteenth cavalry, Col. J. L. Camp, Capt. R. H. Hartley; Fifteenth cavalry, Col. J. A. Andrews—Matt Ector's brigade; Eighteenth Texas cavalry, Col. Thos. Harrison; Capt. J. P. Douglas' battery (formerly the Good battery, organized at Dallas in 1861).

There were on duty in the State of Mississippi in 1862-63, Gregg's brigade; Seventeenth Texas regiment, Major K. M. Van Zandt; and under command of Brig-Gen. L. S. Ross, Sixth Texas cavalry (originally Col. W. B. Stone's, in which L. S. Ross was major), Willis' battalion of Waul's legion, subsequently Third Texas cavalry, Giles Boggress, colonel; Ninth cavalry, D. W. Jones, colonel; Whitfield's legion, J. W. Hawkins, colonel; Sixth

Texas cavalry, Jack Wharton, colonel, and P. F. Ross, lieutenant-colonel.

At Vicksburg the Texas troops were Waul's legion, Col. T. N. Waul commanding; infantry battalion, Maj. E. S. Bolling; infantry battalion, Lieut.-Col. Jas. Wrigley; cavalry battalion, Lieut.-Col. Thos. J. Cleveland; artillery company, Capt. J. G. Wall; Second Texas infantry, Col. Ashbel Smith.

At Chickamauga there were Deshler's brigade—Sixth, Tenth, Fifteenth, Seventeenth, Eighteenth, Twenty-fourth, Twenty-fifth regiments; Douglas' battery; Ector's brigade—Ninth, Tenth, Fourteenth, Thirty-second cavalry regiments; and Seventh infantry, of Gregg's brigade.

In the army of Tennessee under Gen. J. E. Johnston in 1864 were General Granbury's brigade, including the Fifteenth and Sixteenth Texas, Capt. R. Fisher and Capt. B. R. Tyus; Seventh Texas, Captain Collet and Capt. O. B. Forrest; Tenth Texas, Col. R. Q. Mills, Lieut.-Col. R. B. Young, Col. C. R. Earp; Seventeenth and Eighteenth Texas, Capt. D. G. Manion and Capt. F. L. Knight; Twenty-fourth and Twenty-fifth Texas, Col. F. C. Wilkes and Capt. J. F. Mathews. Col. Thos. Harrison's brigade, composed of the Eighth Texas, Col. G. Cook; Eleventh Texas, Col. G. R. Reeves; Douglas' battery, Lieut. J. H. Bingham, Lieut. Ben Hardin; and Gen. L. S. Ross' cavalry brigade. Hynson's battery, Capt. H. C. Hynson, was with General Marmaduke in the Missouri expedition under General Price, after his return to the Trans-Mississippi department.

The services of the Texas troops in Louisiana and Arkansas in the years 1863 and 1864 were as follows:

Early in the spring of 1863 Sibley's brigade was ordered to Louisiana, and with Louisiana troops under General Mouton took part in the battle of Camp Bisland on Bayou Teche in Southern Louisiana, April 13th, Brigadier-General Sibley commanding all the forces in the



battle. Col. James Reily was killed at the head of his regiment, and General Sibley left the command after the battle on account of a disagreement with Gen. Richard Taylor, commanding the district, who was near the locality of the battle. Thereby Col. Tom Green, a senior colonel, became commander of the brigade and returned to the Sabine river with it. Again that brigade proceeded with Louisiana troops in a campaign down the bayous and captured the Federal post at Berwick bay.

In the summer of 1863 Lieut.-Col. A. W. Spaight's battalion and Ed. Waller's battalion had gone from Texas to Louisiana, and a part of J. W. Spaight's brigade, Lieut.-Col. James E. Harrison in command, had come there from the Indian Territory. These, joined to Green's brigade and some Louisiana troops, were engaged in the battle of Fordoche, September 29, 1863, a hard fought and destructive engagement, in which the Confederates were successful. In the meantime Col. Tom Green had been promoted to brigadier-general, in command of a cavalry division, consisting of the old Sibley brigade under Col. A. P. Bagby, and another brigade under Colonel Major, composed of Lane's and Stone's regiments of partisan rangers, the latter under Lieut.-Col. Isham Chisum, and some other troops. To these brigades were attached Ed. Waller's battalion and two companies of artillery. Three Texas infantry regiments—one being Roberts' regiment under Lieut.-Col. Jas. H. Jones, another (Spaight's) under Lieut.-Col. Jas. E. Harrison, and the third (King's)—were, under the command of Col. O. M. Roberts, attached to Green's command. This Confederate force, commanded by Brig.-Gen. Tom Green, had a severe engagement with the rear guard of General Franklin's army, commanded by General Burbridge, on November 3, 1863, and gained a decided victory. The battle occurred on Bayou Bourbeau (Boggy creek), 8 miles south of Opelousas, in southern Louisiana. Maj.-Gen. Dick Taylor, in his

report, called it "a brilliant feat of arms." The report of casualties happens to be accessible, showing that the Texas troops lost in the three infantry regiments, 21 killed, 77 wounded, 41 missing; and the two brigades of cavalry and the artillery lost 1 killed, 26 wounded and 14 missing. The Federals lost 25 killed, 129 wounded and 562 missing.

About the 1st of March, 1864, General Banks came up the Mississippi river with gunboats, transports and an army of 30,000 or 40,000 troops and commenced a march up Red river. From what was afterward known, this course was adopted to reach the heart of Texas. It was reported, as one evidence of it, that the wagon train had in it scythes to reap the wheat. Walker's and Mouton's divisions and Tom Green's two brigades of cavalry impeded the Federal march up the river step by step until the 8th of April, 1864, giving time for a large number of Texas troops, and Missouri and Arkansas troops under General Price, to come in haste to their assistance. On the day named, General Price not having quite reached them, the battle of Mansfield was fought by the Texas and Louisiana troops under the command of Gen. Dick Taylor, the son of "Old Rough-and-Ready" President Taylor.

From General Taylor's report it is learned that the following Texas forces were in the battle of Mansfield and that of Pleasant Hill, which took place on the next day: Maj-Gen. John G. Walker's infantry division, including the three brigades of Gens. T. N. Waul, Wm. R. Scurry and Horace Randal; Gen. Tom Green's cavalry command, consisting of his old brigade under Colonel Bagby and General Major's brigade; Waller's battalion, Buchel's, Hardeman's, Terrell's, Debray's and McNeill's cavalry regiments (Gen. H. P. Bee had command of a part of this cavalry), Brigadier-General Polignac's infantry brigade, and Mosely's, McMahon's and the Valverde batteries.

The battle of Mansfield was glorious in its timely conception, wise plan of attack, splendid execution, and victorious result that sent the confident invader with his whole host back on the road he came; and the battle of Pleasant Hill gave a thundering warning to the Northern invader to seek a safer place by continued retreat, with his hopes of renown by the conquest of Texas blasted.

Brig.-Gen. Thomas Green, beloved and honored by everybody as a man, the chevalier of Texas soldiery, whose training as a soldier was commenced at San Jacinto and was perfected as captain of cavalry in Indian warfare and at Monterey in Mexico, and whose flag floated in the ascendent in every battle in Texas, Louisiana and New Mexico where his sword was drawn, determined to capture the enemy's gunboats on Red river. In the attempt at Blair's Landing, April 12th, his valuable life was given to his country, on the banks of the river, while leading his men to the onset. His name had been a household word in Texas, and his fame is still cherished in memory throughout the State that he honored in his life.

A portion of the Texas and Louisiana forces attended General Banks, encouraging his retreat all the way to the Mississippi river, and it may be presumed that he drew a long breath when, with his great army, he had floated down to New Orleans.

Maj.-Gen. Kirby Smith having arrived at Mansfield, perhaps the day after the battle at Pleasant Hill, took Walker's division of Texas infantry on a march to southern Arkansas to join Price's cavalry in meeting General Steele, who with a Federal force estimated at 18,000 was moving south in the expectation of joining General Banks at Shreveport. This formidable array of Southern troops approaching him, General Steele commenced a retreat, and was found by the Confederate advance protected with such fortifications as could be hastily erected on the west bank of the Sabine river at Jenkins'

Ferry. The whole bottom of the river was overflowed with water, which had to be waded some distance to reach him. As from previous arrangements it was expected that General Fagan with Arkansas cavalry had got in Steele's rear, and would impede or prevent his crossing the river, General Smith determined to give battle in the hope of being able to capture the whole Federal army. Therefore the Southern forces waded into the overflow of the river, and on April 30th attacked the enemy. The fighting under such circumstances was terrible and destructive. It did not move Steele from his position, and General Fagan's cavalry, from some accident, did not appear on the opposite bank, but the hot fight gave General Steele's forces such a warning as induced him to abandon meeting his friends at Shreveport. In that battle we lost two generals and other good officers and men, and many others were wounded, and it was reported that some of the men on being shot down were drowned during the fight. One of the generals killed was Horace Randal. As a Texas youth he was educated at West Point, but left the Federal army and raised a Texas regiment, with which he fought his way up to promotion to brigadier-general. The other was William R. Scurry, the brilliant orator, lawyer, statesman and soldier. He was a major in the Mexican war and distinguished himself as major and lieutenant-colonel in the New Mexico campaign under General Sibley, also in the battle of Galveston, and as brigadier-general at Mansfield and Pleasant Hill. The recurring memory of the patriotic deeds of these heroes will ever be a pleasure, and will constantly verify the adage that Death's arrow finds a shining mark. Space fails to tell of the nobility in patriotism and manhood possessed by many comrades-in-arms, both officers and privates, who fell devoted to the cause for which they fought and died.

These great battles left the extensive territory of west-



ern Louisiana, southern Arkansas, the Indian Territory and all Texas, except a narrow strip on the Rio Grande, free from the heavy tread of the enemy's infantry, the bugle sound of their cavalry, and the rumbling noise of their flying artillery; and so our condition remained substantially up to the close of the war in 1865.

## CHAPTER XV.

TEXAS TROOPS IN ARKANSAS AND LOUISIANA MOVE  
SOUTHWARD—CHANGES AND PROMOTIONS—NO  
MORE BATTLES—CAMP GRICE—NEWS OF THE SUR-  
RENDER OF GEN. R. E. LEE—GENERALS KIRBY  
SMITH, MAGRUDER AND FORNEY ADDRESS THE  
SOLDIERS—THE "BREAK UP" AND TRAVEL HOME—  
SURRENDER—ITS TERMS—TEXAS GENERALS AND  
COLONELS—ALBERT SIDNEY JOHNSTON A TEXAS  
OFFICER.

THE Texas troops that were in the battle of Jen-  
kins' Ferry were ordered southward, and about  
the middle of May, 1864, Col. W. H. King was  
promoted to brigadier-general and assigned to the Second  
brigade, General Waul having resigned on account of  
wounds. Maj. R. P. McCay was promoted to brigadier-  
general commanding the First brigade, and Col. Richard  
Waterhouse was promoted and put in command of the  
Third brigade, Walker's division.

About the middle of June, 1864, Maj.-Gen. John G.  
Walker was relieved from his division and assigned to  
the command of the district of Southwest Louisiana in  
place of Gen. Richard Taylor, who was transferred east  
of the Mississippi river. Brigadier-General King for a  
time was in command of Walker's division, until Maj.-  
Gen. John H. Forney arrived and took charge. General  
King was then assigned to the brigade of General Polig-  
nac, who left the country and returned to France. In  
the meantime General Magruder had been assigned to  
duty in southern Arkansas, with the view of keeping  
the Federals pressed back to the Arkansas river, which  
was held by General Steele. About the 18th of January,  
1865, Lieutenant-General Buckner arrived to take com-

mand of the district of Louisiana, and issued an encouraging address to the troops.

The Texas troops generally in Louisiana commenced a movement to Texas, and by March 15th a large number of them had reached Camp Grice, 2½ miles east of Hempstead. Not long afterward a rumor reached them of the surrender of Generals Lee, Johnston and Taylor. Some doubted, but soon the news came as upon the wings of the wind, confirming it as a certainty. Their spirits sank in sadness and regret. Generals Kirby Smith, Magruder and Forney were there, and made addresses to the assembled soldiers, appealing to them to stand to their colors as good soldiers, and even holding out as encouragement the promise of aid from the East, so that a firm stand by them might be the means of gaining sufficient strength to retrieve misfortune and still maintain the cause for which they had so nobly fought. They were advised in any event to hold to their organizations, and on going home to carry with them their honorable discharges. These in substance were the views presented to them.

The officers and soldiers of the line listened respectfully to the addresses of their generals; but the Texas soldiers were not mere men-machines, to be manipulated by high officers upon a great emergency. They were more than Texas soldiers; they were Texas citizens, and did not submerge their citizenship entirely in becoming soldiers. They had protected Texas from the invasion of the enemy, and when they went to Arkansas, Louisiana and other States in the Confederate service, they were still protecting Texas. There were no lonely chimneys standing in Texas amidst the ashes of houses burned in the vandal-like marches of the enemy, as they had seen in Louisiana. There were no farms, homes and towns made desolate by the ravages of a cruel warfare. It was easy for even soldiers of the line to understand that if General Grant should thrust his armed host upon Texas, its broad

domain would be laid in ruins, and they would be powerless to prevent it even by the sacrifice of their lives in defense of their homes and country.

Already the private intelligence had reached their ears that Gen. Kirby Smith thought it useless to make another fight. That was enough to determine them in the exercise of their own judgment. They commenced leaving their camps, not furtively in the night, but openly in the daytime. It was not with a disaffected spirit in mutiny against their superior officers; but it was as in the case of the wrecked vessel slowly sinking; when the captain's power of control had ceased by common consent, the manning of the boat any longer was seen to be hopeless, and the personal safety of each one on board was the common concern, to be secured if practicable each in his own way. In the meantime, on May 1st, General Sprague, a Federal officer, arrived at the mouth of Red river with dispatches from General Canby, demanding the surrender of the Trans-Mississippi department by Gen. Kirby Smith. Thereupon steps were taken for negotiations looking to that result. The Confederate troops continued to leave their camps, so that by the 19th of May a majority of them had gone or were preparing to leave, when the balance of them being discharged started for their homes, taking with them one wagon and team to the company, with their baggage, provisions, and arms.

The scenes at their parting are described by an intelligent young soldier, J. P. Blessington, of Walker's division, who kept a daily journal and published it after the war, as follows: "The parting among the troops was most affecting. Many put their arms around each other's necks and sobbed like children; others gave the strong grasp of the hand and silently went away, with a huskily-spoken 'Good-bye' or deep oath. Such were some of the farewell scenes. Together in battle or camp, in sunshine and in storm, in suffering and pleasure, in sorrow and in



joy, on the weary and toiling march, no wonder that their hearts were linked together in bands of steel with ties unspeakable, inexpressible. No wonder the parting wrung their souls with torturing agony."

The soldiers in other localities disbanded in the same manner. Then the roads all over the State were filled with soldiers marching to their homes, and the doors of every house in their passing were opened to supply their wants. This vast confused movement passing in review brought to the mind of the beholder feelings of sorrow for the lost cause, and produced a sad despondency regarding the present and a dire dread of the future. Still, not an instance of violence or of wrong done by a returning soldier was heard of in all this homeward movement.

Governor Murrah, learning that the camps were broken up, dispatched Col. Ashbel Smith and W. P. Ballinger to New Orleans to inform General Canby that the Texas troops were discharged and that no further resistance was intended. The terms of surrender signed by S. B. Buckner, lieutenant-general, and chief of staff for Gen. Kirby Smith, and by P. J. Osterhaus, major-general, and chief of staff for Major-General Canby, on the 26th of May, 1865, provided for acts of war on the part of the troops to cease, the officers and men to be paroled, and "allowed to return to their homes with the assurance that they will not be disturbed, so long as they obey the conditions of their parole and the laws in force where they reside." Other stipulations about the property and arms need not be recounted, for the arms, except cannon, were carried off by the men. As all who had been in the Confederate army had not been present to be paroled, a short time afterward places were appointed at which this could be done, superintended by Federal officers. Then the roads were again filled with travel to and from those places for several weeks, while the same peaceful good order prevailed throughout the State.

For more than three months there was an interregnum

throughout the land. The State officers claimed no authority and exercised none, and there were no Federal officers to enforce the observance of the law. Still peace and good order prevailed, exhibiting the moral standard of the people of Texas in a more conspicuous light than could perhaps be done in any other way. All were as one family in sore misfortune. The war was over, as to the fighting of the Confederates. They had made a grand struggle in defense, but were overpowered by force of numbers against them, entailing upon them no loss of honor or manhood. Though they bowed with submission to the sad fate of defeat, their heads were still erect with the self-esteem inspired by the consciousness of duty well done, and with a conviction of the justice and of the right for which they fought still unshaken.

There is no information accessible that affords an accurate statement of the number of soldiers that were furnished by Texas. Governor Lubbock, in his last message, November, 1863, stated the number as then estimated to be 90,000. There may have been more before the close of the war. Nor can the number of deaths by sickness and in battle be given.

It may not be out of place here to show how greatly our soldiers suffered by changes of localities in their service, a valuable lesson learned in climatology. Those soldiers who served in Texas and in the Indian Territory lost few of their numbers from deaths or from discharges on account of sickness. Those who were in service in the far moister climate of Arkansas, east and northeast of Little Rock, in less than a year lost by death and by discharges from sickness more than one-tenth of the number, upon an average, in all of the many commands that went there from Texas. Other instances might be referred to, but this will suffice to illustrate the importance of every particular section in an extensive country, with conditions of climate varying from each other, furnishing if practicable a force sufficient for its own protection.

In taking a survey of the operations of the Texas troops in the numerous battles in which they were engaged in Texas, Louisiana, Mississippi, Arkansas, Missouri, Kentucky, Tennessee and Virginia, the large number of promotions for meritorious conduct in them will attract attention as a remarkable result. Maj. John Henry Brown, who was an officer in the army from nearly the first to the last, in his valuable history of Texas reported that of Texans in the army, "one became a general, Albert Sidney Johnston, the highest rank; one lieutenant-general, John B. Hood; three major-generals, Samuel B. Maxey, John A. Wharton and Thomas Green; 32 brigadier-generals, 97 colonels, and 15 commanders of battalions." Nearly all of those officers attained the ranks mentioned from lower ranks, by their valor in battles. It would occupy too much space to mention each one of them and describe the conduct which caused his promotion, if such a thing were practicable, which it is not now. It may not be improper to speak of five of them who were educated at West Point, as follows:

Gen. Albert Sidney Johnston was a native of Kentucky, and after graduating at West Point in 1826 entered the army. He resigned his position and came to Texas in 1836, and in 1837 was placed at the head of the Texas army, and afterward was adjutant-general under President Lamar. His headright of land, located in eastern Texas, is evidence of his permanent citizenship in Texas. In 1846 he became a colonel in the Mexican war, and afterward commanded a Federal regiment in service in California, from which he resigned, went overland through Texas to Richmond, and was appointed general and assigned to command in Kentucky. He was wounded, and died in April, 1862. This meager statement of the splendid career of this great general is sufficient to bring to view the question why it is claimed that he was a Texas officer in the Confederate army. While in command of his regiment in different States, he was in them as a

mere sojourner, liable to be assigned any day to any other State. His citizenship remained in Texas, and he, it was said, claimed to be a Texan in entering the Confederate service. Under the Constitution of the United States, before the adoption of the Fourteenth amendment in 1868, a person was a citizen of the United States only relatively, by being a citizen of a State, to which his allegiance was due. Hence it was that Robert E. Lee, Sidney Johnston and a number of other officers of the United States army, when the war broke out, resigned and went to the States that claimed their allegiance and took service in the Confederate army. One of the leading objects of the Congress after the war, which caused the Southern senators and representatives to be excluded from their seats in it, was to transfer the allegiance of every person to the United States, which was done by the Fourteenth amendment, thereby attempting to change the Federal government (instituted originally by the constitution) to a National government, with the absolute right to construe and exercise its own powers, with no capacity left the States to protect their previously conceded reserved rights.

Gen. John B. Hood, as it was reported, claimed Texas as his State, perhaps from his having served on our frontier as an officer. Gen. Horace Randal was born in Texas, and so was Colonel McNeill, both of whom, and General Maxey, were educated at West Point. A peculiar case was that of Adam R. Johnson. He was a citizen of Texas and a surveyor. He went back to his native State, Kentucky, became a scout for General Morgan, got a separate command, operated with it in the Federal lines, mostly in Kentucky, and rose to the rank of brigadier-general. He was wounded, causing the loss of his eyesight. He came back to Texas a blind man. He has raised a family and is the founder of Marble Falls, destined to be a great manufacturing city.



## CHAPTER XVI.

THE TEXAS CITIZEN SOLDIER—HIS EDUCATION AS A SOLDIER—INDIAN FIGHTS—EARLY COMBATS IN TEXAS AND MEXICO—THE TEXAS YELL—ITS EFFECT—A STATUE OF A TEXAS SOLDIER—THE SIGNIFICANCE OF THE WAR BETWEEN THE STATES—THE TWO RECONSTRUCTIONS—THE PRESENT NATIONAL GOVERNMENT—HOW ANOTHER WAR MAY BE AVERTED.

MUCH has been said of the Texas officers, and the names and rank of many have been given. They are representatives of the soldiers commanded by them, who are too numerous to be separately named in the history of a great war. What, then, is to be said generally of the Texas soldiers? It is not proper to state that they have been more distinguished in battles than their brother soldiers of other States. It is enough to assert that they have stood equal to the most distinguished in every battle where they fired a gun or made a charge. A common spirit of chivalric valor inspired them as soldiers of Texas. That spirit was formed and fastened by example and practice for more than half a century. Texas was settled over sixty years ago by a bold, fearless American people, who fought against savage foes year by year from the eastern to the western edge of the State—the last combat being in 1881. They learned in those fights the merits of strategy in preparation, intrepidity in attack, and desperation in charge.

Theirs was an education in war derived from the necessity of defeating the superior numbers of a wily enemy. This was exhibited in 1832 at Nacogdoches, which place was defended by 300 Mexican cavalry and was captured by the assembled citizens of Eastern Texas, supporting

Santa Ana, who had declared in favor of the Mexican constitution of 1824. It was exhibited in the fall of 1835, when the Texas citizens stormed and took San Antonio, then defended by General Cos, who had proclaimed that Texas should be content with any government that the Mexicans established. It was exhibited at the Alamo, when about 180 Texans, surrounded by Santa Ana's army, fought until there was only a woman and her child (Mrs. Dickinson) left alive in the fort to tell how bravely they had all fought to the death. It was exhibited at San Jacinto, where Gen. Sam Houston's small force, not half of that of the fortified enemy under Santa Ana, charged with the war cry, "Remember the Alamo!" broke the enemy's line and put them to rout in twenty minutes. Although the general was wounded in the charge, the line rushed on, every man knowing what to do without further orders. It was exhibited at Monterey in the Mexican war, where the Texas soldiers, aided by volunteers from other States, entered the town, fought through the houses, from the housetops, through the streets, and drove the Mexicans into the grand plaza, when the Texans had to be called off to allow General Taylor to shell the huddled forces of the enemy, which soon brought out the white flag of surrender.

All these events gave martial education; education to those at home who heard and read and were inspired; education that taught the Texas soldier how to fight in the battles of the great war between the States. How well they practiced their lesson was reported by every officer who commanded them. Whoever led them in two or three hard battles secured promotion, so that the advancement of their commanders was a public compliment to the Texas soldiers' prowess in arms.

The Texas soldiers in line of battle, with their attention intensely alive to what they were doing and how they should act, were cool enough and intelligent enough to pass the word along the whole line like an electric current;

and when the command was given, "Forward, charge!" it, too, would be rapidly passed, and then simultaneously the Texas "rebel yell" burst out from the whole line, as all together they dashed at double quick toward the enemy. The effect of that yell was marvelous. It was in effect the earnest voice of each man to every other in the line for united action as one man. Such yells exploded on the air in one combined sound have been heard distinctly three miles off across a prairie, above the din of musketry and artillery.

In the city of Austin, sixty yards in front of the magnificent granite capitol, there has been erected a monumental column thirty feet high, on which stands erect the stalwart figure of a man in bronze, draped in homemade garb, holding up in his hands a long rifle gun, representing the Texas citizen soldier. There he will stand to tell in expressive pantomime throughout the ages to come the high appreciation by the Texas people of the Texas citizen soldier, as the honored defender of their homes and their country.

All great events in the transactions of mankind have a significance exhibited in the permanent results attained by them, which become a part of their history. What, then, was the significance of this great struggle, of more than a million men marshaled under arms to kill each other, in one of the most stupendous wars of modern times, which like an earthquake shook the American continent from the Atlantic ocean to the great plains of the West, and from the Gulf of Mexico to the Northern lakes? What was the significance of the facts that the Northern people, under the direction of their government, waged a terrible war against the people of the South during four years and overpowered them to submission; for four years longer spread their armed soldiers over all parts of the Southern States, abolishing their State governments and placing the people under the administration of five military districts; and before admitting the Southern States into

the Union again, had the negroes made citizens, disfranchised every man that had previously held office under the Confederate States or had in any way participated in the Confederate war, and required the Southern States to consent to the new amendments of the constitution which changed the Federal government fundamentally, as a condition precedent to their full admission to the Union?

What was, on the other hand, the significance of the actions of the people of the Southern States, in seceding from the Union, establishing a Confederate government and fighting the Northern armies as long as they were able? To answer these questions it is only necessary to state the objects attained.

The negroes set free and given full equality as citizens, in obedience to the demand of one wing of the party that elected President Lincoln, the Abolitionists; the freedom of the negroes, preventing the extension of slavery, as demanded by another wing, the Free Soilers; and the conversion of the central government from a federal to a national government, so shaped as to contribute to the pecuniary interests and build up the wealth of the commercial and manufacturing pursuits of the Northern people, as demanded by the Federalists—such, in short, is the government of this country whenever the distinctively sectional and federalistic principle is enforced.

The patriotic purpose of the Southern people in secession was to prevent such a government from being established over them to the forcible destruction of their domestic institutions, in which their social affairs had been long involved, and the depression of their agricultural interest and the breaking down of constitutional safeguards—all of which was plainly foreshadowed to their view by the expressed sentiments of the leading statesmen of the North who had gained control of the government. That national government, with its centralizing power and its vast expenditure of much more than a



million of money a day, so shaped as to contribute to Northern sectional interest, is exactly the kind of government from whose power the Southern States sought first to save the Union, and failing there, then appealed to secession to save themselves. The Southern people protested against sectional oppression, and as soon as they could legally declare their independence, they established Democratic constitutional government in protest against all Federal aggression. Their protest was answered by a terrible invasion which they resisted with all their might, and in defeat by greater force they still protest by ballot against all attempts to destroy constitutional government.

For sixty years before the war the Federal government was administered so as not to be the adversary of the agricultural interests of the Southern people, and, as claimed by the Northern people, prejudicial to their commercial and manufacturing interests, which made them dissatisfied and caused a political contention. That difference culminated in the war between the sections, North and South. Since the war for thirty years the national government has been administered in a way to result in promoting the commercial, manufacturing and general moneyed interests of the Northern people, and, as claimed by the Southern people, prejudicial to their agricultural interest, which makes them dissatisfied and causes a continued political contention. The annual expenses of the government before the war never exceeded \$60,000,000; since the war they have amounted to over \$400,000,000, which is a fair test in determining the character of the government at the two periods.

This seesawing in the policy of the government, with the almighty dollar used as the fulcrum by which to raise up one section and depress the other, with sectional party leverage, is not complimentary to American statesmanship. True patriotism in a republic demands that the productive wealth of every kind, of the whole country,

produced by honest and useful efforts, should be equitably distributed and enjoyed by all producers, irrespective of favoritism to persons, irrespective of pursuits in life, and irrespective of sections of country. That is the problem for the present and for the future, worthy of the patriotic ambition of the eminent statesmen of the country. This genuine Union once accomplished, there would be no more wars of sections; there would be no political slavery to induce another proclamation for freedom, and the example set by the United States would cause it to be heralded over the world that a democratic republic was the best government for mankind.

## APPENDIX.

### A SUPPLEMENTAL ACCOUNT OF THE SERVICE OF TEXAS COMMANDS OUTSIDE THAT STATE—COM- PILED FROM THE OFFICIAL RECORDS.

---

#### SIBLEY'S CAMPAIGN IN NEW MEXICO.

IN the battle of Valverde, fought near the ford on the Rio Grande above Fort Craig, the Federals were commanded by Gen. E. R. S. Canby, and Col. Thomas Green was in immediate command of the Confederate forces. The action was brought on in the morning of the 21st of February, 1862, by an attack upon a reconnoitering party under Major Pyron, who was reinforced by a battalion under Scurry and Teel's battery. At noon, Green, who was threatening the fort on the south side of the mesa, was ordered up to the scene of action, and he brought into the fight several companies of his regiment, and the lancers of Captains Lang and McCown under Major Lockridge, sending three companies under McNeill to drive the enemy from the mesa. Green then took command of the line of battle by order of General Sibley. Describing the action he says:

About 3 p. m. a most galling fire was opened upon Lieutenant-Colonel Scurry's command, on our right, by 300 or 400 of the enemy's riflemen. Captain Lang, of the Fifth regiment, with about 40 of his lancers, made at this time one of the most gallant and furious charges on these light troops of the enemy ever witnessed. His little troop was decimated, and the gallant captain and Lieutenant Bass severely wounded, the latter in seven places. The enemy was repulsed, and our right was for some time unmolested. Large bodies of the enemy's

infantry having crossed the river about 3:30 p. m., bringing over with them six pieces of splendid artillery, took position in front of us, on the bank of the river, at a distance of 600 yards. In addition to this body of troops two 24-pounder howitzers were placed on our left flank by the enemy. These were supported by a regiment of infantry and a regiment of cavalry. The heaviest fire of the whole day was opened about this time on our left, which was under the command of the gallant Lockridge. Our brave men on that part of the line maintained the unequal fight with desperate courage, though overwhelmingly outnumbered. Lieutenant-Colonel Sutton, now coming up with part of his battalion, took position on our left.

The enemy now being on our side of the river opened upon us a tremendous fire of round shot, grape and shell. Their force in numbers was vastly superior to ours; but, having the most unbounded confidence in the courage of our troops, I ordered a charge on their battery and infantry of regulars in front, and at the same time Major Ragnet of the Fourth, with four companies of the same, and Captain Ragsdale's company, of the Fifth, were directed by me to charge as cavalry upon the infantry and Mexican cavalry and the two 24-pounder howitzers on our left flank.

Our dismounted troops in front were composed of parts of the Fourth and Fifth regiments, Texas mounted volunteers, and parts of Lieutenant-Colonel Sutton's and most of Pyron's battalions, and Teel's, Riley's and Woods' batteries of artillery, numbering about 750 on the ground. Major Ragnet's cavalry numbered about 250, making about 1,000 men in the charge. At the command to charge, our men leaped over the sandbank, which had served as a good covering to them, and dashed over the open plain, thinly interspersed with cottonwood trees, upon the battery and infantry of the enemy in front, composed of United States regulars and Denver City volunteers, and in a most desperate charge and hand-to-hand conflict completely overwhelmed them, killing most of their gunners around their cannon and driving the infantry into the river. Never were double-barreled shotguns and rifles used to better effect. A large number of the enemy were killed in the river with shotguns and six-shooters in their flight.



While we were occupied with the enemy in front, Major Ragnet made a gallant and most timely charge upon the infantry and cavalry of the enemy on our left flank. This charge was made against ten times the number of Ragnet's force, and although we suffered severely and were compelled to fall back, he effected the object of his mission and occupied the attention of our powerful enemy on our left, while our dismounted men were advancing upon those in front and running them into the river. So soon as the enemy had fled in disorder from our terrible fire in front, we turned upon his infantry and cavalry and 24-pounders on our left flank, just engaged by Major Ragnet. We charged them as we had those in front, but they were not made of as good stuff as the regulars, and a few fires upon them with their own artillery and Teel's guns, a few volleys of small arms, and the old Texas war shout completely dispersed them. They fled from the field, both cavalry and infantry, in the utmost disorder, many of them dropping their guns to lighten their heels, and stopping only under the walls of the fort. Our victory was complete. The enemy must have been 3,000 strong, while our force actually engaged did not exceed 600. Six splendid pieces of artillery and their entire equipage fell into our hands; also many fine small arms.

This splendid victory was not achieved without severe loss to us. Major Lockridge, of the Fifth, fell at the mouth of the enemy's guns, gallantly leading our brave troops to the assault. Lieutenant-Colonel Sutton, of the Seventh, fell mortally wounded at the head of his battalion while assaulting the enemy's battery. Several of our officers were desperately wounded; some of them no doubt mortally. Among them are the gallant Captain Lang, of the lancers, and Lieutenant Bass, both of Company B, and Lieut. D. A. Hubbard of Company A, Fifth regiment. Captain Heuvel, of the Fourth, fell in the gallant cavalry charge of Major Ragnet. He was one of the most distinguished of the heroes of the day. Like the gallant Lang, of the Fifth, he could not appreciate odds in a battle.

I cannot say enough in praise of the gallantry of our surviving officers and men. It would be invidious to mention names. Were I to do so the rolls of captains, lieutenants and men would have to be here inserted. I will

only mention the principal field and staff in the engagement. The cheering voice of Lieutenant-Colonel Scurry was heard where the bullets fell thickest on the field. Lieutenant-Colonel McNeill and the gallant Major Pyron who has been before mentioned, displayed the most undaunted courage. Major Ragnet, of the Fourth, though wounded, remained at his post and retired not until the field was won. These were the field officers present, as I have just stated. The captains, lieutenants and men in the action displayed so much gallantry that it would be invidious to make distinctions. They fought with equal valor and are entitled to equal credit with the field and staff here mentioned.

I will not close this report without a just meed of praise to the general staff, who served me as aides-de-camp during the day. Col. W. L. Robards was in the charge of the dashing Lang, and wounded in several places. Capt. Tom P. Ochiltree, aide-de-camp to General Sibley, was exceedingly useful to me on the field and active during the whole engagement. He assisted me in the most critical moment to cheer our men to the assault. He deserves the highest praise for his undaunted chivalry and coolness, and I recommend him to the general for promotion. Captain Dwyer was also very useful, gallant and active during the whole action. I cannot close without the mention of Captain Frazier, of the Arizona volunteers. To him, more than all others, we are indebted for the successful turning of Fort Craig. He led us over the high ground, around the mesa to the east of the fort, where we at all times had the advantage of the enemy in case he had attacked us in the act of turning the fort.

I will only personalize further by the mention of my own regimental staff. Sergt.-Maj. C. B. Sheppard shouldered his gun and fought gallantly in the ranks of Captain McPhaill's company in the charge. Lieut. Joseph D. Sayers, adjutant of the Fifth, during the whole day reminded me of a hero of the days of chivalry. He is a gallant, daring and dashing soldier, and is as cool in a storm of grape, shell, canister and musketry as a veteran. I recommend him, through the general, to the President for promotion.

Our killed and wounded are as follows: Second regiment Texas mounted volunteers, Major Pyron's com-

mand, 4 killed, 17 wounded; Fourth regiment Texas mounted volunteers, Lieutenant-Colonel Scurry's command, 8 killed, 36 wounded; Fifth Texas mounted volunteers, Colonel Green's regiment, 20 killed, 67 wounded; Seventh regiment Texas mounted volunteers, Lieutenant-Colonel Sutton's command, 2 killed, 26 wounded; Teel's battery, 2 killed, 4 wounded; total, 36 killed, 150 wounded. Since which time Lieutenant-Colonel Sutton, of the Seventh, two privates of the Fifth, and two of Teel's battery, have died from wounds received in battle.

Sibley's command then marched on, seizing the stores at Albuquerque and Cubero. Major Pyron was sent to Santa Fé; Colonel Scurry, with the Fourth and a battalion of Colonel Steele's regiment under Maj. Powhatan Jordan, was pushed forward in the direction of Gallisteo, while Colonel Green, with his regiment, was held to check any movement from Fort Craig. The enemy at Fort Union now threatened Santa Fé, and Major Pyron, reinforced by four companies of the Fifth, under Major Shropshire, advanced to meet him. On March 26th, at Apache cañon, a severe skirmish ensued, in which acts of daring were performed. The company of "Brigandes" (independent volunteers), under Capt. John Phillips, is said to have done good service. One of their number, Thomas Cator, was killed and two wounded. Colonel Scurry reached the scene of action at daylight next morning, and the next day (28th) fought the battle of Glorieta, driving the enemy from the field with great loss.

Colonel Scurry reported that he had in this combat portions of the companies of Captains Hampton, Lesueur, Foard, Crosson, Giesecke, Alexander, Buckholtz, Odell and Scarborough (Lieutenant Holland commanding), of the Fourth regiment; the companies of Captains Hoffman, Gardner, Wiggins, and Adair of the Seventh regiment; the companies of Captains Shannon, Ragsdale, and Lieutenants Oakes and Scott, of the Fifth,

three pieces of artillery under Lieutenant Bradford, and Phillips' volunteers, in all about 600 efficient men. He found the enemy in Glorieta cañon and formed line of battle there. Major Pyron was given charge of the right, Major Ragnet of the center, and Colonel Scurry led the right in a charge which was at once successful, the enemy taking to cover. Lieutenant Bradford, of the artillery, was wounded, and his guns carried back, but two were brought forward again by Private W. D. Kirk and Sergeant Patrick. Another advance was now ordered, but before it was under way the gallant Major Shropshire was killed. Then, said Colonel Scurry in his report:

I took command on the right and immediately attacked the enemy who were at the ranch. Majors Ragnet and Pyron opened a galling fire upon their left from the rock on the mountain side, and the center charging down the road, the foe were driven from the ranch to the ledge of rocks before alluded to, where they made their final and most desperate stand. At this point three batteries of eight guns opened a furious fire of grape, canister and shell upon our advancing troops. Our brave soldiers, heedless of the storm, pressed on, determined if possible to take their battery. A heavy body of infantry, twice our number, interposed to save their guns. Here the conflict was terrible. Our officers and men, alike inspired with the unalterable determination to overcome every obstacle to the attainment of their object, dashed among them. The right and center had united on the left. The intrepid Ragnet and the cool, calm, courageous Pyron had pushed forward among the rocks until the muzzles of the guns of the opposing forces passed each other. Inch by inch was the ground disputed until the artillery of the enemy had time to escape with a number of their wagons. The infantry also broke ranks and fled from the field. So precipitate was their flight that they cut loose their teams and set fire to two of the wagons. The pursuit was kept up until forced to halt from the extreme exhaustion of the men, who had been engaged for six hours in the hardest contested fight it had ever been my lot to witness. The enemy is now known to have numbered 1,400 men, Pike's



Peak miners and regulars, the flower of the United States army.

During the action a portion of the enemy succeeded in reaching our rear, surprising the wagon guard and burning our wagons, taking at the same time some sixteen prisoners. About this time a party of prisoners whom I had sent to the rear reached there and informed them how the fight was going on in front, whereupon they beat a hasty retreat; not, however, until the perpetration of two acts which the most barbarous savage of the plains would blush to own. One was the shooting and dangerously wounding of the Rev. L. H. Jones, chaplain of the Fourth regiment, with a white flag in his hand; the other an order that the prisoners they had taken be shot in case they were attacked on their retreat. These instances go to prove that they have lost all sense of humanity in the insane hatred they bear to the citizens of the Confederacy, who have the manliness to arm in the defense of their country's independence.

We remained upon the battlefield during the day of the 29th to bury our dead and provide for the comfort of the wounded, and then marched to Santa Fé to procure supplies and transportation to replace those destroyed by the enemy. Our loss was 36 killed and 60 wounded. Of the killed 24 were of the Fourth regiment, 1 of the Fifth regiment, 8 of the Seventh regiment, and 1 of the artillery. That of the enemy greatly exceeded this number, 44 of their dead being counted where the battle first opened. Their killed must have considerably exceeded 100.

The country has to mourn the loss of four as brave and chivalrous officers as ever graced the ranks of any army. The gallant Major Shropshire fell early, pressing upon the foe and cheering his men on. The brave and chivalrous Major Ragnet fell mortally wounded while engaged in the last and most desperate conflict of the day. He survived long enough to know and rejoice at our victory, and then died with loving messages upon his expiring lips. The brave, gallant Captain Buckholtz and Lieutenant Mills conducted themselves with distinguished gallantry throughout the fight and fell near its close. Of the living it is only necessary to say all behaved with distinguished courage and daring. . . . Major Pyron was distinguished by the calm intrepidity of his bearing. It

is due to Adj. Ellsberry R. Lane to bear testimony to the courage and activity he displayed in the discharge of his official duties, and to acknowledge my obligations for the manner in which he carried out my orders.

It appears from the report of General Sibley that after occupying Santa Fé for nearly a month from the time of his first advance upon it, the forage and supplies there became exhausted, and he determined to remove his forces to Manzano, intermediate between Fort Union, Albuquerque and Fort Craig. But Albuquerque, his base of supplies, being threatened, he was forced to go there, and then found it necessary to evacuate the territory. Green's regiment, detached to Peralta, opposite Los Lunas, was attacked with artillery, but was reinforced by the remainder of the brigade, and no loss was suffered. The retreat was thence made over the mountains and through the cañons to the Texas border, and the command was stationed along a line from Dona Ana to Fort Bliss.

#### ARMIES OF KENTUCKY, OF THE WEST, OF THE MISSISSIPPI, AND OF TENNESSEE.

##### WOODSONVILLE—FORT DONELSON.

The Eighth Texas cavalry, or Texas Rangers, under Col. B. F. Terry, was sent into Kentucky in September, 1861, and was soon followed by the Seventh infantry under Col. John Gregg. The first considerable engagement of the Eighth cavalry was at Woodsonville, or Rowlett's station, December 17th. Gen. T. C. Hindman, in command of the Confederate forces engaged, in advancing on Woodsonville put out the Rangers on the neighboring heights and Major Phifer's cavalry to watch the crossings of Green river. Later Colonel Terry, being temporarily left in command by General Hindman, was assailed by the enemy in force, and "at the head of 75 Rangers he charged about 300, routed and drove them back, but fell mortally wounded. A body of

the enemy of about the same size attacked the Rangers under Captain Terrill, upon the right of the turnpike, and were repulsed with heavy loss." Besides Colonel Terry, three of his men were killed, Lieutenant Morris and three men dangerously wounded, and Captain Walker and three men slightly wounded. In General Hardee's special orders it was said of the fallen colonel: "His regiment deplores the loss of a brave and beloved commander; the army one of its ablest officers." The regiment was subsequently under command of Lieutenant-Colonel Harrison, during the illness of Colonel Lubbock. On the 30th Gen. A. S. Johnston reported that the regiment had been reduced to half its original number, 1,000, by deaths and sickness.

Gregg's Seventh infantry formed part of Simonton's brigade at the battle of Fort Donelson, and were the right of a gallant line which drove the enemy from a hill, under a terrific fire. Near the top of the hill, where a battery was captured, Lieut.-Col. J. M. Clough and Lieut. J. W. Nowlin fell near together. At the same locality fell Capt. William B. Hill. Two days before, Lieut. E. B. Rosson had been killed during the bombardment. The total loss of the Seventh was 20 killed and 34 disabled out of 350 engaged. At the capitulation the regiment was paroled.

#### SHILOH.

Col. John C. Moore, Second Texas infantry, in reporting the action of his regiment at Shiloh, stated that his command left Houston, Tex., March 12th, reached Corinth April 1st, after a long and exhausting march, and after one day in camp was ordered forward to the battlefield. Early on April 6th, supporting Hardee's division, the regiment lost 1 man killed and 2 or 3 wounded. About 8:30 they moved to the right and took position in the front line to the left of Chalmers' brigade, and was soon under fire, losing 2 or 3 men wounded

and Captain Brooks mortally wounded. Soon afterward they went to the front in a series of gallant charges, driving the enemy before them. In one of these forward movements, the space between Col. Joseph Wheeler's Alabama regiment and Chalmers admitting of but three companies, Captains Smith, McGinniss and Christian were ordered to the charge, supported by the rest of the command. They passed over ground covered with dead and wounded. The Texans participated through the afternoon in the flank movement which compelled the surrender of General Prentiss, and they closed a brilliant day's work with a charge upon the Federal camp, in the face of artillery and musketry. Here Capt. Ashbel Smith, who had distinguished himself, was wounded severely. Gen. John K. Jackson, brigade commander, reported that when Prentiss put up the white flag, "an officer of the Texas regiment was sent to receive the surrender, which he did, along with several of the swords of officers." On the second day Lieut.-Col. W. P. Rogers was in charge of the regiment and Colonel Moore commanded a provisional brigade, including Wheeler's regiment.

The Texas Rangers, under Colonel Wharton, fought in this battle, dismounted and mounted, supported a battery on the first day, and served in the rear guard on the retreat. Colonel Wharton was wounded, but remained on duty until Tuesday morning when he turned over the command to Maj. Thomas Harrison, who made a brilliant fight in a reconnoissance that day. The regiment lost 7 killed, including Lieutenant Lowe, and 56 wounded, including Clinton Terry, volunteer aide, Capts. R. T. King, M. L. Rayburn, and G. Cooke, and Lieut. M. L. Gerom. In the fight of the 8th, Captain Cooke and Lieutenants Storey and Gordon and 4 others were wounded, and 2 killed.

The Ninth infantry (aggregate 226), under Col. W. A. Stanley, was with the brigade of Patton Anderson, who



reported: "Colonel Stanley, of the Ninth Texas regiment, has already been incidentally alluded to. The language of eulogy could scarcely do more than simple justice to the courage and determination of this officer and his valorous Texans. Ever in the thickest of the fight, they were always ready to respond to any demand upon their courage and endurance." Stanley reported the loss of 14 killed, including Capt. J. J. Dickson and Lieutenant Hamil, two of his bravest officers, and 42 wounded.

#### SIEGE OF CORINTH.

When Confederate forces were concentrated at Corinth under General Beauregard, the returns for May, 1862, show the following Texas commands present:

Ninth regiment, Maxey's brigade, Cheatham's division; Second regiment, Col. J. C. Moore's brigade, Ruggles' division; army of the Mississippi, Bragg commanding.

Garland's and Moore's regiments, Maury's brigade; Sims' and Stone's regiments, Roane's brigade; Greer's regiment and Whitfield's battalion, Hébert's brigade; Crump's, Diamond's and Locke's regiments, J. L. Hogg's brigade; Fitzhugh's, Johnson's, Moore's and Sweet's regiments in a brigade of McCown's division; army of the West, Van Dorn commanding.

The Second, under Lieutenant-Colonel Smith, fought gallantly at Farmington, and detachments of Wharton's cavalry were active in harassing the enemy.

In the organization of the army of the Mississippi under Major-General Bragg at Tupelo in June, 1862, the following Texas commands were included: In General Maxey's brigade of Polk's corps, the Ninth Texas; in the cavalry, the Eighth regiment, under Col. John A. Wharton.

To the army of the West were assigned: Whitfield's First legion (or 27th regiment), dismounted, and Greer's

Third regiment, dismounted, in the brigade of Louis Hébert, Little's division; the Second infantry, in the brigade commanded by its former colonel, Brig.-Gen. John C. Moore, Maury's division; the Sixth and Ninth cavalry, dismounted, in Phifer's brigade, same division; and the Tenth, Eleventh and Fourteenth Texas cavalry, dismounted, Andrews' infantry regiment, Goode's Texas battery, and McCray's Arkansas battalion, forming a brigade which was soon transferred to the army in East Tennessee.

#### IUKA AND CORINTH.

The battle of Iuka, Miss., September 19, 1862, was fought by Little's division of the army of the West against largely preponderating numbers of the enemy. It was Grant's intention to capture Price's army, but though Little fell his men repulsed the attack. In his report General Price said:

The brunt of the battle fell upon Hébert's brigade, and nobly did it sustain it, and worthily of its accomplished commander and of the brigade which numbers among its forces the ever-glorious Third Louisiana, the Third Texas dismounted cavalry, and Whitfield's Texas legion. The Third Louisiana and Third Texas had already fought under my eyes at the Oak Hills and at Elkhorn. No men have ever fought more bravely or more victoriously than they, and he who can say hereafter, "I belonged to the Third Louisiana or the Third Texas," need ever blush in my presence. In this, the hardest-fought fight which I have ever witnessed, they well sustained their bloodily won reputation. The commanding officer of each regiment—Lieut.-Col. Gilmore and Colonel Mabry—was severely wounded. Brave men were never more bravely commanded. Whitfield's legion not only took a battery with the aid of the Third Texas, but fully established on this occasion its right to stand side by side with the veteran regiments already named, and won under their gallant leader a reputation for dashing boldness and steady courage which places them side by side with the bravest and the best. I regret that they are to lose in the

impending conflicts the leadership of their able commander, Col. John W. Whitfield, who was painfully wounded, though not dangerously.

The main struggle of this battle was for the possession of a six-gun Federal battery, which was taken by the two Texas commands, after, it is reported, eight attempts had failed. Whitfield had 460 men in action and reported that he lost 106 in killed and wounded in this charge, most of whom fell at or near the battery. The brave Lieut. W. F. F. Wynn was among those killed at the guns. The loss of the Third is given at 22 killed and 74 wounded out of 388. The Second infantry, then known as Second Texas sharpshooters, was with General Maury resisting another Federal column, and, under Col. W. P. Rogers, repulsed the enemy's advance on the 16th, and was conspicuous in a successful ambushade on the 19th, which saved the rear of Price's army from attack.

In his report of the battle of Corinth, October 3d and 4th, two days of carnage where many brave men died and many were distinguished for valor, General Van Dorn named one man for conspicuous heroism. "I cannot refrain," he said, "from mentioning here the conspicuous gallantry of a noble Texan, whose deeds at Corinth are the constant theme of both friends and foes. As long as courage, manliness, fortitude, patriotism and honor exist, the name of Rogers will be revered and honored among men. He fell in the front of battle, and died beneath the colors of his regiment, in the very center of the enemy's stronghold. He sleeps, and Glory is his sentinel."

The Texans of Moore's brigade and Phifer's, in Maury's division, were among the first to engage the enemy on the 3d, and the two brigades, pursuing the Federals to the edge of the town, fought heavily throughout the day. On the next morning, the Confederate artillery being withdrawn, the sharpshooters alone, under heavy fire, defended the front of the division. Toward

noon Moore, Phifer and Cabell led their brigades into the town in a desperate charge, and held their position until driven out by overwhelming forces, Moore's brigade capturing a battery of light artillery and taking possession of the Tishomingo hotel. Part of his brigade, including the Second Texas, entered the innermost works of Corinth, said General Maury, and there Colonel Rogers fell, with eleven wounds.

In the fight at Hatchie bridge against three Federal brigades under General Ord, who sought to intercept the retreat and crush Van Dorn's army between his line and Rosecrans', the Second Texas, under Moore, was among the first engaged, and was gallantly reinforced by the Sixth and Ninth and other commands of Phifer's brigade, under Col. L. S. Ross. Joined by Cabell's Arkansans, these remnants of brigades made a desperate fight and saved the Confederate army. General Maury especially mentioned the conspicuous courage of Bugler Ernest Goolah, of Ross' regiment.

In the battle of Corinth and the following fight on the Hatchie the casualties of the Texas regiments were reported as follows: Third cavalry, 32; First legion, 20; Second Texas, 44; Sixth cavalry, 118; Ninth cavalry, 76. The missing largely increased these losses, the most being reported by the legion, 75, and Second Texas, 122. Maj. W. C. Timmins, of the Second, was one of the wounded.

#### CHICKASAW BAYOU.

Later in 1862 a Texas cavalry brigade was organized in Maury's division, under Lieut.-Col. John S. Griffith, consisting of his regiment, the First legion under Lieut.-Col. E. R. Hawkins, the Third cavalry under Lieut.-Col. J. S. Boggess, the Sixth cavalry under Capt. Jack Wharton, and McNally's battery. They fought a spirited engagement at Oakland, Miss., December 3d.

Maury's division reached Vicksburg just as Stephen



D. Lee had magnificently repelled the attack of General Sherman at Chickasaw bayou, but the Texans with him were not to be deprived of a taste of battle. On the morning of January 2, 1863, learning that Sherman was removing his troops to the transports, Lee started in pursuit with the Second Texas in front, deployed as skirmishers, supported by two Tennessee and an Alabama regiment. General Lee records the spirited conduct of the Texas regiment in his graphic report:

The enemy was found drawn up in line of battle, two regiments, on the river bank, under cover of their gunboats, about twelve in number, and the river bank being lined with their transports. The Second Texas advanced to 100 yards of the boats without opening fire. Neither did the enemy open on them. I ordered the fire to open. This most gallant regiment with a dash rushed almost up to the boats, delivering their fire with terrible effect on their crowded transports. Never have I seen so sudden a disappearance from crowded vessels, nor vessels move off so hurriedly. The gunboats at once opened on the skirmishers with about twenty boat-howitzers from their upper decks and with rifles from their plated decks. The Texans remained until their troops had disappeared, and as nothing was to be gained by firing on their ironclads, they withdrew.

General Maury said of this famous affair: "I regret to report that this gallant regiment has again lost its commander. Lieutenant-Colonel Timmins, just recovered from a severe wound received at Corinth, was again very seriously wounded. His gallantry and the fine conduct of his regiment are much spoken of by those who observed them." Private D. Morse, of Company H, was slightly wounded.

#### RICHMOND, KENTUCKY.

In the Kentucky campaign of 1862, Texas was honorably represented at the battle of Richmond by the brigade of Col. T. H. McCray, including the Tenth Texas cavalry,

dismounted, Col. R. C. Earp; Eleventh cavalry, dismounted, Col. J. C. Burks; Fourteenth cavalry, dismounted, Lieut.-Col. James Weaver, and McCray's Arkansas sharpshooters. The brigade was selected to flank the enemy's right, where their steady fighting decided the issue of the day. Gen. Kirby Smith reported that it was intended to support McCray with Preston Smith's division, but the latter was delayed by a furious assault of the enemy, "and so this gallant brigade of Texans and Arkansans had to fight the battle alone. Although the odds opposed to them were fearful, yet by reserving their own fire under the deafening roar of the enemy's guns, and by a well-timed and dashing charge upon the advancing line, they completely routed and put to flight the hosts of the enemy just as the cheers of Smith's division announced their arrival on the field." The brigade lost 20 killed and 120 wounded. Douglas' battery also served gallantly in this battle, with a loss of 6.

The Ninth regiment was present at Perryville. The Rangers served with Forrest, and their "terrific yell" was recorded in the Federal reports as well as their irresistible charges. Under Colonel Wharton they led the attack which compelled the surrender of Murfreesboro, Tenn., July 13th, where Wharton was severely wounded, the command devolving on Colonel Walker. They participated also in the general Kentucky campaign.

#### MURFREESBORO.

At the battle of Murfreesboro, Texas was represented by the Ninth infantry, Col. W. H. Young, in Cheatham's division; the Eighth cavalry, Col. Thomas Harrison, in a brigade under General Wheeler, commanded by John A. Wharton, now promoted to brigadier-general; and by the brigade of Gen. M. D. Ector (formerly McCray's), in McCown's division, composed of the Tenth cavalry, dismounted, Col. M. F. Locke; Eleventh, Col. J. C. Burks; Fourteenth, Col. J. L. Camp; Fifteenth, Col. J. A. An-

draws; and Douglas' battery. In General Hardee's report of the impetuous advance of his corps, which crumbled the left wing of Rosecrans' army, he said: "I ordered Wharton to make a detour of the enemy's right and to fall upon their flank and rear, while the infantry and artillery moved upon them in front. He dashed forward at daylight at a gallop. . . . Capt. S. P. Christian, of the Texas Rangers, with four companies, charged and took a complete battery of the enemy, with all its guns, caissons, horses and artillerists. . . . Wharton afterward swept around toward the Nashville pike, and found the enemy's cavalry in position to defend their menaced trains. Harrison, Ashby and Hardy were ordered to charge. This was met by a countercharge. . . . Wharton's entire brigade was now ordered to charge. . . . The enemy fled in wild dismay." Of the advance of the infantry Hardee said:

The enemy were broken and driven through a cedar brake after a rapid and successful charge by McCown's command (Ector in the center), in which Gen. August Willich and many prisoners were taken. A signal instance of courage was shown by Col. J. C. Burks, of the Eleventh Texas. This brave officer, though mortally wounded, still led and cheered on his regiment until he fell exhausted at its head. Another instance was shown by Sergt. A. Sims, flag-bearer of the Tenth Texas, who, seeing a Federal flag-bearer endeavoring to rally his regiment, sprang forward, seized the standard, and in the struggle both were shot down, waving their flags with their last breath. The Federal flag was captured.

Ector's brigade pushed on until very close to Rosecrans' headquarters, into a position where, Ector reported, "The cedars were falling and being trimmed by bombs, canister and iron hail, which seemed to fill the air. My men had not yielded an inch, but sheltering themselves behind the rocks, would lie down and load, rise to their knees, and fire into the closed blue line not over 60 yards from them. I saw their officers several times trying to

get their men to charge us, but they would not." In closing his report General Ector said:

Colonel Burks was gallantly leading his regiment, which had followed him before through the fire and smoke of battle, when he received a fatal wound. He felt that it was mortal. He pressed his hand to it to conceal it, and when within 20 yards of their battery, I heard him distinctly say, "Charge them, my boys! charge them!" He kept it up until from faintness he found he could go no further. A better friend, a warmer heart, a more gallant leader than he was never drew the breath of life. He was idolized by his regiment, and highly esteemed by all who knew him well. He perished in the prime of his life, in the "thunders of a great battle." He went down with his armor on in defense of his country. The Tenth Texas regiment captured three stands of colors. Colonel Andrews and Maj. W. E. Estes, of the Fifteenth Texas regiment; Colonel Locke, Maj. W. D. L. F. Craig, acting lieutenant-colonel, and Capt. H. D. E. Redwine, acting major, of the Tenth Texas regiment, and Lieutenant-Colonel Bounds, of the Eleventh Texas regiment, together with their entire staffs, acted most gallantly.

General Ector acknowledged the efficient services of members of his staff, Captain Kilgore, Major Spencer, Capt. R. Todhunter, volunteer aide, Capt. W. H. Smith, Lieutenant Lane (wounded), Maj. W. B. Ector and Surgeon L. J. Graham. The loss of the brigade he reported at 38 killed and 308 wounded.

From the report of Colonel Locke it appears that in the first charge of the Tenth it directly confronted a Federal battery, and in capturing the guns they lost before sunrise of December 31st about 80 men. It was there that Sergeant Sims lost his life as related by Hardee. "There being but one of the old color-guard left," said Locke, "Sergt. James T. McGee was only spared to advance a few paces toward his banner when another of our noblest and bravest men fell to rise no more until aroused by the trump of God to come to judgment. At this moment Private Manning, of Company H, gathered the flagstaff and



rushed to the front with a spirit and nerve sufficient for any calling, and bore the same aloft through the day." The Tenth lost 11 officers out of 20, and 117 in all out of 330.

Major-General Cheatham, mentioning the service of Vaughn's brigade, says that it attacked the enemy furiously early in the battle, and captured two guns, but was obliged to fall back. "In the meantime the Ninth Texas regiment, under the command of that gallant officer, Col. W. H. Young, who did not hear the order, became detached and was farther to the left. It remained in the woods and continued to fight the enemy, and at last charged them on their flank, and drove them from the woods on their entire right, losing very heavily." Said Colonel Vaughn: "Colonel Young seized the colors of his regiment in one of its most gallant charges and led it through." Colonel Young reported that after getting in a dangerous position where he lost in killed and wounded more than 100 men, including nearly all the commissioned officers, he and Lieut.-Col. Miles A. Dillard losing their horses, he took the colors and "ordered the regiment to move forward with a shout, both of which they did a la Texas," and the enemy fled before them. The loss of the regiment was reported at 18 killed and 102 wounded. Among the killed were Lieuts. R. F. Luckett and E. B. Parham.

#### THOMPSON'S STATION.

The Texas brigade of cavalry, consisting of the Third regiment, Maj. A. B. Stone; Sixth, Col. L. S. Ross; Ninth, Lieut.-Col. D. W. Jones, and Whitfield's legion, Lieut.-Col. John H. Brooks, under brigade command of Col. J. W. Whitfield, was distinguished in the defeat and capture of a strong Federal reconnoitering expedition at Thompson's Station, Tenn., March 5, 1863. Lieut. Mike Guerin, Color-Bearer John A. Miller and Private J. M. Day, Sixth Texas, and Capt. D. R. Gurley, brigade adjutant, were mentioned in the report of Major-General Van

Dorn. Whitfield and his Texans twice charged the Federals on a hill and were repulsed, but the third time won. Many of the bravest men and officers were lost. The legion lost 77 men and the other regiments 93, of whom 23 were killed. Lieut. R. S. Tunnell, Third, was killed; Capt. R. A. Rawlins, and Lieuts. James McWilson, P. S. Taylor and R. C. White, Sixth, were wounded; of the Ninth, Lieut. S. L. Garrett was killed, and Lieuts. W. H. Boyle, J. C. Hensley, W. P. Hicks, and S. McAnear were wounded; of Whitfield's legion Capt. J. W. Bayzer and Lieut. C. H. Roberts were killed, and Capts. J. A. Broocks and B. H. Norsworthy, and Lieuts. Adam Adams, F. P. Halley, and J. L. Nance, wounded.

#### GREENWOOD AND RAYMOND.

General Grant, foiled in his previous attempts to flank Vicksburg, landed an army on the Louisiana point opposite, and prepared to gain a lodgment south of the city. Beforehand he caused expeditions to attempt the bayou passages on the north, and the most formidable of these was met by the Second Texas and Waul's legion, with two Mississippi regiments, at Greenwood on the Yazoo. With a cotton-bale battery, these troops defeated two ironclads, mounting 10 and 11 inch guns, supported by a large infantry force. General Loring, reporting the affair, gave earnest praise to Col. T. N. Waul and his men for service in the fortifications, and to Col. Ashbel Smith and his regiment for gallantry and skill in preventing the enemy from turning the right flank.

After Grant had landed below Vicksburg and pushed McPherson's corps toward Jackson, it was met at Raymond by General Gregg's brigade, including the Seventh Texas, under Col. H. B. Granbury. Gregg's 2,500 fought so staunchly against Logan's division, closely supported by the rest of the corps, that McPherson reported them 6,000 strong. The Seventh Texas and Third Tennessee bore the brunt of this unequal and murderous conflict, which

General Gregg fought on account of misinformation regarding the strength of the enemy. The Seventh lost 22 killed, 73 wounded and 63 missing. The regiment at first drove the enemy before it, and later held a position until left without support and flanked. Granbury reported that "Capt. W. H. Smith, after acting with marked gallantry, fell pierced with three balls; Capt. J. W. Brown was wounded in the head and abdomen, but borne from the field and saved; Capt. J. H. Collett was wounded by a grapeshot; Capt. O. P. Forrest fell in the retreat; Lieuts. J. C. Kidd, J. W. Taylor, A. H. White were wounded. Lieuts. J. D. Miles and T. S. Townsend were slightly wounded. Lieuts. W. A. Collier and J. N. Monin are among the missing." Capt. E. T. Broughton was also among the missing, being one of the last to leave the position. Lieutenant-Colonel Moody and Major Van Zandt were commended for bravery. Of the regiment as a whole the greatest compliment to its valor is the record that it lost 158 out of 306. The remnant of the regiment, as well as Whitfield's cavalry brigade, participated in the operations of General Johnston during the sieges of Vicksburg and Jackson.

#### SIEGE OF VICKSBURG.

The Second Texas and Waul's legion went through the siege inside the Vicksburg lines, and on the 4th of July, 1863, were surrendered. Waul's legion served with Gen. S. D. Lee's brigade, under Gen. C. L. Stevenson, and made a glorious record. On May 22d they performed a feat which both generals declared was as gallant as any of the war. The enemy had taken an angle of the works, but, said Lee, "the angle was finally assaulted and carried by a gallant band of Waul's Texans, under command of the intrepid Lieut.-Col. E. W. Pettus, Twentieth Alabama. This brave officer, assisted by Maj. O. Steele and Capt. L. D. Bradley, of the legion, and the heroic Texans, captured the colors of the enemy and about 50 prison-

ers, including a lieutenant-colonel." In general, during the assault, "Waul's Texas legion," said Lee, "particularly distinguished itself, under its brave colonel, by its coolness and gallantry." Waul and Lieut.-Col. B. Timmons were especially mentioned by Lee among the officers conspicuous during the entire siege. According to the report of Colonel Waul, in the resistance to the Federal assault every officer of the staff present was either killed or seriously wounded. Louis Popen dieck, assistant adjutant-general, and John Neville Simmons, aide-de-camp, after very gallant behavior, fell, leaving an undying record of courage and dauntless bearing. When other troops refused to volunteer to drive the Federals from the redoubt on their left, "General Lee directed the colonel of the legion to have the fort taken. He immediately went, taking with him one battalion of the legion to aid or support the assailants, if necessary, informing Capt. L. D. Bradley and Lieut. J. Hogue (who commanded the two companies of the legion previously sent to reinforce the redoubt). These gallant officers not only willingly agreed, but solicited the honor of leading their companies to the assault. Not wishing to expose a larger force than necessary, Captain Bradley was ordered to select 20 and Lieutenant Hogue 15 men from their respective companies. Lieutenant-Colonel Pettus, thoroughly acquainted with the locality and its approaches, came, musket in hand, and most gallantly offered to guide and lead the party into the fort. With promptness and alacrity they moved to the assault, retook the fort, drove the enemy through the breach they entered, tore down the stand of colors still floating over the parapet, and sent them to the colonel commanding. . . . The enemy, driven from the fort, ensconced themselves behind the parapet in the outer ditch. Two companies were immediately ordered to the fort to aid in dislodging the enemy. Many of the men mounted the parapet, and fired into the ditch, subjecting themselves to the aim of its occupants and the



concentrated fire from the enemy's lines. A few shells used as hand-grenades bursting among the enemy soon caused them to surrender. . . . In the pursuit Lieut.-Col. J. Wrigley captured the other stand of colors." The loss of the legion during the siege of Vicksburg was 10 officers killed, wounded 37, missing 1; 37 enlisted men killed, 153 wounded, 7 missing; total 245. Among the killed were Maj. Allen Cameron, and Capts. Samuel Carter and J. A. Ledbetter.

The Second Texas, in Moore's brigade, lost 21 killed and 56 wounded in the battle of May 22d. General Moore reported that the enemy made determined assaults, but were gloriously repulsed. "Their greatest efforts were made against that portion of the line occupied by that veteran and gallant regiment the Second Texas. . . . They were easily repulsed in the morning, but in the afternoon charge they were more determined, coming up even into the outer ditch of the Second Texas redoubt. The Second Texas captured two stands of colors." Then abandoning assault, the enemy pushed his rifle-pits up to within thirty paces of the Texas line.

The position held by the Second Texas was of paramount importance, covering the Baldwin's Ferry road, and the regiment had been moved out of its place in the brigade at midnight, May 17th, to man it. When the enemy first appeared, Capt. William Christian with his company met them as skirmishers, reinforced by Captain Debord, all under Maj. G. W. L. Fly. During the next three days they were under fire and suffered from a fierce bombardment. The detailed report of Colonel Smith is of great interest, describing the assault made by a column of 5 regiments, and the gallantry of the Texans standing on the banquette, exposed to a terrific fire which they returned with decisive effect. The fort was so far in advance that it had no support, and the enemy had abundant shelter from which to fire at close range. Early in the day the incessant stream of minie bullets tore up and scattered

the cotton used in the traverses, and it soon took fire from the muzzles of the enemy's rifles. The Texans, lying flat to avoid the stream of minie-balls, were busied for a time in keeping fire from the magazines. One cannon was early disabled and the detachment for the other was depleted. "About 2 o'clock," said Smith, "I ordered it to be run up into battery and fired. As the last remaining corporal raised himself over the tail to aim, a minie-ball, within 15 inches of the platform, passed through his heart and he rolled over dead. . . . In one of the furious assaults the enemy mounted the parapet to near its superior slope. Numbers of them were pouring a murderous fire through our right embrasure, amid the smoke of the burning cotton, which enveloped and almost blinded the men in this angle of the fort, and they were apparently on the eve of rushing in. I shouted, 'Volunteers to clear that embrasure !' Four men sprang to the platform, Sergt. William T. Spence of Company B, and Privates T. E. Bagwell, A. S. Kittredge and J. A. Stewart of Company C, and discharging their pieces within 5 paces of the muzzles of the assailants, hurled them back headlong into the ditch outside. The repulse was decisive. Bagwell fell dead on the platform; Spence fell by his side, shot through the brain. He lingered a few days."

At the close of the assault, Colonel Smith said, the Federal dead lay so thick in front that along the road for more than 200 yards one might have walked upon them without touching the ground. Major Elliott, of the Thirty-third Illinois, subsequently estimated the Federal killed at 600 and their wounded at 1,200 on that day before the Texan line. The Second Texas held the fort until the end. On May 2d they had left their camp on Chickasaw bayou, without a change of clothes and one blanket to a man, and thus provided they fought uncomplainingly, under constant rifle fire and frequent heavy cannonading, and incessant mental strain on account of the enemy's steady approach, from May 17th to July 4th. When it rained,

they slept in the mud; when the sun burned them, they endured. They used water from shallow wells, and had daily rations of three ounces of musty cornmeal and pea-flour. Yet when they were surrendered, they wept. They were 468 strong May 17th, and lost 38 killed and 73 wounded. Eleven died of privation or sickness, 4 of wounds. Capt. A. F. Gammell and Lieut. Robert S. Henry were among the killed; Lieut. William F. Kirk died of wounds.

#### CHICKAMAUGA.

General Bragg's army, falling back into Georgia, fought on Chickamauga creek, September 19th and 20th, the greatest battle of the war in the West. The Texas organizations which participated in this famous victory were assigned as follows: Sixth, Tenth and Fifteenth dismounted cavalry, consolidated, under Col. Roger Q. Mills; the Seventeenth, Eighteenth, Twenty-fourth and Twenty-fifth consolidated, under Col. F. C. Wilkes; and Douglas' battery, in the brigade of Gen. James Deshler, Cleburne's division, D. H. Hill's corps. In Walker's reserve corps was General Ector's brigade, including the Ninth infantry, Colonel Young, and Tenth, Fourteenth and Thirty-second cavalry, dismounted, under Cols. C. R. Earp, J. L. Camp, and Julius A. Andrews. The Seventh Texas, under Granbury, was in Gregg's brigade, Bushrod Johnson's division. Jerome B. Robertson's brigade, Hood's division, Longstreet's corps, from Virginia, included the Third Arkansas; First Texas, Capt. R. J. Harding; Fourth, Col. John P. Bane; Fifth, Maj. C. J. Rogers. The Eighth cavalry, Lieut.-Col. Gustave Cook; Eleventh, Col. G. R. Reeves, formed part of the brigade of Col. Thomas Harrison, in Gen. John A. Wharton's division, Wheeler's cavalry corps.

It will be remembered that on the morning of the first day Forrest's cavalry, supported by Colonel Wilson's Georgia brigade and Ector's brigade (mainly Texans) opened the battle, gallantly contesting the Federal advance

on the Confederate right. In his report, General Walker said, "General Ector is absent, his brigade having been ordered to Mississippi, and I have no report from him, but his brigade acted with the greatest gallantry. . . . I am satisfied that there were more than Thomas' corps engaged. . . . The unequal contest of four brigades against such overwhelming odds is unparalleled in this revolution, and the troops deserve immortal honor for the part borne in the action." The brigade, reduced in numbers to about 500, took part in the second day's fight also, under the division command of Gen. S. R. Gist. The loss of the brigade was reported at 59 killed, 239 wounded, and 138 missing; total, 536. Unfortunately, the meager reports afford no further information.

Deshler's brigade and Douglas' battery formed the left wing of Cleburne's division, which drove the enemy on the evening of the 19th back a mile and a half to Thomas' breastworks. The report of Col. Roger Q. Mills describes the advance of the brigade that evening, the crossing of the stream, the hurried march forward through crowds of stragglers, wounded and prisoners, and the final taking position not more than 100 yards from the enemy. A battery was firing in the dark, but whose it was could not be told. Skirmishers from Wilkes' regiment, going forward, ran into the enemy and were captured. Then the enemy in retreating encountered a volley from Deshler's brigade, and 100 surrendered, with two stands of colors, and the skirmishers were recaptured. On the morning of the 20th the brigade was advanced to a position 200 yards from the breastworks, encountering a destructive fire, and finally was ordered to lie down and commence firing on the crest of a hill swept by the enemy's artillery and musketry. The Texans held their place under heavy fire from 10 a. m. to about 2 p. m., without any artillery support, firing all their ammunition. At that crisis Colonel Mills sent to General Deshler for more ammunition, and as the general came toward them, he was struck in the breast by a shell



and his heart literally torn from his bosom. Colonel Mills then took command, had his men fix bayonets, and found one round of ammunition, preparing to obey orders and hold the ridge to the last. Renewed orders came to hold the ridge at any cost, and the brave Texans held on till night. The closing portion of Colonel Mills' report contains a just eulogy of the men who stood so well the strain of that severe trial of their fortitude. He says:

The troops of my command, both officers and men, behaved with the greatest bravery, coolness and self-possession during the whole engagement. They advanced with a steady step, under heavy fire of shell, canister and musketry, to their position and held it with firmness and unwavering fortitude throughout the fight. Texans vied with each other to prove themselves worthy of the fame won by their brothers on other fields, and the little handful of Arkansas troops showed themselves worthy to have their names enrolled among the noblest, bravest and best of their State. It is scarcely possible for them to exhibit higher evidences of courage, patriotism and pride on any other field. They were not permitted to advance and would not retire, but as brave men and good soldiers they obeyed the orders of their general and held the field. Lieutenant-Colonel Anderson, Lieutenant-Colonel Hutchinson and Major Taylor remained constantly in the line, handled their commands with ability, and conducted themselves gallantly through the entire action. . . . I feel it my duty to record here the names of Lieut. Matthew Graham, Tenth Texas, and Private William C. McCann, Fifteenth, as worthy of honorable mention for conduct more than ordinarily gallant on the field. Lieutenant Graham several times volunteered and insisted on being allowed to carry orders and messages up and down the line, where he was constantly exposed to the thickest fire. His services were highly beneficial to Lieutenant-Colonel Anderson, who speaks of him in terms of highest praise. Private McCann was under my own eye. He stood upright, cheerful and self-possessed in the very hail of deadly missiles, cheered up his comrades around him, and after he had expended all his ammunition, gathered up the cartridge-boxes of the dead and wounded and distributed them to his comrades. He bore himself like a hero through the entire

fight, and fell mortally wounded by the last volleys of the enemy. I promised him during the engagement that I would mention his good conduct, and as he was borne dying from the field, he turned his boyish face upon me, and with a light and pleasant smile reminded me of my promise.

The First Texas battery, commanded by Capt. James P. Douglas, belonging to Deshler's brigade, was not engaged on the 19th. On the 20th it followed the brigade as far as the open field, covered thickly with felled timber, when, finding it impossible to follow us further, Captain Douglas moved toward our left flank, and came into another field, where he was exposed to the enemy's fire. He immediately opened fire on Douglas from two of his batteries, killing one of his horses and knocking down one of his wheels. He extricated himself from this position, and, by order of Major-General Cleburne, took position on the hill with the brigade of Brigadier-Generals Wood and Polk in the rear of my line. He afterward moved down on the right where Brigadier-General Polk was warmly engaging the attention of the enemy, disengaged his horses, and carried off his pieces by hand in the very face of the foe. He fired a few rounds at 60 or 80 yards' distance from the enemy, advancing his pieces by hand with the line of Brigadier-General Polk's brigade. The enemy was soon routed and fled the field. Too much praise cannot be bestowed on Captain Douglas and the officers and men of his battery for their gallant conduct. They were not engaged for any considerable length of time, but the very short quarters at which Captain Douglas threw down the gauntlet soon decided the enemy to yield the field to a battery that could charge a brigade of infantry behind their rifle-pits.

Capt. J. T. Hearne and B. F. Blackburn and Lieut. G. B. Jewell, of the brigade staff, are entitled to my thanks for promptly reporting to me when Brigadier-General Deshler fell, and for their valuable services rendered to me during the engagement. The aggregate strength of the brigade, including the battery, on the morning of the 19th, was 1,783. I lost in the fight 52 killed and 366 wounded.

General Robertson, commanding Hood's old brigade, reported that on the 19th he advanced in the face of stubborn opposition and gained the crest of a hill which was

swept by artillery and he was compelled to take shelter behind the summit. The Federals then advanced to re-occupy the hill, but were pushed back by a gallant charge in which three Texas regimental commanders were wounded—Colonel Bane, Major Rogers and Captain Harding. At 11 a. m. on Sunday they were again ordered to the attack, and found themselves isolated. Nevertheless they advanced to the top of a hill, and drove the enemy from it, but came under a fire which was believed to be from Confederate ranks in the rear. This threw the line into confusion, and General Hood being wounded just as Robertson appealed to him for orders, the brigade was formed in the timber, waiting orders for some time. In the last charge some of the best officers fell: Captain Billingsley and Lieutenants Bookman and Killingsworth, of the Fourth Texas; and Lieutenant Stratman, of the Fifth. Captain Bassett took command of the Fourth after Bane was wounded, and on the evening of the second day he was severely wounded, the command devolving on Capt. James T. Hunter. Ed. Francis, color-sergeant of this regiment, was killed. Captain Cleveland took charge of the Fifth after Rogers fell, and gallantly led his men until wounded on the evening of Sunday, being succeeded by Capt. T. T. Clay. The killed and wounded of the brigade were reported at 78 officers and 457 men, and 35 missing.

No command was more distinguished in this bloody conflict than the Seventh Texas, of Gregg's brigade. They crossed the Chickamauga on the evening of the 18th and pushed on in the dark toward the enemy, and in the first skirmish on the line of battle a first sergeant of the regiment was mortally wounded. Johnson's division was alone beyond the river that night, with Gregg in front, and a third of the men remained awake all night ready for battle. Next morning the brigade was hotly engaged. At one point in the contest General Gregg rode out in front to reconnoiter, and found himself close to the enemy,

who called upon him to halt. Turning to ride back he was shot from his horse. As the Federals advanced to make him a prisoner, Robertson's brigade made a gallant charge and recovered him. "Brigadier-General Gregg deserves special commendation for his gallantry and activity on the field," said General Johnson. In this day's battle Colonel Granbury was severely wounded and many others fell. Maj. K. M. Van Zandt was in command next day, when the regiment pushed forward with the brigade through the woods, into open ground beyond the road for which they were fighting, and took part in the capture of a Federal battery of 9 guns. Pushing on, the Texans aided in the capture of wagons, guns and prisoners, and were gallant participants in the last desperate fight on a spur of Missionary ridge, almost in the rear from the south of Thomas' line. The regiment had 177 officers and men on the first day. Its loss was not reported separately, but the brigade is reported as losing 652 out of 1,425.

#### KNOXVILLE CAMPAIGN.

In General Longstreet's Knoxville campaign the Eighth and Eleventh Texas cavalry fought under Harrison, Wharton and Wheeler. In the defeats of the Federal cavalry on Little river and near Knoxville the Texas regiments led the charge on each occasion, driving the enemy in wild confusion. Gregg's brigade under Robertson—the First Texas under Col. A. T. Rainey, the Fourth under Col. J. C. G. Key, and the Fifth under Col. R. M. Powell—was also in this trying campaign, and remained in East Tennessee until ordered to Virginia the following spring.

#### MISSIONARY RIDGE AND RINGGOLD.

After the battle of Chickamauga, Colonel Granbury's regiment was transferred to Deshler's brigade and Gen. J. A. Smith assigned to command. This brigade and Douglas' battery were the only Texas organizations at



Missionary Ridge, and right nobly did they sustain the honor of the Texas soldier. In the battle of November 25th, the commands of Colonels Mills and Granbury and Maj. W. A. Taylor (succeeding Colonel Wilkes) were posted north of the tunnel, with Douglas' battery, under Lieut. John H. Bingham, in position to enfilade an attacking line. Here they were attacked next morning by portions of four divisions under General Sherman. The enemy made a brave charge on Swett's battery on the top of Tunnel hill, but were repulsed by a countercharge of Mills' regiment and part of the Seventh. In this charge both General Smith and Colonel Mills were severely wounded at the head of their troops, and Colonel Granbury took command of the brigade. In less than half an hour another desperate assault was made, but was repulsed by the Texas artillery and infantry. Swett's battery suffered so severely that Colonel Granbury was forced to make a detail from the infantry to man the guns. Now some other troops were brought up to support the battery on Tunnel hill. At 1 p. m. a still more determined assault was made. Tier after tier of the enemy, to the foot of the hill and in the valley beyond, concentrated their fire until, General Cleburne reported, "there seemed to be a continuous sheet of hissing, flying lead." Cumming's Georgians came up, and Maney's brigade was put in support of the Texans. Finally Cumming made a charge down the hill and Lieutenant-Colonel Sanders led the left of Mills' Texans against the Federal flank. "The enemy, completely surprised, fled down the hill, the Texas troops on the left pursuing him beyond the foot and nearly across the open ground in front," said Cleburne. He adds: "It is but justice for me to say that the brunt of this long day's fight was borne by Smith's Texas brigade," and part of Govan's. "Out of the eight stand of colors shown by me to have been captured, four were presented to me by Mills' Texas regiment." The Texans held their line in that disastrous battle, and before them fell one Federal

major-general and three brigadier-generals. But toward evening word was brought that the center of the Confederate line was broken, and at 9 p. m., Cleburne said, he ordered "Smith's brigade to move in retreat. Sadly, but not fearfully, this band of heroes left the hill they had held so well, and followed the army across the Chickamauga."

But yet again they were destined to pluck the flower of glory from the funeral weeds of general defeat. Two days later Cleburne was ordered to defend the gap in Taylor's ridge, at Ringgold, Ga., against the Federal pursuit, and he posted Granbury's brigade, now about 1,200 strong, in the place of danger, the Sixth, Tenth and Fifteenth, under Capt. John R. Kennard, and the command of Maj. W. A. Taylor, at the north of the gap, and the Seventh, under Capt. C. E. Talley, at the top of the right-hand hill. The first determined attack of the Federals was made on the Texans, but they were held in check, and Major Taylor charging down the hill with three companies put the enemy to rout and captured over 60 prisoners and a flag. Then the Federals attempted to gain the hill further north, avoiding the Texans, but were handsomely repulsed by Lowrey and Polk. The brigade lost 5 killed, 34 wounded, 23 missing.

In the organization of the army in Mississippi commanded by Lieut.-Gen. Leonidas Polk, as reported in February, 1864, Ector's brigade was included, and the Texas cavalry brigade, now under Gen. Lawrence S. Ross. The latter was composed of the First legion, Col. Edwin R. Hawkins; Third regiment, Col. Hinchie P. Mabry; Sixth regiment, Col. Jack Wharton; Ninth regiment, Col. Dudley W. Jones; Lieut. Rush L. Elkin's escort company, and King's Missouri battery. Ross' brigade served under Gen. S. D. Lee until ordered to Georgia. Ross disabled and drove on shore the transport Delta, January 6th; and then was ordered to take position at Benton, Miss., and guard the country west of the Big Black river. On January 28th he attacked with his battery and

drove back a Federal expedition on the Yazoo, near Satartia. On February 2d, at Liverpool, on the same river, he made a gallant fight with his Texans against a formidable expedition, and three days later, at Yazoo City, again met the Federals and compelled them to return down the river. The Federals subsequently occupying Yazoo City, he attacked them March 5th and forced them to evacuate. These and many other exploits kept the marauding parties from Vicksburg within narrow bounds. "All praise is due," said Gen. W. H. Jackson, commanding division, "the fighting Texans and King's battery, and their gallant leader, General Ross, for their noble defense of the Yazoo country." On September 29th General Ross took command of the cavalry division composed of his own brigade and Gholson's.

#### GEORGIA CAMPAIGN.

On April 30, 1864, Smith's brigade, part of the time under Granbury, now a brigadier-general, included the Sixth and Fifteenth, under Capt. Rhoads Fisher; the Seventh, under Capt. J. H. Collett; the Tenth, under Colonel Mills; the Seventeenth and Eighteenth, under Capt. George D. Manion, and the Twenty-fourth and Twenty-fifth, under Col. Franklin C. Wilkes. When Polk's army joined Johnston, Ector's brigade was brought into the field, including the Tenth dismounted cavalry, Col. C. R. Earp; Fourteenth, Col. John L. Camp; and the Thirty-second, Col. J. A. Andrews. Harrison's Texas cavalrymen fought under Wheeler, and under W. H. Jackson was the Texas cavalry brigade of Gen. Lawrence S. Ross. Douglas' battery, under Lieut. John H. Bingham, was with Hood's corps.

Granbury's brigade was in the heat of the fighting from Dug Gap, on the 8th of May, till the investment of Atlanta. On May 27th it took a conspicuous part in the defeat of the Federals at Pickett's, near New Hope church. According to General Cleburne's report, Gran-

bury was posted amid the hills, near a deep ravine, with a natural glacis within 30 or 40 yards of his front. "Here was the brunt of the battle, the enemy advancing along this front in numerous and constantly-reinforced lines. His men displayed a courage worthy of an honorable cause, pressing in steady throngs within a few paces of our men, frequently exclaiming: 'We have caught you without your logs now!' Granbury's men, needing no logs, were awaiting them, and throughout awaited them with calm determination, and as they appeared upon the slope, slaughtered them with deliberate aim. The piles of dead on his front, pronounced by the officers of this army who have seen most service to be greater than they had ever seen before, were a silent but sufficient eulogy upon Granbury and his noble Texans. . . . About 10 p. m. I ordered Granbury and Lowrey to push forward skirmishers and scouts to learn the state of things in their respective fronts. Granbury, finding it impossible to advance his skirmishers until he had cleared his front of the enemy lying up against it, with my consent charged with his whole line. The Texans, their bayonets fixed, plunged into the darkness with a terrific yell, and with one bound were upon the enemy, but they met with no resistance. Surprised and panic-stricken, many fled, escaping in the darkness; others surrendered and were brought into our lines. It needed but the brilliancy of this night attack to add luster to the achievements of Granbury and his brigade in the afternoon. I am deeply indebted to them both."

Gen. J. A. Smith commanded the brigade on July 21st in the fighting preliminary to what is called the battle of Atlanta, east of that city. Here the Texans were swept by a terrible fire of artillery. In the Eighteenth regiment, 17 of the 18 men composing one company were put out of the fight by one shot. But the Texans held their ground, and repulsed a charge by the enemy. "The loss of the brigade in this affair," said



General Smith, "was 47 killed, 120 wounded and 19 captured."

On the 22d the regiment fought with gallantry and severe loss, for a time driving the enemy, the Twenty-fourth and Twenty-fifth capturing 2 stand of colors, 15 pieces of artillery, etc. But later they were severely handled and a portion of the command under Major Person, of the Fifth Confederate, then assigned to the brigade, was captured. Every regimental officer of the brigade, said General Smith, was killed, wounded or captured. The approximate loss was 23 killed, 100 wounded, and 75 missing. General Smith was wounded, and succeeded by Colonel Mills, who was severely wounded, the command then devolving on Lieutenant-Colonel Young, of the Tenth. Among the killed was the cool and intrepid Capt. William M. Allison, of the Eighteenth, commanding the skirmish line.

Lieut. T. L. Flynt, left in command of the Sixth, reported that Capt. B. R. Tyus, commanding the regiment, was wounded on the 20th at the battle of Peach-tree Creek, where the regiment suffered a loss of 2 killed and 15 wounded. On the next day Capt. Rhoads Fisher, commanding, was wounded; Capt. M. M. Houston assumed command, and was shot in the head in ten minutes; and on the 22d, the last captain, S. E. Rice, was killed or captured. Capt. J. William Brown, reporting for the Seventh, gave his effective force on the 20th as 110, loss 1; loss on the 21st, 9; on the 22d, 30. Lieut. J. M. Craig was killed in the second charge. Capt. John A. Formwalt, who succeeded Colonel Mills, reported the loss of 8 killed and 12 wounded on the 21st, and 5 killed and 15 wounded on the 22d. Lieut. Edward Ashby was among the killed. The Seventeenth and Eighteenth suffered slight losses on the 20th; and on the 21st, out of 184, lost 1 captain, 1 lieutenant, 10 non-commissioned officers and privates killed, and 3 lieutenants and 36 non-commissioned officers and privates wounded. July

22d the Seventeenth and Eighteenth, under Captain Manion, became separated from the brigade, and after a hand-to-hand fight a number were captured. The loss could not be clearly ascertained. Capt. W. H. Perry was left in command. The Twenty-fourth and Twenty-fifth fought gallantly on the 21st. Less than a hundred of the men, in three successive charges, drove a large body of the enemy from the Confederate breastworks, losing 9 killed and 25 wounded, among the latter Lieutenant-Colonel Neyland. Major Taylor, in command next day, with his men penetrated the third line of the enemy and captured an Iowa flag, leading the advance of the brigade. In this movement he lost 4 killed and 21 wounded. This is only a glimpse of the record of the Texans in a campaign of hard fighting, the official reports of which are very meager.

Ector's brigade was associated with the service of the division of Samuel G. French from Resaca to the close of the campaign. The Texans of this command fought in the places assigned them, and many brave men were killed and wounded among them at Cassville, New Hope Church, Latimar House, Smyrna, Chattahoochee, Peachtree Creek, Atlanta, and Lovejoy's Station. The heaviest loss was at Latimar House and Atlanta, the total for the campaign being 42 killed, 199 wounded and 17 missing. Col. William H. Young, promoted to brigadier-general, made a report of the operations of the brigade from July 17th to September 4th. During that period the brigade was first engaged in skirmishing on Peachtree creek. On the 21st of July the skirmishers of the brigade, under Colonel Camp, of the Fourteenth, were quite heavily engaged and subsequently the men intrenched to the north of the city. On the 27th, "while in a redan occupied by Ward's battery and directing the fire of the same, General Ector received, by a piece of shell which exploded in the redan, a painful wound above the left knee, which caused the amputation of the

left leg about midway the thigh. A piece of the same shell inflicted upon the gallant Captain Ward a mortal wound." Colonel Young then assumed command. The latter took occasion to pay tribute to the gallantry and sterling worth of General Ector. "During most of the campaign, having but a single staff officer, he had borne upon his own shoulders to an unusual degree the burden of the management of the brigade. Yet, though often feeble, by his patriotic zeal, his tireless energy, his undaunted bravery, he was able to perform every task imposed with promptness, and to conduct his brigade through every contest and trial with great credit and honor." During the remainder of the siege the brigade served in the intrenchments. On August 5th they drove the enemy's skirmish line from their front, a gallant action in which Major Redwine was wounded. Along the line the firing was incessant and so severe that all the timber of moderate size between the lines was killed. In one small field in front of French's division "the expended balls covered the ground like hail." On August 27th a reconnoissance was made by Ector's and Sears' brigade, with the Fourteenth Texas on the skirmish line, and a spirited action resulted. On the night of September 1st the brigade led the advance toward Lovejoy's Station, the city being evacuated. General Young recorded the following names of "officers of the brigade who laid down their lives while nobly battling in freedom's behalf during this eventful campaign: Lieuts. J. B. Carty and J. B. Ferrell, Ninth Texas infantry; Lieut. L. Deboard, Thirty-second cavalry."

Ross' cavalry brigade served on one wing of the army with W. H. Jackson, Harrison on the other with Wheeler, but both participated in the defeat of the Federal cavalry raid against the southern railroad communications of Atlanta, in the latter part of July. General Ross came up with the Federal cavalry near Lovejoy's Station, and without waiting to form, the order

to charge was given. "At the word," said Ross, "the Ninth Texas, led by its gallant colonel, D. W. Jones, dashed forward with a shout and was in a moment engaged in a hand-to-hand struggle. The enemy at first had considerably the advantage of numbers, and boldly met the charge. The men of the Ninth Texas, having discharged their guns, and not being provided with sabers or pistols, began to waver, when the charge of General Jackson's escort and the opportune arrival of the Sixth Texas under its brave Lieut.-Col. P. F. Ross, restored confidence and forced the enemy from the field." Subsequently Ross' brigade joined in the pursuit under General Wheeler, and at Newnan, when the battle was momentarily going against Wheeler, Ross' Texans, dismounted, made a gallant charge which drove the enemy back. At the same time the Federals by a dash got between Ross and his horses. "Without halting to consider, the command to 'about face' and move back was promptly given, and as promptly obeyed. The struggle was a desperate one, and only after an hour's hard fighting were our efforts crowned with success, the enemy again repulsed, and our horses recaptured and saved." "In this affair," said General Ross, "my men and officers exhibited that coolness and daring which are almost always sure of success." His total loss during the expedition was 5 killed and 27 wounded, and 587 prisoners were taken, 2 stands of colors, 2 cannon, etc.

Gen. Joseph Wheeler's report of the campaign frequently mentions the valor of the Texans with him. On May 9th at Dug Gap, the Eighth Texas was successful in a brilliant cavalry charge, and at Varnell's Station "the gallant Texas Rangers, Colonel Cook, and the Eighth Confederate, charged most heroically into the enemy's ranks, killing and wounding large numbers, and capturing over 100 prisoners, including a brigade commander and several other officers." At Cass' Station, when a large force of the enemy attempted to



rescue a wagon train, "the gallant Texas Rangers and Second Tennessee, supported by the Third Arkansas, met and repulsed the enemy's charge; then in turn charged the enemy, driving him upon his infantry supports and capturing nearly 100 prisoners." Harrison's brigade, dismounted, participated in the battle of May 27th, near New Hope church. They took part in Wheeler's great raid through east and middle Tennessee, and near Nashville the brigade charged a largely superior force of the enemy under General Rousseau, and captured three stand of colors and a number of prisoners.

#### ALLATOONA.

Gen. John B. Hood's campaign against Sherman's communications after the fall of Atlanta was signalized by the sanguinary battle of Allatoona, fought by French's division against General Corse, October 5th. In this action General Young with his four Texas regiments, Ninth, Tenth, Fourteenth and Thirty-second, took a prominent part in the assault upon the Federal forts. General French reported: "Texas will mourn the loss of some of her best and bravest men. Captain Somerville, Thirty-second Texas, was killed after vainly endeavoring to enter the last work, where his conspicuous gallantry had carried him and his little band. Captains Gibson, Tenth Texas; Bates, Ninth; Adjutant Griffin, Ninth; and Lieut. Dixon E. Wetzel, Ninth, were killed, gallantly leading their men. Brig.-Gen. W. H. Young, commanding brigade, was wounded. Most gallantly he bore his part in the action. Colonel Camp, commanding Fourteenth Texas, one of the best officers in the service, was seriously wounded; also Majors McReynolds, Ninth Texas, and Purdy, Fourteenth Texas. Of captains wounded were Wright, Lyles, Russell, Vannoy and Ridley, and Lieutenants Tunnell, Haynes, Gibbons, Agee, Morris, O'Brien, Irwin, Reeves and Robertson. . . . To Colonel Earp, on whom the command of the

gallant Texans devolved, and to Colonel Andrews (Thirty-second Texas), who commanded on the south side, . . . I return my thanks for services. . . . Lieut. M. W. Armstrong, Tenth Texas, seized the United States standard from the Federals, and after a struggle brought it and the bearer of it off in triumph." The loss of the brigade, which included two North Carolina regiments, was 43 killed and 147 wounded. Maj. J. H. McReynolds, commanding the Ninth, reported a loss of 45 out of 101 in action. "Lieut. J. P. Bates was killed among the foremost, far in advance of the enemy's third line, near their main fort. Sergt. C. E. Dale, who was among the first to mount the works, was shot dead." Lieut.-Col. Abram Harris, Fourteenth, reported a loss of 49, having in action but 87 guns. Such instances of fruitless heroism characterized the remainder of the history of the army of Tennessee.

#### FRANKLIN AND NASHVILLE.

Granbury's brigade at Franklin, November 30th, lost its division commander, General Cleburne, and its brigade commander, General Granbury. Lieut.-Col. R. B. Young, Tenth, was also killed, and Maj. W. A. Taylor, Twenty-fourth and Twenty-fifth, Capt. J. W. Brown, Seventh, and Capt. R. Fisher, Sixth and Fifteenth, commanding their respective regiments, were reported missing. On December 10th, Capt. E. T. Broughton was in command of the brigade; the Sixth and Fifteenth regiments were under Capt. B. R. Tyus; the Seventh under Capt. O. P. Forrest, the Tenth under Capt. R. D. Kennedy, Seventeenth and Eighteenth under Capt. F. L. McKnight, and the Twenty-fourth and Twenty-fifth under Capt. John F. Matthews. Gen. J. A. Smith, commanding the division at Nashville, reported that Granbury's brigade having constructed a redoubt at an important point of the line, "on the 15th the enemy made a formidable attempt on this position

by a direct assault, and at the same time by a flank movement came in its rear. This attempt was a disastrous failure, he having to retire in confusion, leaving many of his dead and wounded on the field. In this affair Granbury's brigade behaved with its habitual spirit and gallantry, its loss on this occasion being about 30 killed and wounded."

Ector's brigade, commanded by Col. David Coleman, was not at the battle of Franklin, but fought well at Nashville. General Walthall reported that it "did valuable service in holding the only passages through which many detachments of the army were able to reach the Franklin pike." The regimental commanders were: Ninth, Maj. J. H. McReynolds; Tenth, Col. C. R. Earp; Fourteenth, Capt. Robert H. Harkey; Thirty-second, Maj. W. H. Estes. It was one of the brigades, under Walthall, which co-operated with Forrest in protecting the rear of the army in the memorable retreat from Tennessee, December, 1864.

General Ross made a report covering the events of the campaign. At the outset the effective strength of his command was Third Texas cavalry, 218; Sixth, 218; Ninth, 110; Twenty-seventh (First legion), 140; total, 686. Approaching Lawrenceburg, Tenn., Ross took the advance, and the Third, dismounted, with two squadrons of the Legion, drove the enemy from his camp at that place. At Campbellsville they confronted Hatch's Federal division of cavalry. Lieut.-Col. J. S. Boggess dismounted the Third and moved to the front, and a battery was brought up, supported by Col. Jack Wharton's Sixth cavalry, and at the proper time the Ninth, Col. D. W. Jones, and the Legion, Col. E. R. Hawkins, made an impetuous charge, which scattered the enemy in confusion. With a loss of 5 wounded, the brigade captured 5 stand of colors, 84 men, and horses and cattle. On the 28th they had a spirited engagement on the Franklin pike, capturing many prisoners and part of the

Federal wagon train. During the next two days the Texans were dashing into the Federal trains, destroying bridges and creating great havoc. Of one of these actions General Ross said: "The gallant bearing of the Third and Ninth Texas on this occasion is deserving of special commendation, and it affords me much gratification to record to the honor of these noble regiments that charges made by them at the Harpeth river have never been and cannot be surpassed by cavalry of any nation." The Texans participated in the operations about Murfreesboro under Forrest, and after a desperate fight with an infantry regiment captured a railroad train loaded with supplies near that place. On the retreat of Hood's army the Sixth was distinguished in the check it administered to an overwhelming force of the enemy which would otherwise have overrun the entire division. At Sugar Creek, where a memorable fight was made, and successfully, to protect the Confederate retreat, Ector's infantry was supported by the Legion and Ninth cavalry. When the enemy advanced in a fog, the infantry charged and fired, and then the cavalry, passing through the infantry, "crossed the creek in the face of a terrible fire, overthrew all opposition on the other side, and pursued the thoroughly routed foe nearly a mile." The brigade lost 87 men during the campaign and captured and brought off 550 prisoners, 9 stand of colors, several hundred horses, and overcoats and blankets for the command, besides destroying 2 railroad trains of supplies and 40 or 50 wagons, etc.

#### BENTONVILLE.

In Gen. Joseph Wheeler's report of his operations harassing Sherman's march through Georgia, the Eighth and Eleventh Texas cavalry are mentioned with high praise. In his report of the battle of Bentonville, N. C., which practically ended the fighting career of the army of Tennessee, Gen. J. E. Johnston says "the Eighth



Texas cavalry distinguished itself" in the defeat of the Seventeenth Federal corps March 21st. General Hardee's son, a promising youth of sixteen, was mortally wounded while charging in the front rank of the Eighth Texas. In the organization under General Johnston, as reported April 9, 1865, the Sixth, Seventh, Tenth and Fifteenth infantry, and Seventeenth, Eighteenth, Twenty-fourth and Twenty-fifth dismounted cavalry were consolidated in one regiment, called the First Texas, under Lieut.-Col. William A. Ryan, and assigned to Govan's brigade, Hardee's corps. The Eighth and Eleventh cavalry were in the cavalry corps commanded by Lieut.-Gen. Wade Hampton. These organizations represented Texas when the army was surrendered at Greensboro.

#### BRIGADES OF ROSS AND ECTOR IN 1865.

By an order of Major-General Forrest, February 13, 1865, Gen. W. H. Jackson was ordered to consolidate and organize a division of cavalry, to be composed of three brigades, one of which was to be Ross' Texas brigade, to be commanded by Brig.-Gen. L. S. Ross, consisting of the Third, Sixth and Ninth Texas regiments, under Colonel Griffith, Eleventh and Seventeenth Arkansas consolidated, Willis' battalion and Cobb's scouts.

At the same time Ector's brigade, under Col. David Coleman, was in French's division, under General Maury, commanding at Mobile, and the Texas regiments were commanded, Ninth by Col. Miles A. Dillard, Tenth cavalry dismounted by Capt. Jacob Zeigler, Fourteenth cavalry dismounted by Lieut.-Col. Abram Harris, and the Thirty-second dismounted by Capt. Nathan Anderson. Douglas' battery, under Lieut. Ben Hardin, was on duty in the Mobile defenses. Ector's brigade shared in the gallant defense of Spanish Fort, being then commanded by Col. J. A. Andrews.

The remnants of the brigades of Ross and Ector came under the capitulation of Gen. Richard Taylor.

#### TRANS-MISSISSIPPI DEPARTMENT.

In the organization of the Trans-Mississippi department troops December 12, 1862, under Lieut.-Gen. T. H. Holmes, the first corps, under Maj.-Gen. T. C. Hindman, included in Douglas H. Cooper's brigade, largely Indian troops, the Texas regiments of De Morse and Lane, Randolph's cavalry battalion, and Howell's Texas battery. A Texas brigade, under Col. William R. Bradfute, was made up of the Twentieth cavalry, Col. Thomas C. Bass; Twenty-second, Col. J. G. Stevens; Thirty-fourth, Col. A. M. Alexander; and Col. G. W. Guess' cavalry battalion.

The second corps was made up of the division of Gen. H. E. McCulloch, Texas brigades of Young, Randal and Flournoy; and the division of Gen. T. J. Churchill, Texas brigades of Garland and Deshler, J. M. Hawes' brigade (composed of the Twelfth cavalry, Col. W. H. Parsons; Nineteenth, Col. N. M. Buford; Twenty-first, Col. G. W. Carter; and Chrisman's Arkansas battalion), Dunnington's Arkansas brigade, and White's Missouri brigade.

The Texans with Hindman were partly engaged in the battle of Prairie Grove, December 7, 1862. The Nineteenth and Twenty-first cavalry, in a brigade commanded by Colonel Carter, attached to Marmaduke's division, took part in the expedition into Missouri in April, 1863, and several officers and men fell in a skirmish at Taylor's creek, May 15th.

The battle of Honey Springs, Indian Territory, July 17, 1863, was fought by a Union force under Maj.-Gen. James G. Blunt, composed of Kansas, Colorado and Wisconsin troops, negroes and Indians, against a Confederate force under Brig.-Gen. Douglas H. Cooper, composed of the Texas regiments of Cols. Charles De Morse, L. M. Martin and T. C. Bass, Capt. L. E. Gillett's squadron,

John Scanland's squadron, Captain Lee's howitzer battery, and Cherokee and Choctaw troops. The Confederate loss was 134 killed and wounded. General Cooper particularly commended the bravery of De Morse's regiment, in support of Lee's battery, finally fighting hand to hand with clubbed muskets until the battery was withdrawn. Colonel De Morse was severely wounded, Capt. F. M. Hanks dangerously, and H. H. Molloy, of Bass' regiment, mortally. The officers commanding regiments and battalions were commended for bravery, and it appears from the Federal reports that the action was hotly contested. It was reported by General Blount that the Twentieth Texas took into action 300 men and lost all but 60. A Texas brigade composed of the Twenty-first cavalry, J. H. Pratt's battery, B. D. McKie's and C. L. Morgan's squadrons, all under Maj. B. D. Chenoweth, took an active part in the attack on Pine Bluff, Ark., October 25, 1863.

When on April 9, 1863, General Banks, in command at New Orleans, began his first Red River campaign by occupying Berwick City, General Taylor, at Camp Bisland, put the Texans at once to the front, sending Colonel Green's regiment, Fifth mounted volunteers, from Camp Bisland toward Berwick. Green skirmished, falling back before the Federal army, until the 12th and 13th, when a considerable engagement was fought at Fort Bisland, or Bethel's plantation, in which his regiment and Waller's battalion and the Valverde battery held the extreme right; Colonel Bagby's Seventh regiment, as skirmishers and sharpshooters at the front. In the repulse of the enemy on the 13th the services of Colonels Green and Bagby and their commands were specially noticed. Captain Sayers, commanding the Valverde battery, also conspicuous in the fight, was wounded. Colonel Bagby, though seriously wounded in the arm, remained on the field until the enemy was driven back. Colonel Reily with the Fourth regiment, meanwhile, was engaged near Franklin, where the

gallant colonel received a mortal wound and died on the field. In the subsequent retreat of Taylor to the Red river Colonel Green and the cavalry were in constant fighting as the rear guard. General Taylor referred to the lamented Reily as a gallant and chivalrous officer, whose loss was deeply regretted. Of Green he said: "To his zeal, vigilance and daring the extrication of our little army from its perilous position is indebted to a great extent. He has shown himself equal to every emergency, and to him and the officers and men of his command I feel proud to return my acknowledgments. In truth, he was the Ney of our retreat, and the shield and buckler of our little force." The staff officers of General Sibley, Lieutenant-Colonel Herbert, Major Ochiltree, chief-of-staff, and Major Robards, ordnance officer, were with General Taylor and were highly commended by him. Gen. Alfred Mouton, in his report of these operations, said: "I would particularly mention Col. A. P. Bagby, his regiment and the reinforcements sent him. Troops never acted with more gallantry, nor was ever such an overwhelming force longer held in check by a handful of heroes." He joined without reserve in the praise of General Green, to whom he assigned the command of the entire cavalry.

#### MILLIKEN'S BEND.

During the siege of Vicksburg a detachment of Maj. James Burnet's battalion of Texans, under his adjutant, Lieut. R. S. Dulin, took part in the capture of the Federal ram Indianola, and were mentioned first in the general order of congratulation by Gen. Richard Taylor.

Walker's Texas division having been ordered to the vicinity of Vicksburg, Gen. H. E. McCulloch's brigade was sent against the Federal forces at Milliken's Bend. He reported that in the fight which followed, June 7, 1863, Col. Richard Waterhouse and his regiment were particularly distinguished in a gallant charge, and Col. R. T. P. Allen's regiment and Colonel Fitzhugh's regiment



(under Lieut.-Col. E. P. Gregg) behaved with bravery. Colonel Allen was slightly wounded but never left his post. Lieutenant-Colonel Gregg and Maj. W. W. Dimond were badly wounded, but the regiment fought on under Capt. J. D. Woods. Col. George Flournoy's regiment drove the enemy from part of their works and held it, under fire of gunboats. Maj. R. D. Allen was in command of skirmishers. Capt. G. T. Marold and his company captured 19 negro soldiers, and Private A. Schultz, accidentally falling into the enemy's hands, shrewdly led a detachment of 50 into the Confederate lines. The loss of the brigade was 44 killed and 130 wounded. Lieuts. Thomas Beaver and B. W. Hampton were killed, and among the wounded were Capts. E. P. Petty, S. J. P. McDowell, and J. H. Tolbert, and Lieuts. T. H. Batsell, D. M. Waddill, G. A. Dickerman and James M. Tucker.

#### PLAQUEMINE TO BAYOU BOURBEAU.

For the relief of Port Hudson General Taylor made an advance in June, 1863, toward New Orleans, leading his main column by way of Bayou Teche, and sending another column, Col. James P. Major's Texas cavalry brigade, composed of the regiments of Joseph Phillips, W. P. Lane, B. W. Stone and C. L. Pyron, to cover the movement by a daring dash along the Mississippi down from Port Hudson. On the 18th Phillips made a dash into Plaquemine, took 87 prisoners and burned three steamers; and on the 20th Lane captured Thibodeaux, with 140 prisoners. On the 21st Pyron's regiment, 206 strong, attacked a force of 1,000 Federals at Lafourche crossing, and had won victory by an assault of unparalleled daring when Federal reinforcements compelled his withdrawal. Major then proceeded to Bayou Bœuf and took position to attack the Federal works. Gen. Tom Green, meanwhile, with his brigade, including the Fifth Texas, E. Waller's battalion, Fourth and Seventh, and Baylor's regiments,

and the Valverde and Nichols' batteries, invested Brashear City, a party of picked men, under the gallant Maj. Sherod Hunter, turning the works. Hunter reported that he charged the works on June 23d with 325 men, and after a fight in which he lost 3 killed and 18 wounded, and the enemy 86, the Federal force of 1,300 surrendered, with 11 cannon, 2,500 stand of small arms, and immense quantities of stores. Green then pushed on toward Bayou Boeuf, but before he could reach the place the Federal garrison, already invested by Major, surrendered, according to the report of Gen. Alfred Mouton, "to a scouting party under the command of General Green's daring scout, Leander McAnelly. The force consisted of 435 officers and men, with three siege guns, and one 12-pounder."

A few days later General Green marched on the strong Federal post at Donaldsonville, with the regiments of W. P. Hardeman, D. W. Shannon and P. T. Herbert, of his brigade, and those of Lane, Stone and Phillips, of Major's, and Semmes' battery. The assault was made early on June 28th. Major Shannon, with the Fifth, made a circuit of the fort and under fire of artillery and gunboats pushed his way down the Mississippi levee and into the fort. Colonel Phillips, according to Green's report, "at the head of the column under Colonel Major, with most of his men and officers, made an entrance into the fort with Shannon. Colonel Herbert, with the Seventh, enveloped the ditch as directed. The fight was desperately contested on every part of the ground. Colonel Hardeman, with the Fourth Texas, being unable to control his guide, was delayed in his attack on the stockade on the Lafourche side until nearly daylight, but his casualties show with what determined courage that veteran regiment stood its ground after it came into action."

After entering the stockade the men found a ditch that put a stop to their progress. "At this ditch the most desperate fight ensued between the commands of Shannon and Phillips and the enemy. Our men here used brick-

bats upon the heads of the enemy, who returned the same. Capt. Ira G. Killough, Lieut. W. S. Land, and officers and men, were wounded by these missiles. . . . We fought from 2 a. m. till daylight without intermission. . . . We mourn the fall of many of our bravest and best officers and men. Among the former are Major Shannon, Capt. D. H. Ragsdale, Lieuts. James A. Darby and James F. Cole, of the Fifth; Maj. Alonzo Ridley, of Phillips' regiment, and Lieut. N. D. Cartwright, of the Fourth. Colonel Major at the head of his column was wounded." The troops were withdrawn with a loss of 40 killed, 114 wounded, and 107 missing, out of about 800 engaged.

After this affair General Green sat down and watched Donaldsonville, while Major with several batteries stopped navigation on the river. The Federals sent down a large force by transports from Port Hudson, and on July 13th attacked Green and Major, near Donaldsonville. Major's brigade—Lane's, Stone's, Baylor's and Phillips' regiments—was commanded by Colonel Lane. Lieut.-Col. G. J. Hampton commanded Hardeman's regiment; Lieutenant-Colonel Herbert, Bagby's; Capt. H. A. McPhail, the Fourth, Fifth and Seventh Texas; and Lieut. Henry Angel fought one section of Gonzales' battery. The entire Texas force was about 1,500 men. Green did not have enough men to meet the entire Federal line, and he would not wait to be attacked, so he separated his force and struck each wing of the enemy. McPhail swept over the Federal artillery, killing most of the gunners, and Hampton and Herbert drove in the right wing and center. Though frequently rallying, the enemy was driven 4 miles, to the protection of the fort, with a loss of over 500 killed and wounded, and three pieces of artillery. "The whole of the battle," said Green, "was a succession of charges, and I have never before witnessed such determined valor as was displayed by our troops. They frequently charged upon the enemy in line of battle, and delivered their fire upon them at 25 paces, with the cool-

ness of veterans." Our loss did not exceed 3 killed and 30 wounded. The Federal reports show that 10 regiments were engaged, mostly from New York and Massachusetts, and their loss is put at 263 killed and wounded, and 186 captured.

On September 29th, General Green, crossing the Atchafalaya, attacked a force at Fordoche, consisting of the Nineteenth Iowa and Twenty-sixth Indiana, and a battery, and after a severe fight captured 462 officers and men, the battery, and everything else but the cavalry. Lieut.-Col. J. E. Harrison, commanding Spaight's brigade, Cols. J. W. Spaight, F. H. Clack and Maj. John W. Daniel, commanding regiments, and Lieut. John B. Jones, adjutant-general of the brigade, were commended by General Green, who said that the men of the brigade, of whom many had never before been in action, moved against the enemy like veterans. The commands of Maj. H. H. Boone and L. C. Rountree were distinguished in cavalry charges, and Lieut. W. F. Spivey, of the latter battalion, was among the killed. Col. A. P. Bagby was distinguished in command of Green's brigade. Spaight's brigade lost 23 killed and 74 wounded, the main part of the Confederate casualties.

In October Maj.-Gen. W. B. Franklin led a formidable force into the Teche country of Louisiana, composed of the Thirteenth and Nineteenth Federal army corps, a cavalry division and artillery. After a series of cavalry skirmishes in which the Texans were distinguished, the enemy retreated, and General Green, following, attacked his rear guard on November 3d, at Bayou Bourbeau, and won a signal victory. General Green's force engaged (all Texans) consisted of the Eleventh infantry, Col. O. M. Roberts; Fifteenth infantry, Lieutenant-Colonel Harrison; Eighteenth infantry, Col. W. H. King; Lane's cavalry, Maj. W. P. Saufley; Madison's cavalry, Col. George T. Madison; Stone's cavalry, Lieut.-Col. Isham Chisum; Fourth cavalry, Colonel Hardeman; Fifth



cavalry, Col. H. C. McNeill; Seventh cavalry, Lieut.-Col. P. T. Herbert; Waller's battalion, Capt. W. A. McDade; section Daniel's battery, Lieut. S. M. Hamilton. The infantry was under command of Colonel Roberts, and constituted the right wing of the battle line; Major's brigade was on the right, and Bagby's in the center. Roberts began the attack and pushed steadily forward under a terrific fire of artillery and musketry; the cavalry under Major charged on the right, and "Colonel Bagby with Herbert's regiment and Waller's battalion, mounted, and Hardeman's and McNeill's regiments, dismounted, charged them in front, the cavalry making, on a partially concealed foe, the most brilliant charge on record. Our gallant infantry under their brave officers had given the enemy such a chastisement on his right flank," said General Green in his report, "that the whole Federal force gave way as soon as the engagement became general and close." Nearly all the losses in the fight were sustained by Roberts' infantry.

Gen. Richard Taylor, in reporting this battle, said: "Too much praise cannot be given to General Green and the troops engaged. The exact moment when a heavy blow could be given was seized in a masterly manner. I have so frequently had occasion to commend the conduct of General Green, that I have nothing to add in his praise, except that he has surpassed my expectations, which I did not think possible. . . . He is now commanding a division, and I respectfully urge that he be promoted." General Taylor also warmly urged the promotion of Colonel Major, who had shown "marked energy and ability."

#### MANSFIELD AND PLEASANT HILL.

A fight preliminary to the battle of Mansfield, La., in which Texans were engaged, on April 2, 1864, is described by General Taylor. Colonel Debray, with his regiment and two batteries, had been ordered from Many to Mansfield. While marching on a cross-road he suddenly encoun-

tered the enemy in superior force. "Like a gallant veteran he made fight at once, returned to the direct road, and fell back until he met my infantry, coming in in fine order, and protecting his two batteries and trains, although pursued until he joined me. Colonel Debray lost several killed and wounded. Considering the suddenness of the attack, and the fact that his regiment had never before been in action, this officer as well as his troops deserves great credit. At the same hour Colonel Bagby, commanding his own, McNeill's and some companies of Bush's newly-raised regiment, with a section of the Valverde battery, was attacked on the Natchitoches road by cavalry, infantry and artillery. He fell back slowly toward Pleasant Hill, skirmishing briskly. Colonel Bagby lost some 25 or 30 killed and wounded, and inflicted probably more loss on the enemy. His conduct was, as always, that of a brave and skillful soldier."

The following quotations from the report of Maj.-Gen. Richard Taylor describe the part taken by Texans in the victories at Mansfield and Pleasant Hill, April 8 and 9, 1864:

In the morning of the 8th, I moved down to the position selected for the troops. Walker's division occupied the right of the road, facing Pleasant Hill; Buchel's and Terrell's regiments of cavalry, under Brigadier-General Bee, on its right; Mouton's division on the left of the road, with Major's division of cavalry, consisting of his own and Bagby's brigades (dismounted), on Mouton's left. Debray's regiment of cavalry was held in the road a little to the rear. Haldeman's and Daniel's batteries were on the right in position with Walker's division, Cornay's and Nettles' with Mouton's division. McMahan's battery, which had been in front with the cavalry advance, relieving the Valverde, was withdrawn to the rear and held with the reserve artillery, the wooded condition of the country offering no field for the employment of many guns. My line of battle was in the edge of a wood, with cleared fields in front on both sides of the Pleasant Hill road, the clearing about 1,000 yards in extent. Soon after

the troops were in position our cavalry was rapidly driven in and assumed the positions above described. On the left a body of the enemy's cavalry, following hard upon ours, ran into the line of the Eighteenth Louisiana and was destroyed. The enemy formed his line in the woods on the opposite side of the cleared fields, and some light skirmishing took place. I soon found that the enemy was weakening his left and massing on his right to turn me. I at once brought Terrell's regiment of cavalry to the left to reinforce Major, and Randal's brigade, of Walker's division, from the right to the left of the road to strengthen Mouton's, causing the whole line to gain ground to the left to meet the attack. These movements were masked by throwing forward skirmishers toward the enemy and deploying Debray's regiment of cavalry in the open fields on both sides of the road. It was not until 4 p. m. that these changes were completed, when, becoming impatient at the delay of the enemy in developing his attack, and suspecting that his arrangements were not complete, I ordered Mouton to open the attack from the left. [In the charge which followed, Lieutenant-Colonel Noble, Seventeenth Texas, was wounded.] . . . . .

Major, with his division, consisting of his brigade under Colonel Lane, Bagby's brigade, Vincent's brigade of Louisiana cavalry, reinforced by Terrell's regiment drawn from the right, dismounted his men on Mouton's left and kept pace with his advance, forcing back and turning the enemy's right. Randal supported Mouton's attack by advancing his regiment en echelon from the left. In vigor, energy and daring Randal surpassed my expectations, high as they were of him and his fine brigade. These movements on the left of the road to Pleasant Hill were under the immediate direction of Maj.-Gen. Thomas Green, who displayed the high qualities which have distinguished him on so many fields. As soon as the left attack was well developed I ordered Major-General Walker to move Waul's and Scurry's brigades into action, directing General Bee, on his right, to press on with Debray's and Buchel's cavalry to gain the enemy's rear. Believing my right outflanked by the enemy, General Walker was instructed to throw forward Scurry to turn his left and gain a position on the high road beyond the main line of battle. The dense wood through which Bee advanced prevented him from gaining much ground, but the gal-

lantry and vigor with which that accomplished soldier (Walker) led his fine brigades into action and pressed on the foe have never been surpassed. Until he was disabled by a painful wound on the following day, every hour but illustrated his power for command. The enemy in vain formed new lines of battle on the wooded ridges, which are a feature of the country. Every line was swept away as soon as formed, and every gun taken as soon as put in position. For 5 miles the enemy was driven rapidly and steadily. Here the Thirteenth corps gave way entirely and was replaced by the Nineteenth, hurriedly brought up to support the fight. The Nineteenth corps, though fresh, shared the fate of the Thirteenth. Nothing could arrest the astonishing ardor and courage of our troops. Green, Polignac, Major, Bagby and Randal on the left, Walker, Bee, Scurry and Waul on the right, swept all before them. Just as night was closing in the enemy massed heavily on a ridge overlooking a small creek. As the water was important to both parties, I ordered the enemy driven from it. The fighting was severe for a time, but Walker, Green and other gallant leaders led on our tired men, and we camped on the creek as night fell, the enemy forced back some 400 yards beyond. The conduct of our troops was beyond all praise. There was no straggling, no plundering. The vast captured property was quietly taken to Mansfield and turned over, untouched, to the proper officers. . . . .

[Next day Green, commanding the cavalry corps, was pushed forward and found the enemy posted a mile in advance of Pleasant Hill. It was late in the afternoon before the infantry came up to open the second battle.] . . . At about 5 p. m. Churchill and Parsons opened on the right and Walker commenced his advance in support. Just then our fire overpowered the enemy's battery, in front of the Mansfield road, and disabled his guns, which were removed to the rear. The confusion and movement incident to this, coupled with the sound of Churchill's and Parsons' attack, led General Green naturally to suppose that the time for Bee's charge had arrived. Bee led forward Debray's and Buchel's fine regiments in most gallant style across the fields and up the opposite slope, where he was stopped by a close and deadly fire of musketry from the dense woods on either side of the road. Bee was struck, Buchel mortally wounded, and Debray



and Major Menard, of the same regiment, struck. Many a gallant horseman went down. Bee drew back, himself retiring last. The charge failed for a time, but the gallantry displayed by Bee, Debray, Buchel, Menard and others produced its effect upon the enemy.

During this time Walker had led his splendid division across the field and was fully engaged in the opposite wood, and Major had swept around to the left with his dismounted cavalry of Bagby's and his own brigade, under Colonel Terrell (severely wounded in the fight), cleared the wood to the left, and seized and held the position occupied by the enemy's battery in the commencement of the engagement. The stubborn resistance offered by the enemy along the whole line soon convinced me that he had received reinforcements of fresh troops, and I ordered forward Polignac. Just then information reached me that Major-General Walker was wounded. Galloping to the spot I found that he had received a severe contusion in the groin, and ordered him to quit the field, which he did most reluctantly. His wound was a great misfortune. The continuity of our line was lost, as I could not for some time find either of his brigade commanders, all of whom were hotly engaged within the pine thicket in front. . . .

Brigadier-General Scurry, commanding the right brigade of Walker's division, behaved most nobly, and speaks highly of Colonel Waterhouse, commanding one of his regiments. General Scurry was slightly wounded in the engagement. The efforts of these leaders prevented the confusion on the right from becoming disastrous. Meantime the fighting on the left and center was close and fierce. The fresh troops of the Sixteenth and Seventeenth corps held their ground manfully. The dense woods prevented a view of the field, and the continuity of our line was lost. An idea prevailed that we were firing on each other. Green, Polignac, Major, Randal and Gray, with their respective staffs, rallied the troops and led them again and again into action, and the men by their conduct showed themselves worthy of such leaders. At nightfall I withdrew the troops to prevent the additional confusion incident to darkness and formed line in the open field. The men fell in at once, and animated by their noble leaders, brought order and confidence to the ranks. Brigadier-General Waul withdrew from the wood, where he

had been hotly engaged, in fine style, and showed the coolness of a veteran. . . .

[After Banks' army withdrew] Bee, with part of Major's and Buchel's and Debray's regiments, of his own command, was pursuing the enemy toward Natchitoches. Green was at Pleasant Hill directing generally the operations of the cavalry in front. Wood's and Gould's regiments, and portions of Parsons' brigade, which had reached Mansfield from Texas on the evening of the 9th and morning of the 10th with Terrell's regiment, which had been returned to Mansfield from Pleasant Hill to forage, all being cavalry, were pushed down to Green on the 10th and early on the 11th. Nettles', J. A. A. West's, McMahan's, and Moseley's batteries were also sent down, and General Green was informed of the position and movements of the fleet. The importance of reaching Blair's landing in advance of the fleet was impressed upon him. Green with his usual energy marched from Pleasant Hill for Blair's landing at 6 p. m. of the 11th. The same difficulty which met Bagby in the passage of the Bayou Pierre, namely, the want of a pontoon—which reference to my correspondence with the department headquarters will show I had long before asked for—seriously delayed Green's movement. He, however, reached the river at and below Blair's landing on the 12th, with Wood's, Gould's and Parsons' commands, and engaged the fleet. The loss inflicted upon the crowded transports of the enemy was terrible. Several times the transports raised the white flag, but the gunboats, protected by their plating, kept up the heavy fire and compelled our troops to renew the punishment on the transports. Many times our sharpshooters forced the gunboats to close their portholes, and it is believed the result would have been the capture of the whole fleet but for the unfortunate fall of the noble Green, killed by a discharge of grape from one of the gunboats.

Gen. Hamilton P. Bee, who had brought to the field from Columbus, Tex., the cavalry regiments of Debray, Buchel and Terrell, was in command at the front previous to the battle of Mansfield, with his cavalry delaying the advance of the enemy. During the battle he was assigned to command of cavalry on the right. Covering the right of

Walker's Texas infantry, Bee's cavalry finally mingled with the infantry, engaged the fresh troops of the Federal Thirteenth corps, 10,000 strong, and defeated them in an engagement which General Bee called "the battle of Peach Orchard, being a separate and distinct action from Mansfield." He acknowledged the gallant support of Colonel Randal, commanding brigade, and Col. Edward Clark, commanding regiment. "Captain Lane, of Debray's regiment, with his company, gallantly charged the enemy to draw their fire, preparatory to a combined charge by our infantry, with loss of Lieutenant Willis and a third of his company destroyed. Captain Borden, of Buchel's regiment, was severely wounded."

It was Colonels Buchel and Hardeman who reconnoitered the Federal line before Pleasant Hill next day. In the afternoon Bee was ordered by General Green to charge with all the cavalry, and he says, "I at once moved with Debray's and Buchel's regiments that were formed in the road, ordering the other cavalry regiments to follow, and in column of fours moved rapidly across the space intervening between the two armies; but before the order was given to deploy and charge, the command was literally swept away by a cross-fire at close range from an enemy concealed behind a string of fence perpendicular to the enemy's line of battle. . . . What was left of Debray's gallant regiment succeeded in returning to our lines, with a loss of one-third their number. I had two horses shot under me. Colonel Debray was injured by the fall of his horse, which was killed. Colonel Buchel . . . drew back in time to avoid the fire of the ambuscade, passed to the left, dismounted his men, and drove the enemy from their ambuscade." Here the brave Buchel was mortally wounded, and two days later, said Bee, "the brave colonel died at my headquarters, a brilliant soldier of Prussia, and an irreparable loss to our cause and his adopted country." After the fall of General Green, General Bee assumed command of the cavalry corps until Gen. John A.

Wharton was assigned to that duty. At Monett's Ferry, April 23d, with his division and General Major's division (including Bagby's and Debray's brigades), in all about 2,000 men, he was assailed by nearly the entire army of General Banks, and after a stubborn fight fell back to Beasley's.

The report of Col. George W. Baylor, Second Arizona cavalry, commanding Major's brigade (Major commanding division), gives details of great interest. He described the gallant service of his brigade, under Colonel Lane—Madison's, Lane's and Chisum's regiments and his own—on April 7th, when Lieuts. W. T. Brown and F. B. Chilton, of his regiment, were wounded, the former mortally. In the first action of the brigade on the 8th, when they fought dismounted, they captured a battery, but lost heavily, Lieut. G. E. Rottenstein falling gallantly at the head of his company. Here Colonel Lane was wounded and Baylor took command of the brigade. He and his men had a hot and close fight in driving back the Federal ambuscade at Pleasant Hill, Lieutenant English, adjutant of Madison's regiment, being among the killed. Colonel Baylor heartily commended the dashing, fiery courage of Colonel Madison, and the heroism of Colonels Lane, Chisum, Crump and Mullen. Among the killed at Monett's Ferry he mentioned with an affectionate tribute Chaplain B. F. Ellison, of Madison's regiment, who fell mortally wounded, fighting in the front rank. When the first gun was fired in defense of Southern liberty he had started on foot from Los Angeles, Cal., to join in the struggle. On the 28th Baylor's command supported Hardeman's in a successful fight at Bayou Rapides. On May 1st the brigade was ordered to Wilson's landing, on Red river, where the enemy's transports were constantly passing. Before West's battery could be brought up, Chisum's regiment, under Captain Wilson, and Lieutenant Smith's Arizona scouts chased and captured one transport. Although driven thence to Marksville, Gen-



eral Major's Texans continued to interfere with the transports. On May 3d, West's battery, under Lieutenant Yoist, and Hardeman's brigade captured the *City Belle*, with part of an Ohio regiment on board. On the 5th, attacked by two gunboats, the Texans, under Baylor, Madison, Major Saufley and Lieutenant-Colonel Mullen, burned one gunboat and captured the other and a transport. Among the wounded on May 3d, was Capt. J. W. Thompson, of Lane's regiment. On the 13th and 15th the Texas cavalry were engaged with the advance of the Federal army, near Mansura. Here Captain McKee, of Madison's regiment, was mortally wounded. On the 18th was fought the battle of Yellow Bayou, where the Texans suffered heavy loss in attacking the Federal rear guard.

#### JENKINS' FERRY AND POISON SPRING.

Brig.-Gen. Thomas N. Maul, reporting the action of his brigade at Jenkins' Ferry, said that his men marched through rain and mud, to the sound of battle, and went into the fight when General Price's troops were being withdrawn from the field. The brigade advanced against the enemy's strong position, under a continuous and destructive fire. "In a few minutes the increased and rapid discharge of small arms satisfied me that the other two brigades of Walker's division were approaching and warmly engaging the enemy's left. Forming upon my right in the woods we immediately prepared to charge along the whole line. In a very short time, and before the command could be executed, Generals Scurry and Randal fell mortally wounded, and were borne from the field." The resulting confusion prevented further advance. General Maul especially commended the skill and courage of Col. Overton Young, also distinguished at Mansfield and Pleasant Hill; of Col. Washington L. Crawford, of General Price's staff; and of Colonel Watson, of the Eighteenth Texas, who was killed, and Surgeon Edward Randall, wounded.

The battle of Poison Spring, April 18, 1864, was fought by the divisions of Marmaduke, Cabell and Maxey. The latter, brought by Maxey from Indian Territory, was composed of Gano's Texas brigade, under Col. Charles De Morse; Walker's Choctaw brigade, under Col. Tandy Walker; and Capt. W. B. Krumbhaar's battery. General Maxey was in command on the field. The Texans and their comrades were victorious. "To the indomitable energy of Captain Krumbhaar in carrying his battery over ground almost impassable and the subsequent working of his battery," said General Maxey, "much of the success of his division was due. The Texas brigade did its whole duty, fighting as Texans know how to fight." Colonel De Morse, commanding the brigade in battle, reported that he had 655 men, including Krumbhaar's battery, Twenty-ninth Texas cavalry, Maj. J. A. Carroll; Thirtieth, Lieut.-Col. N. W. Battle; Thirty-first, Maj. M. Looscan; Captain Welch's company, Lieutenant Gano. Colonel De Morse warmly commended the services of the officers, and reported that the men behaved with great coolness, "firing as though hunting squirrels." The entire loss of the brigade was 3 killed and 28 wounded, among the latter Major Davenport and Lieutenants Gano and Hoffman.

#### ARMY OF NORTHERN VIRGINIA.

##### WEST POINT.

The first engagement of Hood's Texas brigade in 1862 was at West Point, Va., May 7th, opposing the landing of Franklin's Federal division. General Whiting, commanding a Confederate division, reported that his line, composed of three Texas regiments, supported by other troops, "had driven the enemy fairly before it for over 1½ miles through a very dense forest, in which it was impossible to see over 30 or 40 yards. The coherence, discipline and bravery of the troops were conspicuous."

General Hood reported that the Fifth Texas, under Col. J. J. Archer, was first sent out on the skirmish line, driving the enemy, and he followed with Col. John Marshall's Fourth Texas, Col. A. T. Rainey's First, Wofford's Georgia regiment, and Balthis' battery. As the enemy was reached, the Fourth Texas was thrown forward as skirmishers, supported by the First, and they so advanced with Archer on the right. Forty prisoners were captured and 84 stand of arms, Hood losing 8 killed and 29 wounded. He said, "My attention was particularly called to the great gallantry of Captain Decatur, of the First Texas, who fell under the heavy fire upon the flank of his regiment." The brigade comrades of the Texans were the Eighteenth Georgia and Hampton's South Carolina legion.

#### GAINES' MILL.

In the battles before Richmond the brigade fought with Whiting's division temporarily attached to Jackson's corps. The battle of Gaines' Mill, June 27, 1862, was one of the most important of the series. General Whiting reported that the field where his command entered it was about the head of a ravine, which covered the enemy's left near the main road, a deep and steep chasm, dividing the bluffs of the Chickahominy. "On the left side of this, as we fronted, General Hood put forward the First Texas and Hampton's legion. Men were leaving the field in every direction and in great disorder. . . . The First Texas was ordered to go over them or through them, which they did; the remaining Texas regiments were rapidly advanced, forming line on the right of the ravine, and the Third brigade again on their right, and pressing on, the whole line came under the enemy's fire. . . . The enemy, concealed in the woods and protected by the ravine, poured a destructive fire upon the advancing line for a quarter of a mile, and many brave officers and men fell. . . . The Texans had now come up and

joined line on the left, led by General Hood and the gallant Fourth at the double-quick, and the whole line . . . charged the ravine with a yell, General Hood and Colonel Law gallantly leading their men. At the bottom ran a deep and difficult branch, with scarped sides, answering admirably as a ditch. Over against this was a strong log breastwork, heavily manned; above this, on the crest, another breastwork, supported by well-served batteries; and a heavy body of timber, concealing the enemy, but affording full view of our movements. Spite of these terrible obstacles, over ditch and breastwork, hill, batteries and infantry, the division swept routing the enemy from their stronghold. Many pieces of artillery were taken, fourteen in all, and nearly a whole regiment of the enemy. These prisoners were turned over by Col. J. B. Robertson, Fifth Texas, to Brigadier-General Pryor or some of his staff. . . .

"I take pleasure in calling special attention to the Fourth Texas regiment, which, led by Brigadier-General Hood, was the first to break the enemy's line and enter his works. Its brave old colonel (Marshall) fell early in the charge on the hither side of the ravine. . . . Colonel Rainey, First Texas, though seriously ill, joined his command on the field, and fell severely wounded. Col. John Marshall was shot dead, and the lieutenant-colonel (Bradfute Warwick) mortally wounded. Lieutenant-Colonel Robertson of the Fifth was wounded." The loss in killed and wounded was reported as 13 and 62 in the Fifth Texas; 44 and 206 in the Fourth, and 14 and 64 in the First. Said General Hood in his report: "The guns were captured by the Fourth Texas and Eighth Georgia, and a regiment was taken prisoners by the Fifth Texas. . . . Among those who fell, killed or mortally wounded, were Col. John Marshall, Lieut.-Col. B. Warwick, Capts. E. D. Ryan, J. W. Hutcheson, P. P. Porter and T. M. Owens, acting commissary of subsistence. Lieuts. R. J. Lambert, C. Reich, D. L. Butts,



L. P. Lyons, and T. H. Hollamon, of the Fourth Texas; Lieuts. J. E. Clute and W. G. Wallace, of the Fifth; Capt. B. F. Benton, of the First, and Major Key and Colonels Rainey and Robertson were severely wounded. . . . All the field officers of the Fourth being killed or wounded, the command of the regiment devolved upon Capt. W. P. Townsend (now major), who led it most gallantly." At Malvern Hill the brigade lost 37 more from its depleted ranks.

#### SECOND MANASSAS.

In the next campaign, that of Second Manassas, General Hood was in command of Whiting's division, assigned to Longstreet's corps. On August 22d his command drove the enemy across the Rappahannock at Freeman's ford, "During the engagement Maj. D. M. Whaley, Fifth Texas, fell, gallantly discharging his duties." Beyond Thor- oughfare gap the command marched forward on August 29th, "Lieutenant-Colonel Upton, of the Fifth Texas, in command of a party of select Texas riflemen, constituting the advance guard. Coming up with the rear guard of the enemy before sunrise, this gallant and distinguished officer drove them before him so rapidly that halts would have to be made for the troops in rear to rest." On approaching the enemy engaging General Jackson, "the Texas brigade advanced in line of battle down and on the immediate right of the pike leading to the stone bridge." At sunset the Texans and Law's brigade charged the enemy, driving them in confusion. The Texans captured three stand of colors. At 4 o'clock in the afternoon of the 30th, the Texans again advanced on the right of the pike, and "within 150 yards after leaving their position the Texas brigade became engaged with a heavy force of the enemy, but with their usual daring and enthusiasm, they charged gallantly on, driving a largely superior force a distance of 1½ mile, causing terrible slaughter in their ranks, and cap-

turing a battery of four guns crowning the heights near the Chinn house. . . . Many gallant officers and men fell upon this memorable field, and our country has cause to regret the loss of none of her sons more than that of Lieut.-Col. John C. Upton, Fifth Texas. Maj. W. P. Townsend, of the Fourth, and Capt. K. Bryan, acting major of the Fifth, fell severely wounded while nobly discharging their duties. Of the different regimental commanders too much cannot be said. Col. J. B. Robertson, Fifth Texas, was wounded while directing his regiment far in advance of the crest of the hill, when the brigade was ordered to halt. Lieut.-Col. B. F. Carter, commanding the Fourth, Lieut.-Col. P. A. Work, First, although not wounded, were conspicuous upon this hotly-contested field. After all the field and acting field officers of the Fifth Texas had fallen, Capt. I. N. M. Turner gallantly led that regiment through." According to Surgeon Guild's report the loss of the Texas regiments at Manassas plains was: First regiment, 10 killed and 18 wounded; Fifth, 15 and 224; Fourth, 22 and 77. Lieut.-Col. B. F. Carter, Fourth, reported Lieuts. C. E. Jones and T. J. Johnson, killed; and Capts. D. U. Barziza, James T. Hunter, and Lieuts. M. C. Holmes and A. D. Jeffries, wounded. Color-Sergeant Francis fell severely wounded in front of the regiment, and the flag was then borne by Color-Corporal Parker. Col. J. B. Robertson reported that the flag of the Fifth was borne successively by Color-Sergeant W. V. Royston, Corporal J. Miller, Private C. Moncrieff, Private Shepherd, Sergeant Simpson, Private J. Harris, and Sergt. F. C. Hume, all of whom were shot down, when it went into the hands of Private Farthing. He gave his loss as 15 killed, wounded 245, missing 1, and reported the capture of three stand of colors and two batteries. The report of Capt. K. Bryan directed special attention to Capt. J. S. Cleveland, among others, who fell with a dangerous wound in the neck after gallant service. He had com-

mand of the regiment after Cleveland was wounded, and when he was himself struck he turned the command over to Turner.

#### SHARPSBURG.

At the battle of Sharpsburg, Md., the Texas brigade was commanded by Colonel Wofford, of the Georgia regiment, who reported that the brigade took position on the Confederate left, near Mumma church, on the evening of September 15th, and being under artillery fire at that time, the Fourth lost Lieut. N. J. Mills, severely wounded, and one private. On the evening of the 16th they were moved to the left and front of the church and formed, with a cornfield in their front. During that evening Captain Turner, with the Fifth, and Capt. W. H. Martin, with a detachment of the Fourth, were engaged in skirmishing. On the 17th the brigade advanced toward the cornfield and engaged in a desperate fight. Hood reported that this was "the most terrible clash of arms, by far, that had occurred during the war." "The two little giant brigades (Hood's and Law's) wrestled with the mighty force of the enemy, losing hundreds of their gallant officers and men, but driving the enemy from his position and forcing him to abandon his guns on our left." Said Wofford: "This brigade went into action numbering 854, and lost in killed, wounded and missing 560, over one-half." Among the officers killed were Major Dale, First Texas, who fell in the thickest of the fight, and Lieuts. F. L. Hoffman, P. Runnells, J. Waterhouse, S. F. Patton and G. B. Thompson, of the First. Colonel Work reported that the First took into action an aggregate of 226, of whom 170 were known to have been killed or wounded, and 12 (missing) supposed to be. He saw four bearers of the State colors shot down—John Hanson, James Day, Charles H. Kingsley and James K. Malone. Then other men upheld the flag, four more of whom were shot down. Carter, of the Fourth, reported

Lieuts. L. P. Hughes, A. J. McKean, H. M. Marchant, J. T. McLaurin, J. C. Billingsley and John Roach, mostly commanding companies, wounded. Color-bearer Parker was severely wounded and left on the field, and the flag was then borne by Captain Darden. He carried into action 200 men and lost 10 killed and 97 wounded. Captain Turner, of the Fifth, reported 5 killed and 81 wounded.

On November 14, 1862, it appeared from the report of the adjutant-general of the army that two-thirds of the three Texas regiments were badly clothed and shod, and 180 were barefooted. At the battle of Fredericksburg the brigade was not engaged, but lost 1 killed and 5 wounded. It was now under the command of J. B. Robertson, promoted to brigadier-general, and the First was commanded by Colonel Rainey, the Fourth by Col. J. C. G. Key, and the Fifth by Col. R. M. Powell. Brigaded with them now was Van H. Manning's Third Arkansas, their comrades during the remainder of the war. During the spring of 1863 they were engaged in the Suffolk campaign in Southeast Virginia.

#### GETTYSBURG.

At the battle of Gettysburg the Texans went into battle late in the afternoon of the 2d of July, advancing across fields intersected with stone and rail fences, over the valley and up to the slopes of Round Top. General Robertson reported as follows:

As we approached the base of the mountain, General Law moved to the right, and I was moving obliquely to the right to close on him, when my whole line encountered the fire of the enemy's main line, posted behind rocks and a stone fence. The Fourth and Fifth Texas regiments, under the direction of their gallant commanders (Colonels Powell and Key), while returning the fire and driving the enemy before them, continued to close on General Law, to their right. At the same time, the First Texas and Third Arkansas, under their gallant



commanders (Lieut.-Col. P. A. Work and Colonel Manning), were hotly engaged with a very superior force, while at the same time a heavy force appeared and opened fire on Colonel Manning's left, seriously threatening his left flank, to meet which he threw two or three companies with their front to his left flank and protected his left.

On discovering this heavy force on my left flank, and seeing that no attack was being made by any of our forces on my left, I at once sent a courier to Major-General Hood stating that I was hard pressed on my left, that General McLaw's forces were not engaging the enemy to my left (which enabled him to move fresh troops from that part of his line down on me), and that I must have reinforcements. Lieutenant-Colonel Work, with the First Texas regiment, having pressed forward to the crest of the hill and driven the enemy from his battery, I ordered him to the left, to the relief and support of Colonel Manning, directing Maj. F. S. Bass with two companies to hold the hill, while Colonel Work with the rest of the regiment went to Colonel Manning's relief. With this assistance, Colonel Manning drove the enemy back, and entered the woods after him, when the enemy reoccupied the hill and his batteries in Colonel Work's front, from which Colonel Work again drove him.

For an hour and upward, these two regiments maintained one of the hottest contests, against five or six times their number, that I have witnessed. The moving of Colonel Work to the left, to relieve Colonel Manning while the Fourth and Fifth Texas were closing to the right on General Law's brigade, separated these two regiments from the others. They were steadily moving to the right and front, driving the enemy before them, when they passed the woods or ravine to my right. After finding that I could not move the First and Third to the right to join them, I sent to recall them, ordering them to move to the left until the left of the Fourth should rest on the right of the First; but my messenger found two of General Law's regiments on the left of my two (the Fourth and Fifth Texas), and did not find these regiments at all.

About this time my aide, Lieutenant Scott, reported my two regiments (the Fourth and Fifth Texas) in the center of General Law's brigade, and that they could not

be moved without greatly injuring his line. I sent a request to General Law to look to them. At this point, my assistant adjutant and inspector-general reported from the Fourth and Fifth that they were hotly engaged and wanted reinforcements. My courier, sent to General Hood, returned and reported him wounded and carried from the field. I sent a messenger to Lieutenant-General Longstreet for reinforcements, and at the same time sent to Gens. George T. Anderson and Benning, urging them to hurry up to my support. They came up, joined us, and fought gallantly, but as fast as we would break one line of the enemy, another fresh one would present itself, the enemy reinforcing his lines on our front from his reserves at the base of the mountain to our right and front, and from his lines to our left. Having no attack from us in front, he threw his forces from there on us.

Before the arrival of Generals Anderson and Benning, Col. J. C. G. Key, who gallantly led the Fourth Texas regiment in, up to the time of receiving a severe wound, passed me, being led to the rear. About the same time I learned of the fall and dangerous wounding of Col. R. M. Powell, of the Fifth, who fell while gallantly leading his regiment in one of the impetuous charges of the Fourth and Fifth Texas on the fortified mountain. Just after the arrival of General Anderson on my left, I learned that the gallant Col. Van H. Manning, of the Third Arkansas, had been wounded and carried from the field, and about the same time I received intelligence of the wounding and being carried from the field of those two able and efficient officers, Lieut.-Cols. K. Bryan, of the Fifth, and B. F. Carter, of the Fourth, both of whom were wounded while bravely discharging their duty. Capt. J. R. Woodard, acting major of the First Texas, was wounded near me while gallantly discharging his duty.

The Fourth and Fifth Texas, under the command of Majs. J. P. Bane and J. C. Rogers, continued to hold the ground of their original line, leaving the space over which they had made their successive discharges strewn with their wounded and dead comrades, many of whom could not be removed, and were left upon the field. The First Texas, under Lieutenant-Colonel Work, with a portion of Benning's brigade, held the field and the batteries taken by the First Texas. Three of the guns were brought off

the field and secured; the other three, from the nature of the ground and their proximity to the enemy, were left. The Third Arkansas, under the command of Lieut.-Col. R. S. Taylor, ably assisted by Maj. J. W. Reedy, after Colonel Manning was borne from the field, sustained well the high character it made in the earlier part of the action. When night closed the conflict, late in the evening, I was struck above the knee, which deprived me of the use of my leg, and prevented me from getting about the field. I retired some 200 yards to the rear, leaving the immediate command with Lieutenant-Colonel Work, the senior officer present, under whose supervision our wounded were brought out and guns secured, and our dead on that part of the field were buried the next day.

About 2 o'clock that night, the First Texas and Third Arkansas were moved by the right to the position occupied by the Fourth and Fifth, and formed on their left, where the brigade remained during the day of the 3d, keeping up a continuous skirmishing with the enemy's sharpshooters, in which we had a number of our men severely wounded. I sent my assistant adjutant-general, Capt. F. L. Price, at daybreak to examine the position of the brigade, and report to me as soon as he could, and, while in the discharge of that duty, was either killed or fell into the hands of the enemy, as he has not been seen nor heard of since.

About dark on the evening of the 3d, the brigade, with the division, fell back to the hill and formed in line, where it remained during the 4th. Lieut. J. R. Loughridge, commanding Company I, Fourth Texas, who commanded the skirmishers in front of the Fourth, and who was left when that regiment moved to the right, joined the First Texas, and did gallant service during the engagement. In this, the hardest-fought battle of the war in which I have been engaged, all, both officers and men, as far as my observation extended, fully sustained the high character they have heretofore made. Where all behaved so nobly, individual distinction cannot with propriety be made.

Col. P. A. Work, First Texas, reported that early in the action the gallant Lieut. B. A. Campbell was killed. "Late in the evening a terrific fire of artillery was concentrated against the hill held by this regiment and many were

killed and wounded, some losing their heads, and others so horribly mutilated and mangled that their identity could scarcely be established; but notwithstanding this all the men continued heroically and unflinchingly to maintain their position." Colonel Work mentioned the names of Privates W. Y. Salter, J. N. Kirksey, G. Barfield and W. J. Barbee for great and striking gallantry, though he declared that in doing so he was neglecting others of equal merit, all behaving like heroes. Private Barbee, though a mounted courier, acting for General Hood, entered the ranks of his company and fought through the engagement. At one time he mounted a rock upon the highest pinnacle of the hill, and there, exposed to a deadly fire from artillery and musketry, stood until he had fired twenty-five shots, when he received a minie-ball in the right thigh and fell. The men replenished their cartridge-boxes from the dead and wounded of the enemy, and many of the officers, seizing rifles, fought in the ranks in the deadly struggle amid the rocks of the Devil's Den. Capt. John R. Woodward, acting major, was wounded by a fragment of shell. The regiment lost 25 killed, 48 wounded and 20 missing.

Maj. John P. Bane, who led the Fourth regiment after Colonel Key and Lieutenant-Colonel Carter were wounded, reported that his regiment made two assaults upon the heights. His loss was reported at 14 killed and 73 wounded. Colonel Powell led the Fifth and drove the enemy from one height, but while fighting among the rocks for the second height, fell with a mortal wound, and in hastening to his assistance Lieut.-Col. K. Bryan was wounded. Major Rogers was then in command. Captain Cleveland was commended for skillful leadership. The loss of the Fifth was given at 23 killed and 86 wounded. Major Rogers in his report commended the skillful management of his right wing by Captain Cleveland, and the left by Capt. C. C. Clay. T. W. Fitzgerald, color-bearer, was wounded far in front, and the flag was



taken up by J. A. Howard, who was almost instantly killed. Sergt. W. S. Evans bore the colors during the remainder of the fight.

#### THE WILDERNESS TO APPOMATTOX.

At the outset of the Virginia campaign of 1864 the Texas brigade was commanded by Brig.-Gen. John Gregg, in Maj.-Gen. Charles W. Field's division of Longstreet's corps, General Hood having remained with the army of Tennessee. The Fourth was commanded by Colonel Bane, and the Fifth by Lieutenant-Colonel Bryan (commander of First not noted). They were in battle on the 6th of May at the Wilderness,\* and reached Spottsylvania Court House on the 8th. On the 10th they aided in repulsing the last and most desperate assault by the enemy upon Field's position. During the remainder of the fighting here and at Cold Harbor, they manifested their old-time courage and tenacity. They were on the line at Kershaw's salient, where fourteen Federal assaults were repulsed with great slaughter. After serving on the Petersburg lines in the early summer the brigade was transferred to the north side of the James before Richmond. In September, about the time of the capture of

---

\* In an account of this battle by Gen. E. M. Law ("Battles and Leaders of the Civil War"), describing the magnificent entry upon the scene of Longstreet's corps on the second day, and the advance of Kershaw's division, he says: "Nearly at the same moment Field's division took the left of the road, with Gregg's brigade in front. As the Texans swept past the batteries where General Lee was standing, they gave a rousing cheer for 'Marse Robert,' who spurred his horse forward and followed them in the charge. When the men became aware that he was 'going in' with them, they called loudly to him to go back. 'We won't go unless you go back,' was the general cry. One of the men dropped to the rear, and taking the bridle turned the general's horse around, while General Gregg came up and urged him to do as the men wished. . . . The Federals were advancing through the pines with apparently irresistible force, when Gregg's 800 Texans, regardless of numbers, flanks or supports, dashed directly upon them. There was a terrific crash, mingled with wild yells, which settled down into a steady roar of musketry. In less than ten minutes one-half of that devoted 800 were lying upon the field, dead or wounded; but they had delivered a staggering blow, and broken the force of the Federal advance."

Fort Harrison, they repulsed an attack at Four-mile run. With reinforcements they repelled the violent assault on Fort Gilmer. On October 7th, in the fight at the New Market road, General Gregg was killed.

The Texas brigade, in the army of Northern Virginia, as well as many other commands, has insufficient mention in the meager reports of 1864-65 which are accessible. Many official reports of battles were lost or destroyed, and in many instances the campaigns were so active as to leave little time for making reports. At its last service the brigade was commanded by Col. Robert M. Powell; the First by Col. Frederick S. Bass, the Fourth by Lieut.-Col. Clinton M. Winkler, and the Fifth by Capt. W. T. Hill. At Appomattox 64 officers were paroled and 553 men.















BIOGRAPHICAL.



## BIOGRAPHICAL.

Brigadier-General Arthur Pendleton Bagby was born in Alabama, and appointed from that State to the United States military academy at West Point. He was graduated in 1852, and promoted in the army to brevet second lieutenant of infantry, after which he served in garrison at Fort Columbus, New York, 1852-53, and on frontier duty at Fort Chadbourne, Texas, 1853. He resigned in September of that year, and began the study of law. Being admitted to the bar, he practiced at Mobile, Ala., from 1854 to 1858; then moved to Gonzales, Tex., and was living there in 1861, when the war between the States began. He was, during 1861, major in the Seventh Texas, becoming colonel of the regiment in 1862. This regiment was in General Sibley's command in New Mexico in 1862, sharing the hardships and victories of that campaign of varied experiences. On January 1, 1863, having been promoted in the latter part of 1862, he took part in the memorable victory at Galveston, which was of substantial benefit to the Confederate cause. The land and naval forces were under the command of General Magruder, who thus referred to Colonel Bagby's part in the affair: "Col. A. P. Bagby, of Sibley's brigade, commanded the volunteers from his regiment for the naval expedition, in which every officer and man won imperishable renown." Gen. Richard Taylor, during his operations in West Louisiana in 1863, frequently spoke of Bagby in complimentary terms. Referring to the battle near Berwick bay, he said: "Colonel Bagby was wounded seriously, but not dangerously, in the arm, but remained on the field with his regiment until the enemy had been driven back and ceased his attacks." So frequently is





Brig.-Gen. HAMILTON P. BEE.	Brig.-Gen. W. R. SCURRY.
Maj.-Gen. J. A. WHARTON.	Brig.-Gen. J. C. MOORE.
Brig.-Gen. W. H. YOUNG.	Brig.-Gen. WM. STEELE.
	Brig.-Gen. F. H. ROBERTSON.

Colonel Bagby's gallantry alluded to in the reports of both Taylor and Magruder that it is certain that the rank of brigadier-general, which was conferred upon him during 1863, seldom if ever was bestowed upon one more worthy of the honor. During the Red river campaign, before, during and after the battles of Mansfield and Pleasant Hill, his services were very great. The high esteem in which he was held by his superior officers is shown by the fact that after the surrender of Lee and Johnston, but before the final submission of the Trans-Mississippi department, he was in Gen. Kirby Smith's general orders promoted to major-general, May 16, 1865. After the war he went back to his law business, continuing to reside in Texas, his adopted State.

Brigadier-General Hamilton P. Bee was born at Charleston, S. C., July 22, 1822, the son of Col. Barnard E. Bee. A younger son of the latter bore the father's name and fell at Manassas after giving "Stonewall" Jackson his immortal name. Colonel Bee was one of the earliest and most noted of the Texas pioneers, and his wife and son Hamilton joined him at Galveston in 1837. Two years later Hamilton P. Bee was appointed secretary, on the part of Texas, to the commission which established the line between Texas and the United States, and in 1846 he was elected secretary of the first senate of Texas, but soon resigned to enlist as a private in Capt. Ben McCulloch's company of cavalry. Later he served at Laredo in the rank of first lieutenant. In 1854 he was married to Mildred Tarver, of Alabama. In addition to his public service in the ante-Confederate period, which has been mentioned, he acted as clerk to Governor Lubbock when the latter was comptroller of the Texas republic, and was speaker of the third house of representatives of the State. During 1861 he was in command of State troops on the coast as brigadier-general in the provisional army of Texas, and in March, 1862, when he was com-



missioned brigadier-general in the Confederate service, he was put in command at Brownsville. In November, 1863, he had but 69 men at this post, but, in the face of 12,000 men, landed by General Banks, he successfully brought off Confederate stores and munitions valued at \$1,000,000. During the following winter he commanded a force of 10,000 men on the coast, from Brazos to Matagorda bay; and early in 1864 he took several regiments of cavalry to Louisiana, with three of which he reported to Gen. Richard Taylor in time to participate in the battle of Mansfield. At Pleasant Hill on the afternoon of the next day, at the head of these regiments, he led a splendid charge, had two horses killed under him, and was slightly wounded in the face. After the death of Gen. Tom Green he was in command of the cavalry division on the Red river until the arrival of General Wharton. His next service was with General Maxey in the Indian Territory, where he passed the winter of 1864-65, and he was then assigned to the command of a division of cavalry at Hempstead. After the fall of the Confederate government he resided in Mexico until 1876, when he made his home at San Antonio, where he lived in peace, loved and respected by the community, until his sudden demise, October 2, 1897. He left surviving him his wife, five sons and a daughter. By his request the Confederate flag, which was presented him by the ladies of San Antonio at the outbreak of the war, was buried with him, wrapped about the casket which contained his body.

Brigadier-General Xavier Blanchard Debray rendered his military services, which were of great value and prominence, altogether in the Trans-Mississippi department, which was a large part of the time almost isolated from the rest of the Confederacy. During a part of 1861 he was aide-de-camp to the governor of Texas. In September of that year he entered the regular Confederate service as major of the Second regiment of Texas infantry.

December 5th of the same year he was commissioned lieutenant-colonel of a battalion of cavalry. With this command he was very active in scouting, reporting movements of the enemy, attacking their forces whenever it was advisable, and useful in every way to the commanding general. In the attack upon the Federals at Galveston on January 1, 1863, he was notably active, so that General Magruder in his official report gives special commendation to him in connection with other officers for efficiency and gallantry. Early in 1864 he was ordered to march with his Texans to join Gen. Richard Taylor in the campaign against Banks. The regiment which he was leading had never before been in action, but, under his guidance, behaved with such coolness and bravery as to win the approval of General Taylor in his reports. In the reports of this campaign, including the battles of Mansfield and Pleasant Hill, his name frequently appears, always in connection with honorable service. In the pursuit of Banks, Debray commanded a cavalry brigade under General Bee, and kept up the good work he had begun on his first encounter with the enemy. On May 18th the Federals ambuscaded him; but, said General Taylor, "Debray opened, enfilading their line. Many were killed and wounded, and Wharton's charge captured a good many prisoners." After the termination of the Red river campaign, Colonel Debray was appointed a brigadier-general by Gen. Kirby Smith; he had worthily won this rank. After the peace he returned to Texas and made his home in Austin, where he died on January 9, 1895.

Brigadier-General Matthew Duncan Ector is one of the famous names of the army of Tennessee. In 1862 he was colonel of the Fourteenth Texas cavalry; in August of the same year he was made a brigadier-general. He had served in the cavalry in North Mississippi, but during the Kentucky campaign led his regiment, the Fourteenth Texas, dismounted. He was present at the battle

at Richmond, Ky., and Col. T. H. McCray, who in that battle commanded the brigade, said in his report that "Col. M. D. Ector particularly distinguished himself, being in the front of battle and cheering on his men." He was promoted to brigadier-general, his commission dating back to August 23, 1862. At the battle of Murfreesboro he commanded a brigade in McCown's division. General Hardee, after describing the brilliant charge by which the whole Federal right wing was driven back several miles, says that "Ector and Harper, though enfiladed by a battery, forced their way through a cedar brake, in which the enemy was posted." At the battle of Chickamauga General Ector shared with other commanders in the following compliment bestowed by the heroic Gen. Wm. H. T. Walker: "I have only to say that the brigadier-generals fought with a gallantry that entitle them to division commands, and the colonels commanding brigades, with an obstinacy and courage that entitle them to the rank of brigadier-generals." It is not necessary to go into all the details of the battles in which General Ector acted a gallant part. A few days after the battle of Chickamauga he was sent with his brigade to Mississippi, where he remained until the following spring. He was back again in time for the Atlanta campaign, and under both Johnston and Hood, he and his command maintained the fine reputation which they had won on other fields. During the battles around Atlanta he lost a leg. To the end of his military career General Ector was faithful and valiant in the performance of every duty. When the long struggle ended, he and his brigade had earned an honorable name for duty well performed on every field, whether in Tennessee or Georgia. He participated in the defense of Mobile in the last days of the war. After peace had been restored he returned to his home in Texas.

Brigadier-General Richard M. Gano entered the Confederate army in 1861, commanding a squadron consisting

of two companies of Texas cavalry. His force formed a part of John H. Morgan's command. When Kirby Smith entered Kentucky, in August, 1862, he ordered Colonel Morgan to report to him at Lexington, in the blue grass region. On the 28th of August, Morgan entered Kentucky with his force consisting of the Second Kentucky cavalry, 700 strong, and Gano's squadron, 150 strong. When he reached Lexington, September 4th, he found Kirby Smith already there. Taking Gano with him, and the recruits, of whom he had collected a good number, he started to go to the assistance of Marshall, in eastern Kentucky, who was expected to intercept the Federal General Morgan, retreating from Cumberland Gap, and detain him until Stevenson could overtake and attack him in the rear. Though this scheme did not work, Morgan's command performed many brilliant exploits. He had gone into Kentucky with about 900 effective troops, and came out with a force nearly 2,000 strong, admirably mounted and well armed, and, as Gen. Basil Duke says, "the recruits were fully the equals of the original Morgan men in spirit, intelligence, and capacity to endure." His own loss in the campaign was not more than 100 in killed and wounded, while he had taken nearly 2,000 prisoners. During the next year Colonel Gano was sent into the Trans-Mississippi department and assigned to the Indian Territory, where he commanded a brigade of Texas cavalry—regiments of Colonels DeMorse, Martin, Gurley, Duff, Hardeman, Lieutenant-Colonel Showalter's battalion, Captain Welch's company, and the light batteries of Captains Howell and Krumbhaar. When Banks and Steele had been defeated, in the Red river campaign, and while Price was getting ready to march into Missouri, the Confederate troops under Maxey, Cooper and Gano made demonstrations against Fort Smith and Fort Gibson. So well did Colonel Gano perform his part in all these operations that he was promoted to brigadier-general by Gen. E. Kirby Smith. Soon after this the war came to



an end. After the return of peace General Gano settled in Dallas, Tex.

Brigadier-General Hiram Bronson Granbury was one of the most gallant of the valiant officers of the soldier State of Texas. Entering the Confederate army as captain of a company in Gregg's regiment, Seventh Texas, he went with his command to Kentucky, and at the organization, in November, 1861, was elected major. He was on duty in Kentucky until early in 1862, when the brigade to which he was attached was ordered to Fort Donelson. In the battle at that important post, in February, his regiment was in the gallant charge which successfully opened the way for the retreat of the Confederate army. That the opportunity was not improved was not the fault of the gallant men who gained the fight. Col. John M. Simon-ton, who on this occasion led the brigade, said of Major Granbury, that "he had now the confidence of his command and was entitled to the highest commendation of his countrymen." Col. John Gregg, of his regiment, also speaks well of the efficient assistance of Granbury. After the prisoners captured at Fort Donelson had been exchanged, Granbury was promoted to colonel of the Seventh regiment, August 29, 1862, and he commanded his regiment in north Mississippi, with Gregg's brigade, until after the fall of Vicksburg. He distinguished himself at the battle of Raymond, Miss., where General Gregg fought so valiantly the overwhelming masses of the Federals. He led this regiment in the battle of Chickamauga, and at Missionary Ridge until Brig.-Gen. James A. Smith was borne from the field severely wounded. Then Colonel Granbury took command of the brigade. On this day of disaster to the Confederates, Cleburne's division held its ground. More than that, Granbury, assisted by Cumming, from Stevenson's division, and Maney, from Walker's, made a charge and drove the enemy from their front. General Cleburne in his report said: "To

Brigadier-Generals Smith, Cumming and Maney, and to Colonel Granbury, I return thanks for the able manner in which they managed their commands." At the brilliant battle of Ringgold Gap, which occurred two days later, Granbury commanded the Texas brigade. Here was inflicted such a repulse upon the enemy that the pursuit was completely checked. On this occasion General Cleburne said of Colonels Granbury and Govan, and Brigadier-Generals Polk and Lowrey: "Four better officers are not in the service of the Confederacy." On February 29, 1864, Granbury was commissioned brigadier-general in the provisional army of the Confederate States, his command being the famous Texas brigade, consisting of the Sixth, Seventh, Fifteenth, Seventeenth, Nineteenth, Twenty-fourth and Twenty-fifth regiments. Throughout the whole Atlanta campaign, from Dalton to Jonesboro, the fame of this brigade increased. It carried off the honors of the brilliant victory at Pickett's mill, and materially helped in checking the triumphant advance of the enemy at the battle of Jonesboro. During the ill-fated Tennessee campaign of General Hood, in the fearful charge at Franklin, fell Gen. Pat. Cleburne, commander of one of the most renowned divisions of the Confederate army, and General Granbury, the leader of one of its most celebrated brigades. Their loss could never be compensated, and to this day the survivors of the army of Tennessee mention their names with reverence.

Major-General Thomas Green was born in Amelia county, Virginia, June 8, 1814. His father was Nathan Green, one of the most eminent jurors of Tennessee, a Supreme court judge, and president of Lebanon law college, that illustrious institution where so many of America's most prominent men received their legal education. In the fall of 1835, at the age of twenty-one, Thomas Green left his home in Tennessee and entered the ranks of the revolutionary army in Texas. He fought his first

battle at San Jacinto, April 21, 1836, and from then until the disbandment of the army in 1837, identified himself with the most eventful skirmishes and engagements. In 1839 and 1840 he was engaged in skirmishes and expeditions against the Indians, and served with great distinction in the Mexican invasion of the frontier in 1842. He was placed in command of a company in 1846, and was sent to the support of General Taylor, on the Rio Grande. He fought with distinction in the battle of Monterey in September, and his daring aggressiveness in this battle won for him commendation as a soldier and leader. He continued to serve under Major Hays, taking active part in many notable skirmishes, until the close of the war. During the period of twenty years, from 1841 to 1861, despite his absence in the field, he was retained in the office of clerk of the Supreme court of Texas, an evidence of the popular appreciation of his abilities. He entered the Confederate army in 1861, and in August was appointed colonel of the Fifth Texas mounted rifles, raised in Arizona and New Mexico, and largely composed of soldiers from his former commands. In the battles of Valverde, Glorieta, Los Cruces, and others, he shared the trials and sufferings of his command with heroic fortitude, and on the retreat his command won the admiration of their victorious enemies. In the defeat of the Federal land and naval forces at Galveston, January 1, 1863, he distinguished himself in command of the line troops, the ships and artillery being under Maj. Leon Smith. In April following he was in Louisiana with Gen. Richard Taylor, gained renewed commendation for his conduct at Camp Bisland, and was put in command of Sibley's brigade. On May 20, 1863, he was promoted to brigadier-general. In command of his brigade he operated brilliantly against the Federals in Louisiana, on the Lafourche in July, 1863, on the Fordoche in September, and in the Teche country in October, winning a brilliant victory at Bayou Bourbeau November 3d. General Taylor in his report gave Gen-







Brig.-Gen. ELKANAH GREER.  
Brig.-Gen. BEN MCCULLOCH.  
Brig.-Gen. R. N. GANO.  
Brig.-Gen. W. P. HARDEMAN.

Brig.-Gen. WALTER P. LANE.  
Brig.-Gen. THOMAS GREEN.  
Brig.-Gen. HENRY E. MCCULLOCH.  
Brig.-Gen. JOS. L. HOGG.

Maj.-Gen. S. B. MAXEY.  
Brig.-Gen. X. B. DEBRAY.  
Brig.-Gen. J. B. ROBERTSON.  
Brig.-Gen. L. S. ROSS.

eral Green high praise, declaring that he seized, in a masterly manner, the exact moment when a heavy blow could be given. Taylor had already frequently commended the gallant Texan, and protested that he was left unable to say any more except that he exceeded expectations, which had been thought impossible. "This officer," continued Taylor, "has within the past few months commanded in three successful engagements, on the Lafourche, on the Fordoche, and near Opelousas, two of which were won against heavy odds. His sphere of usefulness should be enlarged by his promotion to major-general. He is now commanding a division of cavalry, and I respectfully urge that he be promoted." Subsequently, Green was transferred with his division to meet the invasion of the Rio Grande country by the expedition under Banks, and was promoted to major-general early in 1864. Called again to Louisiana, when Texas was threatened by the Red river expedition, he commanded the cavalry corps at the battles of Mansfield and Pleasant Hill with great distinction, and, pursuing the enemy, lost his life at Blair's landing, April 12, 1863. Major-General Banks, commanding the Federal army, in his report to General Sherman, said: "General Green was killed by the fire of the gunboats on the 12th; he was the ablest officer in their service."

Brigadier-General Elkanah Greer entered the Confederate army in the Third Texas cavalry, of which he was commissioned colonel on the 1st of July, 1861. His first battle was that of Wilson's Creek, Missouri, August 10, 1861. Here Colonel Greer proved well his fitness for command. In October, Governor Jackson sent him as the bearer of a note to President Davis at Richmond, writing in the way of introduction, "The bearer of this note, Colonel Greer, of Texas, is probably better known to you than myself, but I know him well and can say of him, that he is a gentleman worthy of the highest confi-

dence." At the battle of Pea Ridge, or Elkhorn, Greer's regiment did some splendid work, helping, on the first day, to drive back the enemy, and, on the second day, aiding in repelling the enemy's advance. On June 1, 1862, Colonel Greer sent in his resignation, but it was recalled, and in October, 1862, he was appointed brigadier-general. He was soon after made chief of the bureau of conscription for the Trans-Mississippi department. The duties of this important office he performed with great ability. He does not appear to have been actively engaged after this; but the man who had charge of a bureau of conscription always had all that he could look after. It was sometimes a difficult task to decide as to what men came properly under the head of exempts from military duty. At times there was great need of tact as well as firmness. Most soldiers preferred active duty in the field, and yet it was necessary that men of administrative ability and moral courage should help to organize the means of defense by keeping the ranks of the regiments as near as possible up to the numerical strength required. General Greer coöperated in every way with General Magruder, commanding the district of Texas, and assisted that general in reconciling differences that existed between the conscription laws of the Confederate States and the laws of the State of Texas. During operations in 1864, General Greer also commanded the reserve forces in the Trans-Mississippi department. After the return of peace he remained for a while in Texas, and then removed to Arkansas. He died at Devall's Bluff, March 25, 1877.

Brigadier-General John Gregg fought in three of the principal armies of the Confederacy, and gained distinction in each. He entered the service in the Seventh Texas as colonel of the regiment; was captured at Fort Donelson, and, on being exchanged, he and his regiment were stationed for a time at Grenada, Miss. He was commissioned brigadier-general on August 29, 1862. His bri-

gade embraced, during the campaign in north Mississippi and afterward in the Vicksburg campaign, the Seventh Texas, the First, Third, Tenth, Thirtieth, Forty-first and Fiftieth regiments of Tennessee infantry, and Bledsoe's light battery of artillery. When Sherman, with 33,000 men, began his movement upon Vicksburg in December, the brigades of Barton, Gregg and Vaughn were promptly transferred from Grenada to Vicksburg. In the battle which occurred at Chickasaw bayou, December 27, 1862, resulting in the repulse of Sherman with a loss of 1,776 in killed, wounded and missing, only a small part of the Confederates near Vicksburg were engaged, and Gregg's brigade had but a slight part in the battle. In January, 1863, he was transferred to Port Hudson, and in May ordered to Jackson. During the advance of Grant upon Vicksburg from the rear, in May, 1863, the Confederate forces in Mississippi were so managed that they were put into battle in detachments and beaten in detail. General Gregg, alone at Raymond, on May 12th, was allowed to be overwhelmed by a greatly superior force, but the fight he made was a memorable one. He retreated from that field in the direction of Jackson, where he was reinforced by other commands, forming the force that was being assembled under Gen. J. E. Johnston, with the design of raising the siege of Vicksburg. After the fall of Vicksburg and the evacuation of Jackson, when forces were being concentrated in Georgia to enable Bragg to defeat Rosecrans, Gregg's brigade was one of those sent for that purpose. On the second day at Chickamauga the heavy pressure on Thomas caused Rosecrans to support him by sending troops which left a gap in the Federal line. Into this Longstreet immediately pushed the brigades of McNair, Gregg, Kershaw, Law, Humphrey, Benning and Robertson. This caused the Federal disaster that gave the Confederates the brilliant victory of Chickamauga. Subsequently his old brigade was separated, the Texas regiment going into Granbury's brigade; and



when Longstreet returned to Virginia in the spring of 1864, Gregg went with him in command of Hood's old brigade, embracing the First, Fourth and Fifth Texas and Third Arkansas regiments. On the second day of the battle of the Wilderness, when Longstreet's corps checked the victorious onset of the Federals, General Gregg and his Texans won immortal fame. He took an active part in the great struggle thus inaugurated, from the Rapidan to the James, and served in the defense of the Richmond and Petersburg lines until October 7, 1864, when he was killed on the field of battle before Richmond, and the service of another able officer was lost to the Confederacy.

Brigadier-General W. P. Hardeman entered the Confederate service as captain in the Fourth regiment, Texas mounted volunteers. His first service was in the western part of Texas, and in New Mexico. He was in the celebrated expedition of General Sibley for the conquest and annexation of New Mexico to the Confederate States. This was one of the severest campaigns of the war. The men suffered intensely from heat and thirst, and probably as many men died from exhaustion as were killed by the bullets of the enemy. The Confederates advanced into the very heart of a hostile country, and were victorious in battle, but could get no supplies, and were pressed by greatly superior numbers of Union forces. The retreat was accomplished amid great hardships and with considerable loss of material. In the battle of Valverde, Captain Hardeman was conspicuous for gallantry, and was named by Colonel Scurry among the captains who led six companies of the Fourth Texas in the last brilliant and successful charge which decided the fortunes of the day. He was, in the latter part of 1862, promoted to colonel, and in a short time was commanding the brigade of General Green, who had command of division. The Texas cavalry commands did splendid service in the defense of their own

State and of Louisiana. At the opening of the Red river campaign of 1864, Colonel Hardeman led his regiment in Bagby's brigade of the cavalry division of General Major, which reached Mansfield, April 6th, and in this capacity had a conspicuous part in the battle of April 8th, as well as at Pleasant Hill, April 9th. In the subsequent pursuit of Banks, the exploits of the cavalry were brilliant and successful. On October 28, 1864, Gen. Kirby Smith earnestly recommended Colonel Hardeman for promotion to the rank of brigadier-general, mentioning him, with Debray and Lane, as the best brigade commanders in the Trans-Mississippi department. In a letter written December 23d, Adjutant-General Cooper stated to General Smith that President Davis had nominated W. P. Hardeman, J. E. Harrison and W. P. Lane as brigadier-generals. After the close of the war General Hardeman returned to peaceful pursuits, making his home at Austin, Texas.

Brigadier-General James E. Harrison.—Many persons who are familiar with the great, decisive campaigns of the civil war, have but a faint conception of the deeds of the many heroic spirits who endured privations, went on long marches, and fought desperate and brilliant battles, that are not even barely mentioned in the popular histories of those stirring times. Yet the exploits of these heroes kept many of the enemy employed who would otherwise have swelled the immense armies that on other fields were moving against the vital points of the Confederacy. The bold infantry, horsemen and artilleryists, who made the country so hot that the Union soldiers could not venture from their fortified posts, by their activity held large districts of country and kept them almost free from the presence of the enemy. Such was especially the case in Louisiana, Texas and western Arkansas. James E. Harrison, of Texas, was one of these daring men who were ready to risk everything for the cause of

their country. Entering the service in the Fifteenth Texas infantry, he was made lieutenant-colonel of the regiment, which he frequently led into battle, the colonel, J. W. Spaight, being often in command of the brigade. A great deal of the service of these soldiers was taken up with watching the enemy, cutting off his foraging parties, skirmishing with detachments, and making things generally uncomfortable for the Federal soldiers. On September 29, 1863, Gen. Thomas Green, commanding a brigade in the army under Gen. Richard Taylor, in Louisiana, attacked a considerable force of the enemy at Fordoche bridge and gained a decisive victory, capturing nearly 500 prisoners, two 10-pounder Parrott guns, and many fine arms and accouterments, which enabled every man with an inferior weapon to secure a good one. General Green, in his report of this affair, said: "To Lieut.-Col. J. E. Harrison, commanding Spaight's brigade, F. N. Clark and Maj. John W. Daniel, who led their commands most gallantly to the attack, all honor is due, and to the officers of their several commands, who displayed great coolness in the action. Many of them had never been under fire before, but moved like veterans up to the enemy under a heavy fire and succeeded in driving them from house to house up to the levee. The heavy loss sustained by Spaight's brigade shows the desperate nature of the conflict." Gen. Richard Taylor also spoke in high commendation of the conduct of Harrison. On November 1, 1863, at Bayou Bourbeau, General Green gained another victory, capturing 600 prisoners, another cannon, and a large quantity of improved arms and accouterments. On this occasion he again praised Lieutenant-Colonel Harrison. Throughout the operations in Louisiana in 1864, Colonel Harrison led his regiment, and, finally, at the end of the year, received his commission as brigadier-general. In the spring of 1865 the war ended. General Harrison then returned to Texas, and in recent years has been a citizen of Waco.

Brigadier-General Thomas Harrison entered the Confederate service as captain of the Eighth Texas cavalry regiment, of which B. F. Terry, the first colonel, was killed at Woodsonville; Thomas S. Lubbock, the second one, died at Nashville; and John A. Wharton, the third, was promoted to brigadier-general in November, 1862. Then Thomas Harrison became colonel of this famous regiment, which, dating its career from Woodsonville, took an active part in the marches and battles of the cavalry of the army of Tennessee. He had risen to the rank of major at the time of the battle of Shiloh, and after the close of the second day's fight he was, on account of a wound received by Colonel Wharton, in temporary command of the Eighth Texas cavalry (otherwise called the Texas Rangers). He was with this command in the Kentucky campaign, and received his promotion as colonel shortly before the battle of Murfreesboro. In all the operations of the cavalry in middle Tennessee, during the interval between Murfreesboro and Chickamauga, the Rangers, under Colonel Harrison, had their full share of the hardships and perils, and always acquitted themselves creditably. Colonel Harrison at the battle of Chickamauga commanded the old brigade of General Wharton, then in command of a division. When Sherman sent out McCook and Stoneman on their famous raiding expeditions around Atlanta, Colonel Harrison's brigade formed part of the force under General Wheeler which broke up McCook's column, and gained a splendid victory over them at Newnan; capturing about 1,000 and routing the balance, who were scattered in every direction. When, after the fall of Atlanta, Hood started into Tennessee, Harrison's brigade, with the rest of Wheeler's cavalry, accompanied him until Forrest with his fine command joined the army of Tennessee. Then Wheeler took the larger part of his command and moved back into Georgia, for the purpose of protecting the country, as far as possible, from the raids of Sherman's cavalry and "bummers." On January 14, 1865, he was



commissioned brigadier-general, an honor that he had long merited, having been in command of a brigade for more than a year. He was with Johnston at the surrender in North Carolina. After the war he made his home in Waco, Texas, where he died July 14, 1891.

Brigadier-General Walter P. Lane was early in the field in 1861 as lieutenant-colonel of the Third Texas cavalry, or the South Kansas-Texas cavalry, as it was first called. His regiment was a part of the force led by Brig.-Gen. Ben McCulloch. The first battle of the regiment was at Wilson's Creek. In his report of this battle Col. E. Greer, commanding the brigade, said: "In conclusion, it is due that I should mention the gallant bearing of Lieut.-Col. W. P. Lane in the battle. He had his horse shot under him in the charge and fought on foot until he mounted another horse (whose rider had been killed), and continued the fight." In December, 1861, Col. James McIntosh was informed that the Creek chief, Ho-po-eith-le-yo-ho-la, had taken a position unfriendly to the Confederates, and gathered a large force of hostile Indians, mostly Creeks. Colonel McIntosh at once set out to break up their camp. He came upon the forces of the hostile chief at Chustenahlah, December 26, 1861, and, after a fierce battle, completely defeated them. In his report he said: "The South Kansas-Texas regiment, led by their gallant officers, Lieutenant-Colonel Lane and Major Chilton, breasted itself for the highest point of the hill, and rushed over its rugged side with the insatiable force of a tornado and swept everything before it." In the following March this regiment was again engaged in the fierce battle of Pea Ridge, in northern Arkansas. Colonel Greer, again commanding the brigade, in his official report complimented Lieutenant-Colonel Lane upon his gallant conduct and bearing throughout the whole engagement. On the east side of the Mississippi, while under the command of General Beauregard, a little affair in which Colonel Lane

was engaged was made the subject of a special order. This happened just before the evacuation of Corinth, and the following is the notice it received from General Beauregard: "The general commanding takes great pleasure in calling the attention of the army to the brave, skillful and gallant conduct of Lieutenant-Colonel Lane, of the Third regiment Texas dismounted cavalry, who, with 246 men, on the 29th ultimo, charged a largely superior force of enemy, drove him from his position, and forced him to leave a large number of his dead and wounded upon the field. The conduct of this brave regiment is worthy of all honor and imitation." In the reports of operations in Louisiana in 1863, Colonel Lane's name appears frequently. On the 13th of July the Confederates, under Gen. Thomas Green, gained a brilliant victory on the Bayou Lafourche. Colonel Lane commanded a brigade in this affair, and General Green spoke in very complimentary terms of Lane's part in it. He was equally distinguished in the Red river campaign, in the battles of Mansfield and Pleasant Hill, and subsequent operations, until disabled by a wound. He was soon in the saddle again, and, in October, 1864, was recommended by Gen. E. Kirby Smith for promotion to the rank of brigadier-general. His nomination was sent in by President Davis in December, and his commission was dated March 17, 1865. The war soon after came to an end, and the gallant men who had so bravely upheld the cause of the South returned to their homes, to help rebuild the shattered fortunes of their beloved States. General Lane still lives (1898) in Texas, where he enjoys the esteem of his neighbors and friends.

Brigadier-General Ben McCulloch was born in Rutherford county, Tenn., November 11, 1811, of a well-known family in Tennessee, with whom were connected the Fosters, Lytles and Nicholises, descendants of the Scotch-Irish borderers, who wrested Tennessee and Kentucky

from the red men. His father was Alexander McCulloch, who won distinction as an aide-de-camp of Gen. James Coffee, under General Jackson, in the Creek and British wars of 1812 and 1815. Ben McCulloch spent his early life in Dyer county, Tenn. He seemed to have a natural love and talent for woodcraft, and became an expert hunter, raftsman and flatboatman, an experience which was useful in his later military career. In 1835, when about to join a party of trappers and hunters to the Rocky mountains, he heard of Gen. David Crockett's expedition to aid the struggle for the independence of Texas, and immediately started for Nacogdoches, the place of rendezvous. He arrived too late, but pushed on alone as far as the Brazos river, where he was taken ill and did not recover until after the fall of Alamo. Upon his recovery he joined the army of Gen. Sam Houston, on the eve of the battle of San Jacinto. During this battle, being placed in command of a gun in the artillery, his cool and daring bravery won the highest commendation. It was at the battle of San Jacinto that he met, and formed the life-long friendship of Tom Green, W. P. Lane and Ben C. Franklin. General Houston had known him from boyhood. After the army disbanded in 1837, he settled in Gonzales and engaged in surveying and locating lands on the frontier. In 1839 he was elected to congress in Texas. During this period of his life he was conspicuous in numerous skirmishes with the Indians, notably the fight at Plum creek, and the following encounters with the Comanches and Mexican raiders. It was during his election to the Texas congress in 1839 that his altercation with Col. Reuben Davis occurred, which terminated in a duel, in which he received a wound in the arm, the full use of which he never regained. He rendered invaluable service as scout in the Indian raid of 1840. When Texas was admitted to the Union, he was elected to the first legislature, and was appointed major-general of all the militia west of the Colorado in 1846. At the opening of the

Mexican war, he raised a picked company of Texas Rangers, with their own horses and arms. One of his most brilliant achievements as a scout was his advance of 100 miles into the enemy's country, where he ascertained the exact strength of Santa Aña's forces, and gave to General Taylor the plan of retreat to the impregnable position of La Angostura, which was afterward the battlefield of Buena Vista. In this battle it was his command which had the honor of being sent forward to ascertain the strength and position of the Mexican forces, and he led the opening charge of the battle. He was afterward made quartermaster and promoted to the rank of major. He and a few picked spies performed valuable service in the capture of the city of Mexico. In 1849, when the gold fever was at its height in California, he went to that region, and was soon chosen sheriff of Sacramento county, while his old comrade, of the Texas Rangers, Jack Hays, became sheriff of San Francisco county, offices in which the two won great renown. He returned to Texas in 1852, and was appointed United States marshal of the eastern district of that State, and was reappointed by President Buchanan. In February, 1861, with the rank of colonel, he was in command of State troops, and obtained the surrender of the Federal posts at San Antonio and elsewhere. Subsequently commissioned brigadier-general, May 14, 1861, in the Confederate service, he was assigned to the command of the troops in Arkansas, and rendered valuable service in their organization. Joining General Price in Missouri, he had chief command of the Confederates at the battle of Wilson's Creek, in which he won a glorious victory. In the spring of 1862, under the command of General Van Dorn, he led his brigade and the cavalry brigade of General McIntosh against the Federals at Elkhorn tavern, and at the opening of that bloody struggle, while reconnoitering the Federal lines, rode directly into a party of sharpshooters, and was mortally wounded by a



rifle ball in the breast. He died near Pea Ridge, Ark., March 7, 1862.

Brigadier-General Henry Eustace McCulloch was born in Rutherford county, Tenn., son of Alexander McCulloch, a native of Virginia, who served as aide-de-camp to General Coffee, under Andrew Jackson. Henry McCulloch was educated in Tennessee, and in early manhood emigrated to Texas, settling in Guadalupe county. In 1843 he was elected sheriff of that county, and, while holding this office, did effective work in suppressing lawlessness and made many valuable captures of noted criminals. He was elected member of the State legislature in 1853, and, two years later, was chosen to the State senate. During 1846 and 1848 he was captain of a picked company of Texas Rangers, serving in the war with Mexico, and rendered dashing and valuable service in many important engagements and skirmishes. Subsequently he held the office of United States marshal. On April 15, 1861, he was commissioned colonel of the First regiment of Texas mounted riflemen. His prominent services in this capacity, in bringing about the removal of the United States troops, and occupation of posts by the State troops, are narrated in previous pages of this work. He was in command of the troops which caused the surrender of the last body of United States troops in Texas, and previously took the surrender of posts in western Texas. In May, 1861, he was intrusted with a proposed expedition to seize the Federal forts in Indian Territory near the Texas frontier, but the retreat of the United States forces made this unnecessary. He held various district commands in Texas, and in September, 1861, succeeded General Van Dorn in command of the department, until the arrival of General Hébert, by whom he was assigned to command in the vicinity of San Antonio, including coast points. On June 12, 1862, by virtue of a commission as brigadier-general, he took com-

mand of all the troops within the State east of the Brazos river and north of the old San Antonio road, with headquarters at Tyler, and forwarded troops to Little Rock. Six Texas brigades were put into Arkansas, and he was for a time in command of a division and stationed at Devall's Bluff. Subsequently he was in command of the Northern district of Texas. In the spring and summer of 1863 he operated under General Walker, in command of a brigade composed of the regiments of Colonels Waterhouse, Allen, Fitzhugh and Flournoy, for the relief of Vicksburg, and, under orders from General Taylor, assaulted the almost impregnable Federal works at Milliken's Bend. Returning to the command of his district he labored faithfully for the Confederate cause. In the organization of the Trans-Mississippi army, in the fall of 1864, he was assigned to command of a brigade composed of Col. James Bourland's border regiment, Col. Charles M. Bradford's regiment, Col. Reuben R. Brown's and Col. James E. McCord's, in Walker's corps. In civil life, his gentle manliness and adhesion to right and justice won for him success in his undertakings and the love and admiration of those who knew him. He died in Guadalupe county, Texas, March 12, 1895.

Brigadier-General James P. Major was born in Missouri in 1833. He entered the United States military academy in 1852, and was graduated in 1856 as brevet second lieutenant of cavalry. He served at the cavalry school for practice, Carlisle, Pa., and in December, 1856, was made full second lieutenant. He was on frontier duty next year, scouting and fighting, being engaged in a skirmish with the Comanche Indians near Fort Clarke, Tex., also in a combat with the Kiowas and Comanches near Grand Saline. On October 1, 1858, he was engaged in a skirmish against the Comanches near Wichita village, Tex., where he killed three Indians with his own hand. In 1859-61 he was at Indianola, Tex., a commissary depot.

When the secession movement began, he resigned his commission in the United States army, March 21, 1861. He was first assigned to the staff of General Van Dorn, and received the thanks of that officer for the assistance which he rendered him in the capture of various Texas posts. At the battle of Wilson's Creek Colonel Brown and Lieutenant-Colonel Major led a body of 679 Missourians, and were complimented for their good service. In the summer of 1862 Generals Smith and Van Dorn, assisted by the gunboat Arkansas, made a successful defense of Vicksburg against the Union fleets, one of which under Farragut had captured New Orleans, while the other under Porter had taken Memphis. During this gallant defense Colonel Major rendered very efficient service as engineer, and received the compliments of General Van Dorn, who recommended his promotion to the rank of brigadier-general. As colonel he commanded a Texas cavalry brigade in Louisiana with such gallantry that General Taylor repeatedly urged his promotion to brigadier-general. Finally receiving this honor, at the battle of Mansfield he commanded a division of cavalry, fighting as infantry in the gallant advance which put the enemy to flight. This division included his own brigade, Vincent's and Bagby's. At Pleasant Hill Major was again distinguished, and his services were invaluable during the Red river campaign. Through the whole campaign of 1864 in the Trans-Mississippi department General Major was untiring and vigilant, always prompt to march and to fight. He was in command of his brigade in Wharton's cavalry corps, in the district of Western Louisiana, when the war came to an end. From 1866 to 1877 he devoted his attention to planting in Louisiana and Texas. He died at Austin, Tex., May 8, 1877.

Major-General Samuel Bell Maxey was born at Tompkinsville, Monroe county, Ky., March 30, 1825. His family were of Huguenot descent, and came from Vir-

ginia to Kentucky. His father was Rice Maxey, who for years was clerk of both circuit and county courts in Clinton county, and later moved to Paris, Tex., where the son received the best educational advantages, preparatory to entering the West Point academy. He was there graduated in 1846, and was assigned to the Seventh United States infantry. In the Mexican war he was at the siege of Vera Cruz, and the battle of Cerro Gordo, and in reward for his valuable services at Contreras was brevetted first lieutenant. Taking part in the battle of Churubusco and the siege of the City of Mexico, he was highly commended, was appointed provost of a Mexican district and made commandant of a picked company in the city guard, by Gen. Winfield Scott. In 1848 he was stationed at Jefferson barracks, but the monotony of garrison life soon wearied him, and he returned to Paris, Tex., to read law. After his admission to the bar, he began the practice in Albany, Clinton county, Ky., where he achieved distinction. He married Miss Dent in 1853, and returned to Paris, where he continued the practice of law until 1861. Though by personal convictions a whig, he voted for John C. Breckinridge, and afterward for the secession of his State. He was elected to the State senate, but immediately after joined the Texas military forces and did not take his seat. Organizing the Ninth Texas infantry, he was commissioned colonel, September, 1861, and assigned to the army of Albert Sidney Johnston. He was commissioned brigadier-general March 4, 1862, and in command of a brigade, including his regiment, was ordered to Chattanooga by Gen. E. Kirby Smith. In that vicinity he displayed great activity, driving a Federal force from Bridgeport and Battle Creek, which General Bragg, in general orders, declared was "one of the most dashing achievements of the day." He commanded a brigade of Louisiana and Tennessee troops, also including the Seventh Texas, at Port Hudson, early in 1863, and thence went to Jackson, Miss.,



and took part in the Mississippi campaign of Gen. Jos. E. Johnston. In December, 1863, he was especially honored by President Davis, by assignment to command of the Indian Territory. He soon brought about a complete reorganization, enlisted and equipped 8,000 men, and, in 1864, with these troops, advanced to the assistance of Gen. Sterling Price during the Red river campaign. At Poison Spring, on April 18, 1864, he made a most brilliant and effective attack on a part of the army of Gen. Frederick Steele, and captured the Federal wagon train and many prisoners. This victory won for him promotion to major-general. Returning to command in the Territory, he also performed the duties of superintendent of Indian affairs. He directed many important military movements, and it was under his orders that Gen. Stand Watie (a Cherokee Indian) and General Gano made large and important captures. He was given command of a cavalry division in 1865. Returning to the practice of law, after the close of the war, he was elected Supreme court judge, which office he declined. In 1874 he was elected to the United States Senate, took his seat March 5, 1875, and was re-elected January 25, 1881. While in the Senate, he efficiently served on the committees on Territories, on military operations, on education and labor, and was chairman of the committee on postoffices. His labors to secure frontier protection were of great value. He advocated liberal appropriations for the improvement of rivers and harbors, the enlargement of postal facilities, and was the author of a bill which was the first to assert the right of way to railroads through Indian Territory, to facilitate immigration and commerce.

Brigadier-General John C. Moore was born in Tennessee and was appointed from that State to the United States military academy, entering that institution July 1, 1845, and four years later graduating, with promotion to brevet second lieutenant of the Fourth artillery. He

served in Florida against the Seminole Indians, 1849 and 1850; on frontier duty at Sante Fé, N. M., 1852 and 1853; at Fort Union, in the same territory, from 1853 to 1854, and then at Baton Rouge, La. After a year's leave of absence, he resigned and settled down in his native State as a schoolteacher. A short time before the beginning of the war he moved to Texas. He went into the Confederate army from that State, and was commissioned colonel of the Second Texas infantry, September 2, 1861. At the head of this regiment he participated in the battle of Shiloh, April 6 and 7, 1862. Gen. Jones M. Withers, in his report of the battle, speaking of the time when the enemy was driven from his first position, alluded to the "great gallantry" of Colonel Moore. His regiment formed part of the force that enveloped and captured the splendid division of Prentiss. During the operations around Corinth, Colonel Moore was promoted to brigadier-general, being commissioned on the 26th of May, 1862. In the assault on Corinth his brigade went further than any other, according to General Maury, and at the Hatchie river it did heroic deeds. In the Vicksburg campaign Moore led his brigade in the marching and fighting that preceded the siege, and shared the hardships and dangers and final disaster of the surrender. After the troops were paroled, they were gathered into camp at Demopolis, Ala., and as fast as they were exchanged were sent where most needed. Moore, with the Alabama regiments of his old command, was sent to Bragg in time to participate in the battles of Lookout Mountain and Missionary Ridge, in Cheatham's division of Hardee's corps. Afterward General Moore was sent with his brigade to report to Gen. Dabney H. Maury at Mobile, Ala. On February 3, 1864, he resigned his commission in the Confederate army.

Brigadier-General Allison Nelson, of Texas, entering, in 1861, with all his heart into preparations for the

defense of his State and of the South, was largely instrumental in raising the Tenth Texas regiment of infantry, of which he was commissioned colonel. He devoted himself with untiring zeal to the drill, discipline and proper equipment of his regiment, and when, in 1862, he was ordered to report to General Hindman, in Arkansas, he marched at the head of one of the finest bodies of troops that ever left the Lone Star State for the scene of conflict. General Hindman, at that time commanding the army in Arkansas, spoke of this regiment as a well-armed and finely-equipped command. Colonel Nelson, in June, took position at Devall's Bluff, where intrenchments were thrown up and three heavy guns placed in position. General Hindman reinforced him with a regiment and a battalion of Arkansas infantry, just organized, and armed partly with shotguns and sporting rifles, and partly with pikes and lances, together with three batteries of artillery, and placed Colonel Nelson over the brigade thus formed. A Federal force of infantry and artillery, on transports, and several gunboats, approached this point toward the last of June, but the enemy was repulsed with a loss of 55 killed, wounded and prisoners, by Morgan's squadron of Texans and four unattached companies of Arkansas troops, under P. H. Wheat, assisted by several independent companies of non-conscripts. The Federals did not reach the position occupied by Nelson's brigade. When Hindman first took charge of operations in Arkansas there was great demoralization among troops and people in that State. His vigorous measures brought order out of chaos and restored confidence. In a report to the war department he referred to the "prompt patriotism with which Brigadier-Generals Hébert, McCulloch and Nelson, and the officers and men of the various Texas regiments, came to my assistance." Colonel Nelson had been promoted to brigadier-general on the 10th of September, 1862. Not long after this the country was deprived of the services of this estimable gentleman

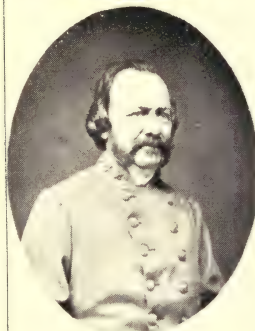
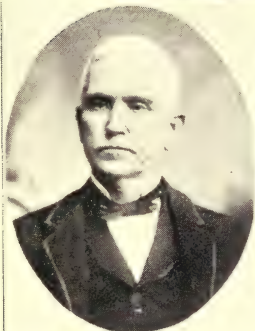
and talented officer by death. General Holmes announced this event as follows: "I have the painful duty to perform of reporting the death of Brigadier-General Nelson, who commanded a division. He is an irreparable loss to me."

Brigadier-General Horace Randal was born in Tennessee in 1831. He entered the United States military academy in 1849, was graduated in 1854 as brevet second lieutenant of infantry, and in the following year was promoted to second lieutenant, First dragoons. His service in the United States army was mainly on frontier duty, in the course of which he engaged in combats with the Indians; against the Apaches, near Fort Bliss, in 1855, and near the Almagre mountains, New Mexico, in April, 1856, and again near the Gila river, November 30th of the same year. He resigned February 27, 1861, and in the war between the North and South bore a conspicuous part as leader of Texas troops. In 1862 he had command of a brigade of Texas cavalry, McCulloch's division, and was on duty in the district of Arkansas. He proved himself a very efficient officer and, like many others, was in command of a brigade long before he received a commission as brigadier-general. At the battle of Milliken's Bend, during the siege of Vicksburg, Randal commanded this brigade, serving as infantry. He exhibited on this occasion, and on others, such personal courage and efficiency as a commander that, on November 8, 1863, Gen. E. Kirby Smith, commander of the Trans-Mississippi department, wrote to the war department at Richmond, asking the promotion of Col. Horace Randal to the rank of brigadier-general. At the battle of Mansfield, April 8, 1864, Randal fought under the eye of Gen. Richard Taylor, who said of him: "In vigor, energy and daring, Randal surpassed my expectations, high as they were of him and his fine brigade." This high opinion was strengthened by Randal's conduct on the 9th, at Pleasant Hill.



The commission of brigadier-general conferred upon him, dated April 8, 1864, was an honor that had been well earned. He did not, however, receive the news of his promotion, for he fell, mortally wounded, in the battle of Jenkins' Ferry, April 30, 1864, at the crossing of the Sabine, in Arkansas. In him Texas and the South lost a gallant defender.

Brigadier-General Felix H. Robertson, accredited to Texas, on the 9th of March, 1861, was commissioned as second lieutenant of artillery in the Confederate army. He was on duty at Charleston harbor during the bombardment of Fort Sumter, and was commended in the report of the officer commanding the Mount Pleasant mortar battery. Going then to Pensacola he was appointed acting adjutant-general on the staff of Brigadier-General Gladden, with commission of captain, October, 1861. January 1, 1862, he became captain of a battery of artillery, officially designated as Alabama troops, but also claimed by Florida. At Shiloh this battery was attached to the brigade of General Gladden. At the battle of Murfreesboro he was distinguished, particularly on the occasion of the charge of Major-General Breckinridge's division, in command of ten 12-pound Napoleon guns. General Bragg alluded to him as "an able and accomplished artillery officer." General Polk, also, in his report compliments Captain Robertson for vigilance and fearlessness in exposing himself in the discharge of his duties. On July 1, 1863, his efficiency and valor were rewarded by the commission of major of artillery. In this rank he commanded a battalion of artillery composed of the batteries of Barret, Havis, Lumsden and Massenburg, attached to Longstreet's command, at the battle of Chickamauga. In January, 1864, he was promoted to lieutenant-colonel of artillery, and assigned to the command of the artillery of Wheeler's cavalry corps, army of Tennessee, with which



Brig.-Gen. J. W. WHITFIELD.      Brig.-Gen. JOHN GREGG.  
 Brig.-Gen. T. HARRISON.      Brig.-Gen. M. D. ECTOR.      Brig.-Gen. H. B. GRANBERRY.  
 Brig.-Gen. T. N. WAUL.      Brig.-Gen. ARTHUR P. BAGBY.      Brig.-Gen. J. E. HARRISON.  
 Brig.-Gen. R. WATERHOUSE.      Brig.-Gen. L. T. WIGFALL.



he served during the Atlanta campaign. Then, being promoted to brigadier-general, he commanded a brigade of cavalry, and General Wheeler, in reporting the Tennessee campaign under Hood, mentions Robertson among the officers to whom he gives special thanks for bravery and fidelity. As Sherman marched through Georgia, General Robertson was one of the ablest lieutenants of Wheeler in harassing the Federals and frequently defeating their raiding parties. He was reported as wounded in a fight, November 28th. In General Wheeler's last report, March, 1865, he mentioned General Robertson as one of his generals still disabled from wounds. After the close of the war General Robertson made his home at Austin, Tex.

Brigadier-General Jerome B. Robertson was born in Woodford county, Ky. At the age of twelve, being left an orphan without means, he was bound out for the period of his minority; but by industry and economy he purchased his liberty at eighteen years. Prior to that event he had enjoyed only three months' regular schooling. As soon as he had made sufficient advancement, he began the study of medicine, but scarcely had completed his course when, prompted by an ardent love for liberty, he left his Kentucky home, in 1835, to aid the Texans in their struggle for freedom. The battle of San Jacinto was fought before he reached the Texas forces, but he was there in time to join in the pursuit of the remnant of the Mexican army, not halting until the enemy had crossed the Rio Grande. He was promoted to the rank of captain, which he held until the Texas army was furloughed in June, 1837. He then settled in Washington county, Tex., and engaged in the practice of medicine. On account of the hostilities of the Indians he again went to the field, at the head of a regiment, and helped to bring the savages to terms. He was an active participant in all the stirring events that occurred from the independ-



ence of Texas until the annexation to the United States. In 1848 he was elected to the lower house of the State legislature, and in 1850 to the State senate. He was a member of the State convention that passed the ordinance of secession, and was one of the first to raise a company for the war, entering the Confederate service, as a captain, in the Fifth Texas infantry, Hood's brigade. In November of the same year he became lieutenant-colonel, and on June 1, 1862, he was commissioned colonel of the regiment. He led it through the Seven Days' battles around Richmond, and, though wounded at Second Manassas, was at Boonsboro gap, after which his physical exhaustion was so great that he had to be carried from the field, and was unable to take part in the battle of Sharpsburg. But he had so well proved his ability to command troops in action that, on November 1, 1862, he was commissioned brigadier-general and placed in command of Hood's famous Texas brigade. At Gettysburg the heaviest fighting done by Robertson's command was on the afternoon of July 2d, on the line of battle running along the lower slope of Devil's Den to the Confederate left on Round Top, separated from the latter by Plum run valley. Notwithstanding the heavy fire the Confederates, though thinned at every step, pressed on and forced back the Union lines. In this desperate battle General Robertson was again wounded. He was, however, ready for the fray when General Longstreet went to Georgia, in September, and took part in the battle of Chickamauga. Later in the month General Robertson was sent to Texas to take command of a reserve corps. In 1865 he was commanding a brigade of Maxwell's division in Arkansas. After the war he settled in Waco, Tex., where he still lived in 1898.

Brigadier-General Lawrence Sullivan Ross was born September 27, 1838, at Brentonsport, Iowa, whence, in the following spring, his father, Capt. Shapley P. Ross,

moved to Texas. He was educated at the Wesleyan university, at Florence, Ala. While at home on a vacation, he organized his first company, composed of 135 men, and hastened to the support of Gen. Earl Van Dorn, then in command of the Second United States cavalry. Joining forces with that officer, he took part in the battle of Wichita, against the Comanche Indians, where 95 red men were slain and 350 horses captured. It was in this battle that he rescued a white girl, eight years of age, who had been held by these brutal savages since infancy. Her parents never being discovered, she was adopted and educated by General Ross, and named Lizzie Ross. Captain Ross was desperately wounded at the battle of Wichita, and lay for five days on the battlefield, before he could be removed to the nearest United States post, 90 miles distant. Before the dead had been buried and the smoke of battle had cleared away, General Van Dorn and all the officers of the Second cavalry signed a petition to the secretary of war, commending young Ross' brilliant and heroic service, and urging his appointment to the regular army. Gen. Winfield Scott wrote him a complimentary autograph letter, tendering his support and influence. As Ross was not of age, and had not completed his college course, he declined the honor, and, after his recovery, returned to the Wesleyan university, where he graduated with distinction the following summer. Immediately after his return home, he went to the frontier of Texas, under Gen. Sam Houston, and did effective work against the Comanches. In one affair of this campaign, he engaged in a hand-to-hand conflict with the chief, Peta Nacona, and after having his horse shot under him, he cut down Nacona with his saber and escaped uninjured. At the organization of Texas troops for the Confederate war, he enlisted as a private, but rapidly rose to rank, and at the age of twenty-four, on May 14, 1862, was commissioned colonel of the Sixth Texas regiment of cavalry. He was immediately assigned, by Major-

General Jones, to command of the brigade, but modestly declined that honor, and General Phifer was subsequently assigned. Colonel Ross took part in the battle of Corinth, Miss., October, 1862, and when, on the retreat, Moore's brigade, in advance, was met, beyond the Hatchie bridge by a fresh Federal force, Ross, in command of Phifer's brigade, went into the fight as a forlorn hope, and maintained it against great odds until the army could be withdrawn by another route. The war department at Richmond requested General Maury to give the name of the officer in charge of this brilliant action, which he did. Gen. Jos. E. Johnston, without the knowledge of Ross, wrote to the secretary of war and had him appointed brigadier-general, the commission bearing date December 21, 1863. On different occasions he was commended for gallant conduct by Generals J. E. Johnston, Hardee, Forrest, S. D. Lee, Maury, W. H. Jackson and Van Dorn. He participated in numerous engagements, and had five horses shot under him. At the close of the war he settled in Texas. In 1873 he was sheriff of his county, and in 1875 a member of the constitutional convention. In 1881 he was elected to the State senate, where he served as chairman of the finance committee. He was elected governor of Texas in 1886, and was re-elected in 1888, by a majority of 150,000. As president of the State Agricultural and Mechanical college he rendered valuable service. Ex-Governor Ross died January 4, 1898, at his home at College Station, Tex.

Brigadier-General W. R. Scurry entered the Confederate army in 1861 and was commissioned lieutenant-colonel of the Fourth Texas mounted volunteers. Early in 1862 this regiment was in the brigade of Gen. Henry H. Sibley that set out for the conquest of New Mexico. This expedition was one of the most trying of any of the campaigns of the war. The hardships endured in marching through a rocky, sterile country, in many places desti-

tute of water or of anything to sustain life, made it one never to be forgotten by those who participated. At Valverde the Confederates encountered a Union force under General Canby. Here was fought an obstinate battle in which victory lay long in the balance, though it finally declared for the Confederates. Soon after the Confederates occupied Sante Fé. At Johnson's ranch another battle was fought, in which both sides claimed the victory. Two days later, at Glorieta, the Confederates under Scurry gained another success. The utter impossibility of subsisting his army, however, soon compelled Sibley's retreat. With great difficulty he extricated his army from that desolate region and from the thronging foes that pressed upon him. Colonel Scurry had exhibited such capacity for command, and so well conducted himself in subsequent movements in Texas and Arkansas, that, on September 12, 1862, he was commissioned brigadier-general. On the 1st of January, 1863, when General Magruder attacked the Union fleet and land forces at Galveston, Tex., General Scurry was in immediate command of the Confederate land forces. The result was a splendid victory. In the Red river campaign of 1864, Scurry's brigade participated in the battles of Mansfield and Pleasant Hill. As soon as it was known that Banks was in full retreat for Alexandria, Scurry was taken by Kirby Smith, with others of Taylor's troops, to attack Gen. Frederick Steele, who had advanced to Camden, Ark. In the battle at Jenkins' Ferry, April 30, 1864, the "gallant and daring Scurry," as he is called by General Waul in his report, fell mortally wounded.

Brigadier-General William Steele was born at Albany, N. Y., in 1819; was educated at the United States military academy, and graduated in 1840. He was first assigned to the Second dragoons, stationed in Florida. He served in the military occupation of Texas, and with gallantry in the Mexican war, and on May 9, 1846, was promoted



first lieutenant. In the desperate battles of Contreras and Churubusco he won great distinction by his quick and decisive action and dashing bravery, and earned the brevet of captain. While in Texas, in 1851, he was commissioned captain. He was then sent to New Mexico, where he rendered valuable service until 1854, when he was detailed to Kansas, Dakota and Nebraska, where he was engaged in various expeditions against the Indians. He resigned his commission in the United States army in May, 1861, to join the Confederate army, and was appointed colonel of the Seventh Texas cavalry. During the expedition to New Mexico, early in 1862, under Gen. H. H. Sibley, he was in command in the Mesilla region, sent on expedition to Tucson, and held his post to the last. He was promoted to brigadier-general September 12th, and in January, 1863, he was assigned to command of the Indian Territory, where his energy in organization and administration won this commendation from the President: "His service was efficient and of inestimable value." In March, 1864, he was assigned to command of the defenses at Galveston, but soon afterward took part in the Red river campaign, and, after the death of Gen. Thomas Green, commanded a division of cavalry. In reporting the operations following the battle of Pleasant Hill, Gen. Richard Taylor said: "It is difficult to estimate the importance of the service rendered by Wharton, Steele and Parsons." In 1867, General Steele settled at San Antonio, Tex., and became a commission merchant. For some years after the war he was adjutant-general of the State, and in that office rendered valuable service. He died at San Antonio, January 12, 1885.

Brigadier-General Richard Waterhouse was, on May 13, 1862, commissioned colonel of the Nineteenth Texas regiment. During that year and 1863 he served in Arkansas under Hindman and Holmes, and in Louisiana under Taylor. While Grant was besieging Vicksburg, Gen.

Richard Taylor did everything possible on the Louisiana side to make a diversion in favor of Pemberton's beleaguered army, in the course of his operations ordering Gen. Henry E. McCulloch to attack the Union force at Milliken's Bend. Under adverse circumstances McCulloch attacked the Federals, capturing the outer works, and holding the position for some time, notwithstanding the fire of the gunboats. He reported that, "In their charge Col. Richard Waterhouse with his regiment distinguished themselves particularly, not only by a gallant and desperate charge over the levee, but they drove the enemy (leaving the camp covered with the dead) to the very brink of the river and within short and direct range of the gunboats of the enemy. In fact, from the beginning to the end of the engagement, the colonel behaved in the most gallant manner, and his officers and men seemed to catch the enthusiasm of their commander, and did their duty nobly and gallantly upon every portion of the field." During the Red river campaign Colonel Waterhouse was in Scurry's brigade, of John G. Walker's division, and participated in the battles of Mansfield and Pleasant Hill. In describing the fighting at Pleasant Hill, after the wounding of General Walker, General Taylor says: "Brigadier-General Scurry, commanding the right brigade of Walker's division, behaved most nobly, and speaks highly of Colonel Waterhouse, commanding one of his regiments. The efforts of these leaders prevented the confusion on the right from becoming disastrous." On May 13, 1864, Gen. E. Kirby Smith assigned Col. Richard Waterhouse to duty with the rank of brigadier-general, to date from April 30, 1864, subject to the approval of the President. The faithful military service of General Waterhouse ceased only with the downfall of the Confederacy. Since then he has been a citizen of Texas.

Brigadier-General Thomas N. Waul was born in Sumter district, S. C., January, 1815. After being educated

Tex 18.

at the university of South Carolina he removed to Mississippi, and studied law at Vicksburg, under the celebrated statesman and orator, Sergeant S. Prentiss. Well equipped for the battle of life, he began practice in 1835. His success in his profession was rapid and he became a judge of the circuit court in Mississippi. He moved to Texas, and was soon in the front rank of his profession in the new State. The questions that had long divided the North and South, and almost made of them two peoples, at last led to actual separation and the formation of a new republic, with a constitution modeled after that of the old. Judge Waul entered earnestly into the struggle that followed. Though preferring to serve his country in the field, the people of his district wanted him as their representative in the councils of the new nation. So they elected him as their representative to the first Confederate Congress. He served in that capacity until the organization of the permanent Confederate government in February, 1862. Resigning his seat in Congress, he raised a fine body of troops, known in the Confederate army of the West as Waul's Texas legion. Of this he was commissioned colonel, May 17, 1862, and assigned to the department under Van Dorn, and afterward under Pemberton. Waul's Texans especially distinguished themselves during the siege of Vicksburg, in the recapture, on May 22d, of one of Gen. Stephen D. Lee's redoubts, where the enemy had planted two of their colors. After other commands had hesitated, 40 men of Waul's legion recovered the redoubt, capturing 100 men and the flags. Immediately 30 guns of the enemy were trained upon them; they were almost buried in the debris thrown up around them, but, though some were wounded, none were killed. The captured colors were presented to Colonel Waul as due to the valor of the Texans. During this assault General Lee and Colonel Waul and his adjutant were standing on an exposed position, and the adjutant was shot through the heart. Two days

afterward when the Federals, under a flag of truce, were caring for their dead, one of the party, pointing out a place in the line, said that three Confederate officers had stood there during the assault and that he made 40 men fire a volley at them. He asked if one of them was not killed. General Stevenson in his report of operations at Vicksburg mentioned, in very flattering terms, Brigadier-Generals Barton, Cumming, Lee, and Colonels Reynolds and Waul, "for the successful defense of my line at Vicksburg, for the untiring energy which they displayed in the management of their brigades, and for examples of devotion, intrepidity and coolness under every danger." Gen. Stephen D. Lee in his report said, "Waul's Texas legion particularly distinguished itself, under its brave colonel, by its coolness and gallantry." Colonel Waul and his men were surrendered at Vicksburg, were exchanged in the fall, and Waul received a brigadier-general's commission September 18, 1863. In February, 1864, he was ordered to report to General Magruder for assignment to duty, and still later was sent to Gen. Richard Taylor. In the Red river campaign against Banks he commanded a brigade in the division of John G. Walker, and participated in the battles of Mansfield and Pleasant Hill. Walker's division, after the defeat of Banks, was sent to reinforce Price, who was opposing the advance of Steele in Arkansas. Waul led his brigade in this campaign, and at Jenkins' Ferry showed the skill and valor that had been his characteristics on so many former occasions. Since the war General Waul has resided in Texas, where he is highly honored as a gallant soldier and a Christian gentleman.

Major-General John A. Wharton was one of the most gallant of the sons of Texas. His father and uncle, both natives of Tennessee, were famous in the history of the war for Texan independence, as well as prominent in the civil affairs of the republic of Texas. Young Wharton



grew up in that State, studied law and became one of its most prominent orators and jurists. When the civil war began he, with B. F. Terry, Thomas S. Lubbock and Thomas J. Goree, started from Texas for Virginia with the determination of being in the first battle for Southern independence. All of the party except Wharton participated in the first battle of Manassas, Wharton being prevented by sickness from carrying out his wish. Goree was appointed by Longstreet on his staff. Terry and Lubbock so distinguished themselves that they were authorized to go back home and raise a regiment. Terry, who was a planter, became colonel of this regiment, Lubbock lieutenant-colonel, and Wharton was one of the captains. In the first engagement of the command at Woodsonville, Ky., December 17, 1861, Colonel Terry was killed. His successor, Colonel Lubbock, died soon after at Nashville. Upon the reorganization of the regiment Wharton was elected colonel. He led it in the battle of Shiloh. General Beauregard, in a description of this battle, says: "Learning about 1 p. m. that the Federal right (Sherman and McClernand) seemed about to give way, I ordered General Hardee to deploy his cavalry (Wharton's Texas Rangers) to turn their flank and cut off their retreat to the river, an operation not effected, because a proper or sufficient detour to the left was not made, and the gallant Texans under heavy fire became involved in ground impracticable for cavalry and had to fall back." But Colonel Wharton soon afterward dismounted half of his regiment and, throwing it forward on foot, drove his adversary from the position. During this battle Colonel Wharton received a wound, but recovered in time to take part in the Kentucky campaign. A brilliant affair of his, near Bardstown, Ky., just before the battle of Perryville, was made the subject of a special congratulatory order by Gen. Leonidas Polk. His political friends in Texas were so delighted with his dashing military record that they determined to send him to the Con-

federate Congress. But his mother, not waiting to hear from her valiant son, acted in his behalf, and in a card to the public said that she knew the blood that was in her son's veins, that her heart was in full sympathy with his, and that there was no political honor within the gift of the people of Texas, or of all the seceding States, that could induce him to lay aside his arms until success was assured. After the return from the Kentucky campaign he was promoted to brigadier-general, November 18, 1862. At Murfreesboro he again distinguished himself. At Chickamauga he displayed such ability that he was appointed major-general, November 10, 1863. In 1864, on account of impaired health, he was granted leave of absence to visit his home in Texas. After crossing the Mississippi he repaired to Gen. Dick Taylor's headquarters. The gallant cavalry general, Tom Green, having been killed but a few days before, General Taylor immediately placed General Wharton in command, and he, with the cavalry, and Polignac, with infantry, harassed Banks on his retreat to Alexandria, after his disastrous defeat in the Red river campaign. Wharton's career in the Trans-Mississippi was as creditable as it had been on the east side of the great river. On the 6th of April, 1865, in an unfortunate personal altercation, General Wharton was killed by General Baylor at Houston, Tex.

Brigadier-General John W. Whitfield began his military career as colonel of the Twenty-seventh Texas cavalry, in 1861. Pea Ridge was the first considerable battle in which he was engaged. Here the cavalry under McCulloch did splendid fighting, but the death of the gallant Texan and of McIntosh threw that wing of the Confederate army into confusion. At the time of this battle Whitfield was major of a battalion designated in the reports as "Whitfield's battalion," under the command of Brig.-Gen. Albert Pike. Col. Henry Little, who com-

manded the First brigade of Missouri volunteers, in his report thanks Major Whitfield, with several others, for "the manner in which, with his command, he supported his (Little's) movements in the field." When General Price was about to cross the Mississippi in 1862, Colonel Whitfield was ordered to proceed to Memphis with his command and report to that officer. General Price, in his report of the battle of Iuka, Miss., fought September 19th, said that Whitfield's legion won, under its gallant leader, a reputation for dashing boldness and steady courage which placed them side by side with the bravest and the best, and noted with regret that Colonel Whitfield was painfully wounded. At the close of the year Colonel Whitfield, having recovered, was at Yazoo City with his cavalry command. He participated in the successful cavalry battle of Van Dorn near Spring Hill, on March 5, 1863, and received the thanks of General Van Dorn for the skill and valor with which he performed his part in the action. On the 9th of May, 1863, Colonel Whitfield received the commission of brigadier-general, his command consisting of his own battalion and the Third, Sixth and Ninth Texas cavalry. Operating in Mississippi, under Gen. J. E. Johnston, on July 4, 1863, the very day that Vicksburg surrendered, General Whitfield encountered a party of 500 Federals. He attacked and defeated them at Messinger's ferry. Through the whole of 1864 he commanded a brigade under Forrest, and was in Mississippi when the war closed in 1865. He then returned to Texas, where he subsequently made his home.

Brigadier-General Louis Trezevant Wigfall was born on the plantation of his father, in Edgefield district, Harrison county, S. C., April 21, 1816. He attended the Columbian college in South Carolina, taking the regular course, until the outbreak of the Seminole war, when he enlisted, and received a commission as lieutenant of vol-

unteers. After the close of the war, he began the study of law at the university of Virginia, and upon his admission to the bar, in 1846, he moved to Texas and settled at Marshall, where he began the practice. He was elected to the State legislature of 1856-57, and was re-elected to that body for 1859-60. While serving in the State senate, in the winter of 1860, he was elected to the Senate of the United States, where he took his seat January 4, 1861. He soon made himself felt as a power on the side of his colleagues from the South. When hostilities began, Texas had not seceded, and he remained at his post, where his brilliant and defiant rejoinders to the charges against his people, and his eloquent advocacy of the justice and right of the Southern cause, won for him immortal distinction. On July 4th, when the extra session of the Thirty-seventh Congress was called, he was not in his seat, and was expelled from that body July 11th. After Texas seceded he went at once to Montgomery, Ala., was there at the formation of the Confederacy, and was one of the signers of the Constitution. He was in Charleston, at the bombardment of Fort Sumter, and served as aide-de-camp on the staff of General Beauregard. He was stationed on Morris island, under Gen. James Simons, and on seeing the second barracks in flames and the flagstaff shot away, he determined to make his way to the fort, in the face of almost certain death, and persuade General Anderson to desist from a defense manifestly unavailing and save useless carnage and bloodshed. With three negro boatmen, he crossed the bay in the face of a terrific cross-fire of ball and shell, and, entering the fort through an embrasure, insisted on surrender by Major Anderson, as further resistance was useless. This act of heroism and humanity won for him great distinction. After the battle of Fort Sumter he proceeded to Richmond, where he was commissioned colonel of the Second regiment of Texas infantry, August 28, 1861. On October 1st of the same year he was made



brigadier-general. He rendered valuable service in the army of Northern Virginia, in command of the brigade including the First, Fourth and Fifth Texas, later famous under the leadership of Hood, until February 20, 1862, when he resigned to take a seat in the Confederate Senate, to which body he had been elected from Texas. But he continued to serve in the field as staff officer whenever opportunity offered, notably in the battles around Richmond. He remained in the Confederate Senate until the close of the war, and, after the cause was lost, sailed from Galveston to England, where he resided for three years. On his return to America he settled at Baltimore. While on a visit to his old home in Texas, he died at Galveston, February 18, 1873.

Brigadier-General William Hugh Young was born in Booneville, Mo., January 1, 1838. His father, Hugh F. Young, who was a native of Augusta county, Va., removed first to Missouri, and when his son, William Hugh, was three years old, moved to Texas and lived for a while in Red River and then in Grayson counties. General Young had a liberal education, obtained at Washington college, Tennessee, McKenzie college, Texas, and the university of Virginia, and was graduated just after the beginning of the civil war. The university at this time having had a military school attached, he remained there and studied military tactics. In September he returned to Texas and raised a company for the Confederate army. He was commissioned captain, and his company was assigned to the Ninth Texas infantry. His principal military service was with the army of Tennessee. After the battle of Shiloh he was made colonel of his regiment, and as such he participated in the Kentucky campaign, including the battle of Perryville. At the battle of Murfreesboro his regiment was in Preston Smith's brigade, commanded on this occasion by Col. A. J. Vaughn, Jr., and the gallantry of Colonel Young

and his men won the especial commendation of General Cheatham. At this battle Colonel Young was wounded in the right shoulder and had two horses killed under him. Afterward, in the army with Gen. J. E. Johnston, at Jackson, Miss., he was wounded in the right thigh. At the battle of Chickamauga he was shot through the left breast. During the Atlanta campaign he was in Ector's brigade of French's division, and at Kenesaw Mountain was wounded in the neck and jaw. When General Ector was disabled so that he could no longer command his brigade, Colonel Young took his place, and was appointed brigadier-general, August 15, 1864. He was in the subsequent engagements around Atlanta and during the evacuation of that city. During Hood's march into north Georgia, French's division was sent to capture Allatoona. In the battle which resulted, General Young's horse was shot under him and the bones of his left ankle were shot in twain. Being captured in this condition he lay for four months in Federal hospitals at Marietta, Atlanta, Chattanooga and Nashville. In February, 1865, he was carried to Johnson's island, where he was imprisoned until July 25th. General Young was one of the youngest brigadiers of the Confederacy. Since the war he has resided at San Antonio, Tex., devoting himself to the law and business in real estate.

Brigadier-General Joseph Lewis Hogg, of Texas, as soon as his State seceded from the Union, with that fidelity to the principle of State sovereignty which characterized so many thousands of the men of the South, threw his whole soul into the effort to make good the claim to separate independence. He assisted in organizing bodies of troops for the service of Texas and the Southern Confederacy, was commissioned colonel in 1861, and on the 14th of February, 1862, was appointed brigadier-general in the provisional army of the Confederate States. His brigade embraced some of the flower of the

youth of Texas and Arkansas who, filled with enthusiastic devotion, hastened to arm themselves for the defense of their respective States. It was composed of Major McCray's battalion of Arkansas infantry; the Tenth regiment of Texas cavalry, Colonel Locke; the Eleventh Texas cavalry, Colonel Young; Lieutenant-Colonel Crump's battalion of Texas cavalry and Captain Good's battery of artillery. These cavalry commands had all been dismounted and were serving as infantry. Shortly after the battle of Shiloh this fine brigade was ordered to Corinth with other troops of the army of the West under Van Dorn. They reached that place about May 2, 1862. Beauregard's 30,000 men were increased by large bodies of reinforcements until his army numbered 80,000. Corinth and its neighborhood proved very unhealthy. In a short while sickness arising from the pestilential air and unwholesome water reduced Beauregard's force to 53,000 effectives. Among the victims on whom disease laid its strong grasp was the gallant General Hogg. On May 16, 1862, his career was cut short by death, and the country was deprived of his valuable services.







J. J. DICKISON

MILITARY HISTORY OF FLORIDA.

BY

COL. J. J. DICKISON.



## CHAPTER I.

### SECESSION OF THE STATE—PROCEEDINGS OF THE CONVENTION—EARLY EVENTS AT PENSACOLA—UNION WITH THE CONFEDERATE STATES—FIRST PREPARATIONS FOR WAR.

WE are told by the historian of an earlier age that whenever the renowned men of the Roman commonwealth looked upon the statues of their ancestry, they felt their minds vehemently excited to virtue. It could not have been the bronze or marble that possessed this power, but the recollection of great actions which kindled a generous flame in their souls, not to be quelled until they also, by virtue and heroic deeds, had acquired equal fame and glory. When a call to arms resounds throughout the land and a people relinquish the pleasant scenes of tranquil life and rally to their country's call, such action is the result of an honest conviction that the act is commendable. In recalling such an epoch, the wish that a true record of the deeds done should be transmitted to posterity must dominate every patriot heart. Loyalty to brave men, who for four long years of desolating war—years of undimmed glory—stood by each other and fought to the bitter end with the indomitable heroism which characterized the Confederate soldier, demands from posterity a preservation of the memories of the great struggle. We cannot find in all the annals of history a grander record or prouder roll of honor, nor more just fame for bravery, patient endurance of hardships, and sacrifices.

The noble chieftain, Robert E. Lee, said: "Judge your enemy from his standpoint, if you would be just." Whatever may be said of the contention between the two great



sections of the Union, whether by arbitration of council every issue might have been settled and a fratricidal war averted, there will be but one unalterable decree of history respecting the Confederate soldier. His deeds of heroism "are wreathed around with glory," and he will be ever honored, because he was not only brave and honorable, but true to his convictions. The sacrifices made by our loyal defenders and their glorious deeds shall not perish; but the pen of the historian shall hand them down through the ages—a proud heritage to our race and to all mankind. Now that the people who so grandly illustrated their loyalty to the Confederacy are passing away, the South claims from them a truthful, dispassionate history of the causes leading to their withdrawal from the Union, and the subsequent events when the tocsin of war sounded throughout the land.

Religion and patriotism should dominate every human life, and as love of country comes next to our love and allegiance to God, it must follow that a people panoplied with righteousness must be a highly patriotic people. The memories of the heroic sufferings and sacrifices of the noble men and women throughout the land make a history that will shine with imperishable luster, "idealizing principle, strengthening character and intensifying love of country," proving to the world that

" Noble souls through dust and heat  
Rise from disaster and defeat  
The stronger."

The grandest vindication of the South will come when Truth, no longer crushed to earth through narrowmindedness and sectional prejudice, will write in golden characters a just tribute to every American soldier who fell on either side. Let the record be: "Here lies an American Hero, a Martyr to the Right as his Conscience conceived it."

In 1860 the storm of political strife that had been steadily gathering for many years culminated with the election

of Abraham Lincoln, the Republican sectional candidate for the presidency of the United States on an avowed sectional policy. At the commencement of hostilities against the South, in Charleston harbor, and especially on the proclamation of President Lincoln calling for 75,000 troops to make an unconstitutional war on the seceded States, the war-cloud darkened all Florida and every heart burned with indignation. All former differences of opinion, all past party prejudices, yielded to the mastery of a just sense of impending danger; and, animated by the spirit that had inspired their fathers in 1776, the people of Florida resolved to unite in the patriotic effort to secure for the South an independent government, as the Constitution framed by their forefathers had been violated. With a patriotic and heroic sense of their great duty, our brave citizens throughout the State began to make preparations to be in readiness to respond to their country's call, to resist the wicked design of sectional partisans to wage a cruel war of coercion against the seceded States. Companies of cavalry, artillery and infantry were rapidly and successfully organized. The formation of these splendid organizations was so rapid that Florida secured a proud place when the time came for her troops to be received into the service of the Confederate States army.

The ablest jurists and statesmen of the country having firmly asserted, clearly elucidated and bravely vindicated the legal right of a State to secede from the general government, an intelligent, chivalrous people, proudly assured of the justice of their convictions, could not forswear the great principles of a lifetime. On the 3d of January, 1861, the people of Florida, through their delegates chosen in pursuance of the act of the general assembly, approved November 30, 1860, assembled in convention in the hall of the house of representatives in the capitol of the State, at the city of Tallahassee. This honorable body, composed of the best talent in the State, was temporarily organized with John C. Pelot, of Alachua, as chairman, and

B. G. Pringle, of Gadsden, as secretary. After an address by Mr. Pelot, the proceedings were opened with prayer by Bishop Rutledge.

The names of the members of the convention, and the counties and districts they represented, are here preserved: John Morrison, A. L. McCaskill, of Walton; Freeman B. Irwin, of Washington; Richard D. Jordan, R. R. Golden, of Holmes; S. S. Alderman, Joseph A. Collier, of Jackson; Adam McNealy, James L. G. Baker, of Jackson; Simmons I. Baker, of Calhoun; McQueen McIntosh, of Fifth senatorial district; Thomas F. Henry, E. C. Love, of Gadsden; Abraham K. Allison, of Gadsden; John Beard, James Kirksey, of Leon; G. W. Parkhill, G. T. Ward, Wm. C. M. Davis, of Leon; Daniel Ladd, David Lewis, of Wakulla; Thompson B. Lamar, Thomas M. Palmer, of Jefferson; J. Patton Anderson, Wm. S. Dilsworth, of Jefferson; John C. McGehee, A. I. Lea, of Madison; W. H. Lever, of Taylor; E. P. Barrington, of Lafayette; Lewis A. Folsom, Joseph Thomas, of Hamilton; Green H. Hunter, James A. Newmans, of Columbia; A. J. T. Wright, unseated by John W. Jones, of Suwannee; Isaac C. Coon, of New River; John J. Lamb, of Thirteenth senatorial district; Joseph Finegan, Jas. G. Cooper, of Nassau; I. M. Daniel, of Duval; John P. Sanderson, of Sixteenth senatorial district; Matthew Solana, of St. John's; James O. Devall, of Putnam; Rhydon G. Mays, of Seventeenth senatorial district; John C. Pelot, J. B. Dawkins, of Alachua; James B. Owens, S. M. G. Gary, of Marion; W. McGahagin, of Marion; James H. Chandler, of Volusia; William W. Woodruff, of Orange; William B. Yates, of Brevard; David G. Leigh, of Sumter; Q. N. Rutland, of Nineteenth senatorial district; James Gettis, of Twentieth senatorial district; George Helvenston, of Levy; Benjamin W. Saxon, of Hernando; Simon Turman, of Hillsboro; Ezekiel Glazier, of Manatee; Wm. Pinckney, Winer Bethel, of Monroe; Asa F. Tift, of Dade; Jackson Morton, Wm. Simpson, of Santa Rosa;

Wm. Wright, Wm. Nicholson, of Escambia; T. J. Hendricks, of Clay; Daniel D. McLean, of Fourth senatorial district; Samuel B. Stephens, of Seventh senatorial district; S. W. Spencer, of Franklin; W. S. Gregory, of Liberty.

The permanent president then selected, Hon. John C. McGehee, of Madison county, was sworn by Judge J. J. Finley. His address, so clear and dispassionate on this momentous occasion, is worthy of a record in these pages, that the youth of our land may better understand the lofty spirit that characterized the men who were there assembled.

Mr. McGehee said: "Gentlemen, I feel very sensibly the honor you have done me in calling me to preside over your deliberations. Such a manifestation of confidence and respect by the assembled sovereignty of my State, called together in such a crisis to consult together for the general safety, deeply affects my feelings, and in return I offer all that is in my power to give—the homage of a grateful heart. The occasion on which we are called together is one of the most solemn and important that ever assembled a people. Our government, the inheritance from a noble ancestry—the greatest achievement of human wisdom, made to secure to their posterity the rights and liberties purchased with their blood, is crumbling into ruins. Every day and almost every hour brings intelligence confirming the opinion that its dissolution is at hand.

"One State, one of the time-honored thirteen, has withdrawn the powers granted in the Constitution which constituted her a member of the Union, under the political power of the government. All our sister States immediately adjacent to us are at this moment moving in the same direction, under circumstances that render their action as certain as anything in the future. And as we look farther and beyond we see the same swell of public sentiment that a sense of wrong always inspires, agitating



the great heart of the more distant States. And no reasonable doubt can be entertained by the most hopeful and sanguine that this excitement in public sentiment will extend and increase and intensify until all the States that are now known as the slaveholding States will withdraw their political connection from the non-slaveholding States, unite themselves in a common destiny and establish another constitution.

“Why all this? The story is soon told. In the formation of the government of our fathers, the Constitution of 1787, the institution of domestic slavery is recognized and the right of property in slaves is expressly guaranteed. The people of a portion of the States who were parties in the government were early opposed to the institution. The feeling of opposition to it has been cherished and fostered and inflamed until it has taken possession of the public mind at the North to such an extent that it overwhelms every other influence. It has seized the political power, and now threatens annihilation to slavery throughout the Union. At the South and with our people, of course, slavery is the element of all value, and a destruction of that destroys all that is property. This party, now soon to take possession of the powers of government, is sectional, irresponsible to us, and, driven on by an infuriated, fanatical madness that defies all opposition, must inevitably destroy every vestige of right growing out of property in slaves. The State of Florida is now a member of the Union, under the power of the government soon to go into the hands of this party. As we stand, our doom is decreed; and realizing an imperative necessity thus forced upon them to take measures for their safety, the people of Florida have clothed you with supreme power and sent you here with the high and solemn duty to devise the best possible means to insure their safety, and have given you the charge to see that their commonwealth suffers no detriment.

“Your presence at this capitol is the highest proof that

your people fear to remain under their government. With poignant regret no doubt they leave it, but they have no ground or hope of safety in it. What are we to do in fulfillment of our duty in this crisis? I will not presume to indicate your course—your superior and collected wisdom must decide. I cannot doubt, though, that our people are safe in your hands, and that you will, in a manner becoming the dignity of the high position you hold, and worthy of the trust confided to you, promptly place them in a position of safety above the power and beyond the reach of their enemies. As one of you, representing a noble and confiding constituency, I pledge to you and to them the entire devotion of the powers of my mind in the discharge of this duty; and with my full heart, I ask you, each of you, to forget all former differences of opinion, all past party prejudices, and make now and here, on the altar of your State, your country, for the sake of your people, a sacrifice, an offering of all feeling, prepossession or prejudice that may stand in the way of perfect harmony and concord; and may the God of nations watch over us and bless our labors and guide us into the haven of safety."

A communication was received from Gov. M. S. Perry announcing that Hon. E. C. Bullock, commissioner from Alabama, and Hon. Leonidas W. Spratt, commissioner from Florida, were in waiting, and a committee composed of Messrs. Ward, Baird and Lamar, was appointed to bring the commissioners before the convention. The convention was addressed by these representatives of sister States, also by Edmund Ruffin, of Virginia. On January 7th a resolution was adopted, affirming the right of a State to withdraw from the Union, and a committee to prepare an ordinance of secession for the consideration of the convention was appointed. This committee was composed of J. P. Sanderson of Duval, A. K. Allison of Gadsden, McQueen McIntosh of Franklin, James Gettis of Hillsboro, James B. Owens of Marion, James B. Dawkins of Alachua, Wright of Escambia, Jackson Morton of

Santa Rosa, George T. Ward of Leon, James Patton Anderson of Jefferson, David Ladd of Wakulla, and Simmons J. Baker of Calhoun.

The committee, in the report accompanying the ordinance which it recommended, alluded to the method of formation of the Union and the right of withdrawal reserved by the States, and said: "The inducements which led Florida to become a member of the United States were those which should actuate every people in the formation of a government, to secure to themselves and their posterity the enjoyment of all the rights of life, liberty and property, and the pursuit of happiness. Your committee fully concur in the opinion that the consideration for which Florida gave her assent to become a member of the Federal union has wholly failed; that she is not permitted enjoyment of equal rights in the Union. The compact is therefore willfully and materially broken." The committee therefore recommended that the convention, called to protect the interests of the State, adopt an ordinance of secession from the United States, and that Florida declare herself to be a sovereign and independent State.

On the sixth day of the convention, January 10, 1861, the proposed ordinance was taken up, considered, and adopted by a vote of yea 62, nay 7; the negative votes being cast by Messrs. Baker of Jackson, Gregory, Hendricks, McCaskill, Morrison, Rutland and Woodruff.

The text of the ordinance is as follows:

"We, the people of the State of Florida, in convention assembled, do solemnly ordain, publish and declare: That the State of Florida hereby withdraws herself from the Confederacy of States existing under the name of the United States of America, and from the existing government of said States, and that all political connection between her and the government of said States ought to be, and the same is hereby totally annulled, and said union of States dissolved, and the State of Florida is hereby de-

clared a sovereign and independent nation, and that all ordinances heretofore adopted, in so far as they create or recognize said Union, are rescinded, and all laws or parts of laws in force in this State, in so far as they recognize or assent to said Union be, and they are hereby repealed."

The president of the convention, was then instructed to inform the proper authorities of other Southern States of the action which Florida had taken. The committee on enrollment reported that in obedience to a resolution adopted by the convention the enrollment of the ordinance of secession had been properly and correctly made, under the direction of the judges of the Supreme court of the sovereign State of Florida, and the same was submitted to the convention for signature. The following correspondence between the judges and Miss Elizabeth Eppes was presented and placed upon the minutes of the convention:

Tallahassee, January 10, 1861.

Miss Elizabeth Eppes:

By resolution of the Convention of the People of the State of Florida, we, the judges comprising the Supreme Court of this State, are appointed to direct the enrolling of the Ordinance of Secession passed this day. In discharging our duty, we have directed that the Ordinance be enrolled on parchment and bound with blue ribbon. The honor of binding the same, we have with your permission intrusted to you, believing that you as one of the native daughters of our beloved Florida and a lineal descendant of the immortal author of the first Declaration of American Independence, will cheerfully lend your aid in embellishing the parchment, which contains the Declaration of the Independence of the Sovereign State of Florida.

Yours with great respect,

CHARLES H. DUPONT,  
WM. A. FORWARD,  
D. S. WALKER.



Tallahassee, January 10, 1861.

Hon. C. H. Dupont, Hon. Wm. A. Forward and Hon.  
D. S. Walker, Associate Justices, Supreme Court of  
Florida.

Gentlemen: Your honored and esteemed favor of this evening just received, soliciting my aid in embellishing, by your order, with blue ribbon the parchment containing the Declaration of the Independence of the Sovereign State of Florida. I thank you, gentlemen, for the honor and the flattering terms in which your communication is couched. With you, I glory in the solemn act of our own State independence, and in behalf of the ladies of my native State of Florida I assure you we go heart and hand in the cause and will do all in our feeble power to assist in the maintenance of the proud Declaration of Independence. I cheerfully accept the portion of duty assigned me and will embellish the immortal parchment as you desire and request. I have the honor to be yours respectfully,

E. M. EPPES.

The day following the passage of the ordinance of secession, a committee was appointed to wait upon his excellency, Gov. M. S. Perry, both branches of the legislature, and the judges of the Supreme court, and inform them that the convention was ready to ratify the ordinance and invite their attendance. Governor Perry, suffering an attack of sickness, could not be present at the signing of the ordinance, and his place was filled by the Hon. John Milton, governor-elect. After prayer by Bishop Rutledge the convention signed the ordinance before the assembled citizens of Florida, after which the president declared that the State of Florida was a free and independent State, and that all political connection between her and the existing government of the United States was dissolved.

During the subsequent proceedings of the convention, which continued in session until the 21st, the following resolution was adopted: "Whereas, the State of Florida has severed her connection with the late Federal Union,

notice of that fact should be communicated to President Buchanan; Resolved, that Hons. S. R. Mallory, D. L. Yulee and George S. Hawkins, be and are hereby appointed commissioners for that purpose."

It was also resolved, "That this convention authorize and empower the governor of this State to employ the militia of this State, and such forces as may be tendered to the State from the States of Alabama and Georgia to defend and protect the State, and especially the forts and public defenses of the State now in possession of the State, and that the governor be authorized to make all necessary arrangements for the support and maintenance of such troops and carrying on the public defenses; That it is the sense of this convention that the governor should not direct any assault to be made on any fort or military post now occupied by Federal troops, unless the persons in occupation of such forts and posts shall commit overt acts of hostility against this State, its citizens or troops in its service, unless directed by a vote of this convention."

It was on January 12th, two days after the passage of the ordinance of secession, that the Federal troops at Pensacola abandoned the navy yard and Fort Barrancas and retired to Fort Pickens, removing the public stores and spiking the guns at Barrancas and the navy yard. The movement was a significant one, indicating that the Federal garrison, anticipating a demand for the surrender of the forts within the limits of the State, were preparing to act on the defensive, by concentrating in this strong fortress, on the extreme western part of Santa Rosa island, commanding the entrance to Pensacola bay and harbor. They could there sustain a siege without great loss to their forces, and when eventually strengthened by their navy, could act on the aggressive and soon control the city of Pensacola and the adjacent towns. The possession of the fortification commanding the entrance to the harbor of Pensacola was of vital importance to the safety of the seceding States on the Gulf of Mexico. No

other place on the Gulf was safe while the Federal troops held Fort Pickens, an almost impregnable stronghold, which could be taken only by an effective force and by bold and skillful movement.

The importance of Pensacola to Alabama in a military point of view rendered it an imperative duty of that State to aid in its defense, and 225 gallant Alabamians under Colonel Lomax were immediately ordered to Pensacola. At the same time the governor of Mississippi, at the suggestion of the governor of Alabama, ordered troops to repair at once to Mobile and there await orders to Pensacola. In the course of a few weeks these troops, also forces from Georgia, were encamped at Pensacola in readiness for action whenever it was deemed advisable by the commanding general to make an attack on Fort Pickens, or on such troops as would be eventually landed on Santa Rosa island to act in concert with the garrison. It was necessary that a strong military force should be concentrated to prevent a great Federal depot being established at this point, from which none of the gulf ports would have been free from annoyance or danger, especially Mobile and New Orleans. If confined to Fort Pickens the Federals could not concentrate any considerable body of troops there, and even though the other forts and the navy yard might be commanded by it, still they could not venture to occupy them while our forces were present in sufficient numbers, nor could they fit out an expedition for operations on other points. Though these demonstrations were apparently hostile, they were a necessary precaution for protection to the people of the Gulf States; and the unanimous feeling prevailed that no blood should be shed in the present state of affairs; that a Southern Confederacy must first be organized. During these exciting events telegrams were received by Col. William H. Chase, whom the governor appointed major-general commanding State troops, and by A. E. Maxwell, R. C. Campbell and C. C. Jounge of Pensacola, from Senator S. R.

Mallory, "that a collision should be avoided; that Fort Pickens was not worth a drop of blood." Governor Perry, to co-operate with the troops from Alabama and other States, had ordered a force to Pensacola, consisting of two volunteer companies of infantry, one from Leon county, under Capt. Perry A. Amaker, the other from Jefferson county, commanded by Capt. James Patton Anderson. On arriving in Tallahassee en route for Pensacola, a request had been made by the latter company and acceded to by Captain Anderson, who was at the time a member of the convention, that he would command the company on this expedition. The troops failing to get steamboat transportation at St. Marks, returned to Tallahassee and started overland via Quincy and Chattahoochee. By urgent request of Captain Amaker, seconded by Governor Perry, Captain Anderson assumed command of both companies. On their arrival at Chattahoochee arsenal a dispatch was received from the governor directing them to remain there until further orders, but within about ten days they were disbanded by order of the governor, it having been decided not to attack Fort Pickens at that time.

Before the disbandment of these companies the convention of Florida, still in session, determined to send delegates to the Southern convention to be held at Montgomery, in February, for the purpose of forming a provisional government. On the 17th day of January the Hons. Jackson Morton of Santa Rosa county, James B. Owens of Marion, and James Patton Anderson of Jefferson, were appointed such delegates.

A resolution was passed that the delegates from this State to the convention "be instructed to oppose any attempt on the part of said convention to legislate or transact any business whatever other than the adoption of a provisional government to be substantially on the basis of the constitution of the late United States, and a permanent constitution for the Southern Confederacy upon the same basis, and that in the event of the said conven-



tion undertaking on any pretext whatever to exercise any powers other than that above enumerated, that our delegates are instructed to protest against the same and to declare in behalf of the State of Florida that such acts will not be deemed binding."

Select committees having been appointed for the discussion of the adoption of proper methods in the formation of rules and regulations governing the judiciary, civil, military and naval departments of the State, and having satisfactorily accomplished this important work, on the 21st of January, 1861, a committee of three was appointed to wait on the governor and inform him that the convention was ready to adjourn and to learn if he had further communications to make. On the return of the committee with report that the governor had no further communications to make, resolutions of thanks were tendered to the Hon. John C. McGehee, president of the convention, for the impartial and dignified manner in which he had discharged the duties of the position. The convention also adopted resolutions expressing "their approval and high appreciation of the acts of Major-General Chase," as the same had been communicated by Colonels Holland and Gee, aides to the governor, and thanks were tendered to these officers, to the troops, and to Governor Moore for "his promptness and patriotism." It is worthy of note that General Chase, in accepting the appointment of military commander, informed Governor Perry that he would serve without pay or any personal expense to the State.

On the 4th of February, 1861, the delegates from the seceding States met at Montgomery, Ala., and prepared a provisional constitution for the new Confederacy. This constitution was discussed in detail and was adopted on the 8th of February, 1861. All the principal measures of that body passed or proposed during its session, met the approval and support of our delegates. The day following the adoption of the constitution, on February 9th,

an election was held for the selection of chief executive officers. Mr. Jefferson Davis, of Mississippi, was elected president, and Mr. Alexander H. Stephens, of Georgia, vice-president.

In assuming the grave responsibility of the laborious work of chief executive of the provisional government, Mr. Davis was sustained by the consciousness that the South was justified by the absence of wrong-doing on her part and by the wanton aggression on the part of the North. His farewell speech before the United States Senate possesses especial significance and historical interest. He said, "If I had not believed there was justifiable cause, if I had thought Mississippi was acting without provocation, I should still have been bound by her action." While many of our prominent leaders believed that our right to secede would not be questioned Mr. Davis felt assured that the North would not let the South go; that she would endeavor to enforce by the sword the obligations that she had broken in the political conditions of peace. In entering upon his new duties, as soldier and war minister he knew what war meant and was satisfied that the South could achieve her independence only through a long and sanguinary conflict. Thus wisely forecasting results he could not be an ardent, uncompromising secessionist until assured that the honor, the right, the freedom and the interests of the South could no longer be defended within the Union.

The first and second sessions of the provisional government were held in Montgomery, Ala., from February 4, 1861, to May 21, 1861; the third, fourth and fifth at Richmond, Va., from July 20 to November 18, 1861. On the 19th of February, 1862, a permanent organization of the Confederate States was effected, the electoral vote for president and vice-president cast by the several States being 109. The entire vote was cast for Jefferson Davis, of Mississippi, for the office of president, and for Alexander Stephens, of Georgia, for vice-president.

During the period of the Confederate government, Florida's representatives in the Senate were James M. Baker and Augustus E. Maxwell, and the members of Congress successively elected during provisional and later rule were J. P. Anderson, James B. Dawkins, Robert B. Hilton, Jackson Morton, J. M. Martin, J. B. Owens, St. George Rogers, G. T. Ward and J. P. Sander-son. Florida's governors during the civil war were Madison S. Perry to November, 1861, John Milton from November, 1861, to April, 1865. The latter dying before the expiration of his term, A. K. Allison was acting governor until the close of the war, when he was arrested with other prominent officials, by military order, and imprisoned in Fort Pulaski.

War having been begun against the seceded States soon after the inauguration of President Lincoln, the governor of Florida engaged in active preparations for the coming conflict, now inevitable. This first movement was to issue orders to the volunteer companies to organize into battalions and regiments, and for all citizens subject to military duty to make preparations at once for war and be in readiness for such service as would be required for the defense of the State and the protection of the extensive line of seacoast that would be exposed to the enemy's gunboats and transports, which would very soon be sent to blockade our ports. A prompt response was made to the call, and companies were rapidly formed throughout the State, and organized into battalions of infantry and cavalry, resulting before many months in the formation of regimental organizations composed of the finest material in the State. Four artillery companies were also formed, nobly officered and well equipped, and under such admirable discipline that when called into service they soon won a proud name by the splendid management of their guns, and their coolness and heroism. In many instances they displayed a dauntless intrepidity on the battlefield, not only in the State, but while in the

army of Tennessee. These magnificent batteries are recorded on the muster-roll of Florida's defenders as Abel's, Gamble's, Dunham's, and Martin's.

Revolutions develop the high qualities of the good and the great, and Florida's loyal citizens proved their greatness when the alarm of war was given and the clash of arms resounded throughout the land. Never has there been recorded a more prompt and unselfish spirit on the part of any people. Although the State was sparsely settled and the highest vote ever cast was 12,898, yet in proportion to her population she furnished as large a quota to the Confederate army as her sister States. The South has no prouder record of heroism and patriotic bearing of citizens and soldiers than the beautiful Land of Flowers. In the camps of instruction were gathered all the elements of a chivalrous and dauntless soldiery—brave men and beardless boys who were destined to stand in the front during the four years' terrible struggle, and come forth covered with scars, the soldier's badge of honor; others destined to be stricken down by disease and in distant lands find premature graves; and thousands who were to meet death at the cannon's mouth or in loathsome Northern prisons—whose names will be handed down, a glorious heritage of loyalty and patriotism, to be ever honored by a proud and grateful people. Many of the survivors of the cause, made glorious by its baptism of fire and blood and held in sacred loving remembrance, began their career as privates, rose by meritorious conduct to high rank and now occupy prominent places in the history of our State and country.

In obedience to the governor's call for troops for immediate service, to be in readiness for action whenever the commanding general at Pensacola should deem it advisable to make an attack, ten volunteer companies reported for duty, two from Alachua county and eight from middle and west Florida. They were ordered to the military rendezvous at Chattahoochee arsenal, which



was in possession of the State, and reorganized into a regiment to be mustered into the Confederate service as the "First Florida infantry regiment." These companies were respectively commanded by Captains Anderson, Amaker, Cropp, Powell, Hilton, Baker, Bradford, Gee, Myers, Lamar and Bright.

The organization of the regiment was effected and field officers chosen. Capt. J. Patton Anderson was elected colonel; William Beard of Tallahassee, lieutenant-colonel; and Thaddeus A. McDonell of Gainesville, major. They were ordered to report at Pensacola to General Bragg, who on the 8th of March, 1861, had been appointed brigadier-general in the provisional army and assigned to duty in Florida, with headquarters at Pensacola. On the 5th of April, 1861, they began their march, a dispatch being forwarded by Theodore W. Brevard, adjutant-general of Florida, that about 580 men belonging to the counties east of the Chattahoochee river would take steamers at that point for Columbus, where transportation and subsistence would be expected. The companies on the west side of the river would march through.

## CHAPTER II.

FEDERAL STRENGTH IN FLORIDA—REINFORCEMENT OF FORT PICKENS—CONFEDERATE TROOPS CALLED OUT FOR PENSACOLA—DESTRUCTION OF THE JUDAH—FIGHT ON SANTA ROSA ISLAND—BOMBARDMENT OF FORT McREE—EVACUATION OF PENSACOLA—OTHER EVENTS OF THE PERIOD.

WHEN on January 5th Senator Yulee wrote from Washington to Joseph Finegan at Tallahassee “the immediately important thing to be done is the occupation of the forts and arsenals in Florida,” the United States occupied the following places in the State: the Apalachicola arsenal at Chattahoochee, where there were stored a small number of arms, 5,000 pounds of powder and about 175,000 cartridges; Fort Barrancas, with 44 cannon and ammunition; Barrancas barracks, where there was a field battery; Fort Pickens, equipped with 201 cannon with ammunition; Fort McRee, 125 sea-coast and garrison cannon; Fort Taylor, Key West, with 60 cannon; Key West barracks, 4 cannon; Fort Marion, 6 field batteries and some small arms; and Fort Jefferson on the Tortugas.

As pointed out by Senator Yulee, “the naval station and forts at Pensacola were first in consequence.” There was then on the mainland one company of Federal artillery, commanded by John H. Winder, at a later date a general in the Confederate service, but on account of his absence Lieut. A. J. Slemmer was in charge. On January 8th the latter removed a store of powder from the Spanish fort to Fort Barrancas, where a guard was placed with loaded muskets, one of which was fired on the same night toward a party of citizens who approached the fort.

Slemmer moved his force over to Fort Pickens on one of the vessels in the harbor under Commodore James Armstrong, commandant at the navy yard, and on January 12, 1861, the flag was lowered at the navy yard, which, with all the fortifications and munitions of war on the mainland, went into the possession of the State. The two vessels in the harbor, the Supply and Wyandotte, steamed out, remaining in the possession of the United States officers. The eighty men under Slemmer at Fort Pickens maintained a defiant attitude. On the night of the 12th a deputation went to the fort, consisting of Captain Randolph, Major Marks and Lieutenant Rutledge, and demanded the peaceable surrender of Pickens to the governors of Alabama and Florida, but Slemmer declined to recognize the authority of those officials. On the next night a small party of armed men from the mainland reconnoitered on the island, and a few shots were fired from the fort. On the 15th Col. W. H. Chase, who as an officer of the United States army had built the forts and was thoroughly familiar with all the defenses about Pensacola bay, visited Pickens in company with Capt. Ebenezer Farrand, who had been second in command at the navy yard, and renewed the request for surrender, but this and a third demand a few days later were equally without success. Nothing remained to the State forces except to make an assault; but the Florida senators in Washington and other representative men, including Senator Jefferson Davis, telegraphed advising that no blood should be shed. In the meantime the government at Washington was sending reinforcements to Forts Taylor and Jefferson, and on January 21st Capt. Israel Vogdes, with a company of artillerymen, was ordered to sail on the sloop-of-war Brooklyn to reinforce Fort Pickens. On being informed of the latter overt act, Senator Mallory telegraphed to Mr. Slidell that it would doubtless provoke an attack upon the fort by the force of 1,700 men then assembled at the land defenses under Colonel Chase, and he urged

that President Buchanan be informed that Fort Pickens would not be molested if reinforcements were not sent. Vogdes was then instructed not to land his men unless hostilities were begun.

Thus the situation remained, with Vogdes' men on ship-board off Santa Rosa island, and the Alabama and Florida volunteers on shore engaged in strengthening their defenses. On February 11th Lieutenant Slemmer protested against the erection of a battery which he observed the volunteers working at, and Colonel Chase made prompt answer that, while he did not deem the erection of batteries as aiming at an attack on Fort Pickens, yet he would give orders for its discontinuance.

A few days after the inauguration of Mr. Lincoln, Captain Vogdes was ordered by General Winfield Scott to land his company, "reinforce Fort Pickens, and hold the same until further orders." Thus the conditions of existing peace were broken.

But when Captain Vogdes sought the co-operation of Captain Adams, commanding the fleet, in making a landing, the latter refused on the ground that his instructions forbade such action so long as there was no aggressive movement on the part of the Confederate forces. When this was communicated to Washington Lieutenant Worden, of the United States navy, later distinguished in command of the Monitor at Hampton Roads, was sent through the South to Pensacola. He obtained permission to deliver a verbal message of a "pacific nature" to Captain Adams; did so on April 12th and started home by rail. But on the night of the 12th Vogdes' troops were landed at Fort Pickens, and General Bragg, reasonably inferring that Worden had brought orders to that effect, ordered his arrest, and he was apprehended at Montgomery and held for several months as a prisoner.

On the other hand, after General Bragg took command at Pensacola, March 11th, he had ordered the resumption of work on the batteries, and had informed the Federal



commander that such action seemed "fully justified as a means of defense, and especially so under the threats of the new administration."

On April 1st a second and more formidable Federal expedition was ordered to the Gulf coast under Colonel Harvey Brown, who was given command of Florida by the Federal government and ordered to make Fort Jefferson his main depot and base of operations. He sailed on the ship *Atlantic*, followed by the *Illinois*, carrying stores, and the ships *Sabine*, *St. Louis* and *Crusader* were also in the expedition, as well as the *Powhatan* under Lieut. David D. Porter, all indicating the intention of the United States to make a formidable effort to retain armed possession of its strongholds at Key West, Dry Tortugas and Santa Rosa island. The forces with Colonel Brown landed April 18th, and troops continued to arrive, it being the intention to put 3,000 men on the island.

Meanwhile the government of the Confederate States was not idle. Provisional forces were called out for the defense of Pensacola harbor: 1,000 from Georgia, 1,000 from Alabama, 1,000 from Louisiana, 1,500 from Mississippi, and 500 from Florida; in all 5,000 infantry. General Bragg had an aggregate present on the last of March of a little over 1,000 Confederate State troops, and reinforcements soon began to arrive, so that he had 5,000 on the 14th of April, and advices of 2,000 more coming. On the 20th, the Federal expedition having arrived, affairs grew more warlike along the lines of works frowning across the bay. All intercourse with the Federals was prohibited by General Bragg, and martial law was declared at the Confederate position. But for some time there were no active operations, and late in May some of the troops at Pensacola were called to Virginia.

At other points the State of Florida had made warlike preparations for defense against hostile invasion, although it was realized that it was impossible to fortify the whole coast. From Pensacola to St. Augustine, 1,400 miles

and more, there was nothing approaching a fortification except the works at Key West and Tortugas, and those posts, the keys to the Gulf, were held by the enemy. There were a few cannon mounted at St. Augustine, at Fort Clinch on Amelia island, at the mouth of St. John's river, at Fernandina, Cedar Keys, St. Marks, Apalachicola and Tallahassee; but there were only two guns at each of the gulf points, and St. Augustine had but eleven. At this time (May) it was estimated that Florida had 700 men in the field at Pensacola, and nearly 2,000 more, organized under the last call of the President and equipped by the State, ready to march where ordered.

On May 10th the Confederate steamer *Spray* captured off Cedar Keys the United States schooner *William C. Atwater*, with thirty-one men. The boat was taken to Apalachicola and converted into a blockade runner, but was recaptured off the same port in January following by the Federal steamer *Itasca*. Tampa bay was blockaded in July, and in August the port of St. Marks was covered by the steamer *Mohawk*, whose crew also obstructed the channel by sinking a captured sloop. In July the Federal steamer *Massachusetts* captured four schooners and sent them as prizes to Key West, but when off Cedar Keys they were recaptured by the Florida forces and the Federals in charge were sent to Tallahassee as prisoners.

The Federal blockade was established at all the important ports, and the sight of the enemy's war vessels was a common occurrence to the troops on the coast. Governor Milton sought to have the harbors protected, especially the important one of Apalachicola, and received notice from Secretary Walker, August 30th, that Brigadier-General Grayson of the Confederate army had been assigned to the military command of Middle and East Florida. He was succeeded by Gen. James H. Trapier in October, and early in November the east coast was included in the new department of South Carolina, Georgia and Florida, first under command of Gen. Robert E. Lee.

General Grayson, reaching Fernandina early in September, found a circular posted, warning "all loyal citizens of the United States" to assemble on the south end of the island to escape the "vengeance of an outraged government," as the Federal troops were about to take possession; and he reported that "as sure as the sun rises" if war munitions were not sent in thirty days Florida would fall into the hands of the North. But he did not reckon as fully as he might upon the indomitable courage of her people. Florida did not at once become a "Yankee province," as he expressed it.

General Grayson was in infirm health and died soon after his arrival, being temporarily succeeded in command by Col. W. S. Dilworth, Third regiment Florida volunteers, at Fernandina. On the 10th and 11th of October Maj. W. L. L. Bowen, commanding at Tampa bay, captured two sloops carrying the United States flag with thirteen men.

The quiet which had reigned for some time at Pensacola harbor was disturbed on the early morning of September 14, 1861, by an attack upon the Confederate schooner *Judah*, which had been fitted out with a pivot and four broadside guns. She was moored to the wharf at the navy yard, under the protection of artillery on shore, when assailed by 100 men from the Federal fleet, in four launches. The Federals boarded the schooner and a fiercely contested fight resulted, in which the crew displayed great courage, but were finally driven to the wharf, where they rallied and, joined by the guard, kept up a continuous fire on the vessel. The Federals had promptly applied the torch to the *Judah*, and as the flames shot up the alarm roll was sounded along the shore and signal rockets ascended. The *Judah* burned to the water's edge and sank, and with this achievement the Federal party withdrew, after losing 3 killed and 13 wounded. This is deserving of remembrance as the first encounter of armed forces in the State during the Confederate war, in which

there was a loss of life. It did not provoke General Bragg into opening fire with his batteries, but he planned an expedition against the outposts on Santa Rosa island which should avenge the enemy's annoyances. About 1,000 men were detailed for this duty, under the command of Brig.-Gen. R. H. Anderson, whose official report which follows affords a graphic account of this celebrated affair:

"I have the honor," said General Anderson, "to submit the following report of the affair on Santa Rosa island on the night of the 8th and the morning of the 9th of October. The detachments which had been ordered to assemble at the navy yard arrived at the hour appointed and were embarked in good order on the steamer *Time*. Whilst proceeding from the navy yard to Pensacola the troops were divided into battalions, as follows: The First battalion, 350 strong, to the command of which Col. James R. Chalmers, Ninth Mississippi regiment, was assigned, was composed of detachments from the Ninth and Tenth Mississippi and First Alabama regiments. Three companies of the Seventh regiment Alabama volunteers, two companies of Louisiana infantry, and two companies of the First regiment of Florida volunteers, composed the Second battalion, 400 strong, to the command of which Col. J. Patton Anderson, First regiment Florida volunteers, was assigned. The Third battalion, 260 strong, under command of Col. John K. Jackson, Fifth regiment Georgia volunteers, was composed of detachments from the Fifth Georgia regiment and the Georgia battalion. An independent company of 53 men, selected from the Fifth Georgia regiment, and Captain Homer's company of artillery, lightly armed with pistols and knives, carrying material for spiking cannon, burning and destroying buildings, gun carriages, etc., were placed under command of Lieutenant Hallonquist, acting ordnance officer. Lieutenant Nelms, adjutant Fifth Georgia regiment, was attached to this command. The medical officers who accompanied the expedition were: Dr. Micks of the Louis-



iana infantry; Dr. Tompkins of the Fifth Georgia regiment; Dr. Gholson of the Ninth Mississippi regiment; Dr. Lipscomb of the Tenth Mississippi regiment, and Dr. Gamble of the First Florida regiment, and a detail of 20 men was made to attend on and assist them.

“ Arriving at Pensacola at about 10 o'clock p. m. the transfer of the troops to the steamer Ewing and the barges and flats which had been provided was pushed on as rapidly as possible, but not without some unavoidable delay. It was found absolutely necessary to employ the Neaffie to assist in towing, and at length, all preparations having been completed, the boats departed from Pensacola at a little after 12 o'clock, crossed the bay, and effected a landing at the point which had been indicated by instructions. Disembarkation was rapidly executed in good order and silence, and the battalions were formed upon the beach at a little after 2 o'clock a. m.

“ To effectually accomplish the object of the expedition Colonel Chalmers was directed to advance rapidly along the north beach, Colonel Anderson along the south beach, and Colonel Jackson, following a few hundred yards in the rear of Colonel Chalmers, was to push his command to the middle of the island, and deploy it as soon as he should hear firing from either of the other battalions or should perceive from any other indications that the enemy's camp was approached or assailed by the other columns. Colonels Chalmers and Anderson had been further directed to endeavor to restrain their men from firing, to capture guards and sentinels, and to place their commands, if possible, between Fort Pickens and the camp of the enemy. Lieutenant Hallonquist followed in rear of Colonel Jackson's battalion, with orders to do whatever damage he could to the batteries, buildings and camps from which the enemy might be driven.

“ After a march of 3 or 4 miles, rendered toilsome and fatiguing by the nature of the ground, the head of Colonel Chalmers' column came suddenly upon a sentinel, who

fired ineffectually at our troops, and was himself instantly shot down. The alarm having been thus given, and it becoming impossible to conceal our advance further from the enemy, I ordered Colonel Jackson to push his way through the thickets to the middle of the island, and advance as rapidly as possible. The guards and outposts of the Zouaves were now rapidly driven in or shot down, and the progress of a few hundred yards, quickly accomplished by Colonel Jackson, brought him upon the camp of the enemy in advance of either of the other battalions. Without a moment's delay he charged it with the bayonet, but met with no resistance. The camp was almost entirely deserted, and our troops speedily applied the torch to the tents, storehouses and sheds of Wilson's Zouaves.

“In the meantime Colonels Chalmers and Anderson, advancing along the shores of the island, encountered pickets and outposts, with which they had some sharp skirmishing, but quickly beat them off and joined in the work of destroying the camp. This having been most thoroughly executed, the troops were reassembled, with a view to proceeding against and destroying the batteries which lay between the camp and Fort Pickens; but daylight appearing, and there being no longer a possibility of a surprise of the batteries, I directed the signal for retiring to be sounded and the troops to be put in march for the boats. At about half way between the Zouave camp and the point of embarkation of our troops we encountered two companies of United States regulars, which had passed us under the cover of the darkness and posted themselves behind a dense thicket to intercept our retiring column, and a very sharp but short skirmish ensued. The enemy was speedily driven off, and our troops resumed their march. The re-embarkation was successfully accomplished, and the order given to the steamers to steer for Pensacola, when it was discovered that a hawser had become entangled in the propeller of the Neaffie, and that she could not move.

“ After some delay, from ineffectual attempts to extricate the propeller, she and the large flat which she had in tow were made fast to the Ewing. It was soon found, however, that with this incumbrance the Ewing would not obey her helm, and a change in the manner of towing the Neaffie was necessary. While attempting to make this change the flats and barges which the Ewing had in tow became detached from her, and still further delay was occasioned in recovering them. By the time this had been done the hawser was cut away from the propeller and the Neaffie proceeded on her way. The enemy, taking advantage of these circumstances, appeared among the sand hills along the beach and opened a fire upon the masses of our troops densely crowded upon our transports, but without doing much execution, and we were soon out of the range of their rifles. The necessity of using the Neaffie as a tug, and the accident which for some time disabled her, prevented her guns from being brought into play, otherwise she might have rendered effectual service in driving back the enemy who harassed us from the beach.

“ Our loss in this affair was as follows: Killed, 2 commissioned officers, 4 non-commissioned officers, 11 privates and 1 citizen volunteer; wounded, 2 commissioned officers, 5 non-commissioned officers, and 32 privates; taken prisoners, 5 commissioned officers, 2 non-commissioned officers, and 23 privates. The larger portion of the officers, non-commissioned officers and privates captured by the enemy were the guard left for the protection of their hospital and sick and the medical officers who had remained in the building to attend to such of our wounded as might be carried there. Notwithstanding that I caused the signal for retiring to be repeatedly sounded during the return of the troops, it was not heard at the hospital, and the guard and medical officers were cut off and taken prisoners.

“ The loss of the enemy in killed and wounded has not been precisely ascertained, but is certainly known to have much exceeded our own. From such imperfect ob-

servation as I made in passing over parts of the ground I will estimate his loss at 50 or 60 killed and 100 wounded. Twenty prisoners were taken, among them Maj. Isaac Vogdes, of the United States artillery. The destruction of property in the conflagration was very great. Large stores of provisions, supplies of clothing, camp and garrison equipage, arms and ammunition, were entirely consumed. Some arms were brought away by our men, and in a few instances money and clothing, as will be seen by the report of Colonel Jackson, and I would specially recommend that the captors be permitted to retain whatever private property they have taken.

“ It is with pride and pleasure that I bear testimony to and call to the notice of the general commanding the admirable conduct of the troops throughout the expedition and conflict. The alacrity, courage and discipline exhibited by them merit the highest recommendation, and give assurance of success in any future encounters which they may have with the enemies of our country. . . . The members of my staff, Capt. T. S. Mills, assistant adjutant-general, and Capt. Hugh M. King, Fifth regiment Georgia volunteers; Lieuts. Calvin L. Sayre and Wilber Johnson, C. S. marines, who volunteered their services and acted as my aides, rendered me active and efficient assistance throughout the whole of the operations. Captain Mills, who was with Colonel Anderson's battalion in its first encounter with the enemy, received a severe contusion in the chest from a partially spent ball, but nevertheless continued energetically to perform his duties, and Lieutenant Sayre, while fearlessly using his revolver with effect, had his thigh bone shattered just above the right knee by a musket ball, and being left upon the ground, fell into the hands of the enemy. Capt. Hugh M. King, in conveying orders and superintending the destruction of the camp, displayed commendable zeal and activity, and the ardor and intrepidity of Lieutenant Johnson, while deserving especial notice, give promise of this young of-



ficer's future success and distinction. The officers of the medical staff rendered to the wounded every service which under the circumstances was possible. Colonels Anderson and Jackson pay graceful tribute to the memory of Captain Bradford and Lieutenant Nelms, of their regiments, to which I desire to add my respectful admiration for them and for every brave patriot who fell with them for their country's liberties."

Col. J. P. Anderson, in a letter to Governor Milton, said of this engagement: "You will have heard of the affair on Santa Rosa island on the morning of the 9th inst. The object of the expedition was fully and completely accomplished, though the loss of such men as Captain Bradford of Florida; Lieutenant Nelms of Georgia; Sergeant Routh of Tallahassee; Private Tillinghast, etc., would not be compensated for, in my opinion, by the total annihilation of Billy Wilson and his whole band of thieves and cut-throats. The Florida regiment had only 100 men in the expedition, out of 1,060, and lost 6 killed, 8 wounded, and 12 prisoners, as follows: Killed: Captain Bradford, Sergeant Routh, Privates Tillinghast, Hale, Thompson of Apalachicola, and Smith. Wounded: Corporal Lanier, Privates Echols, McCorkle, Sims, William Denham, Hicks, Sharrit and O'Neal (Peter, of Pensacola). These are doing well and will recover. Prisoners: Hale and Bond, Company A; Mahoney and Nichols, Company B; Bev. Parker and Finley, Company E; Holliman, Godlie, John Jarvis, M. Mosely, and Batterson, of Company F; also Lieutenant Farley, Company E. I deeply regret that such men as Lieutenants Farley, Parker and Finley should have fallen into the enemy's hands. However, they write to us that they are well treated, but destiny unknown. By any civilized nation in the world most of these prisoners would be promptly delivered up, for they were taken while standing as a safeguard over the enemy's hospital to prevent it from sharing the fate of the balance of the camp. They protected it from flame and sword most

scrupulously, but failing to hear the signal to retire, only remained too faithful to their trust, and have fallen into the hands of the enemy by so doing. Their names should illustrate one of the brightest pages of Florida's history."

General Bragg well said of this expedition that it was a most daring and successful feat of arms. "Landing from steamers and flats on the enemy's shore within sight of his fleet, marching some three or four miles in the darkness of night over an unknown and almost impassable ground under his guns, killing his pickets, storming his intrenched camp of 600 or 700 men, driving the enemy off in utter confusion and dismay, and burning every vestige of clothing, equipage and provisions, leaving them individually in a state of destitution, and this under the close range of his stronghold, Fort Pickens, without his discovering our object or firing a gun, is an achievement worthy of the gallant men who executed it."

Capt. Richard Bradford, the highest in rank of those who fell among the Florida volunteers, was a noble and chivalrous young man, whose death was deeply mourned throughout the State. To him and other noble martyrs sacrificed on their country's altar, their grateful countrywomen have erected a monument on the grounds of the capitol at Tallahassee, inscribed as follows:

To rescue from Oblivion  
And perpetuate in the Memory of succeeding Generations  
The heroic Patriotism of the Men  
Who perished in the Civil War from 1861 to 1865.

FLORIDA BATTLES:

Pensacola, Olustee, Natural Bridge, etc.

VIRGINIA BATTLES:

Williamsburg, Seven Pines, Richmond, Cold Harbor, Manassas,  
Sharpsburg, Fredericksburg, Gettysburg, Chancellorsville,  
Wilderness, Yorktown, etc.

WESTERN BATTLES:

Richmond, Ky., Farmington, Shiloh, Corinth, Green River, Perryville,  
Chickamauga, Missionary Ridge, Resaca, Gilgal Church, Cassville,  
Kenesaw Mountain, Decatur, Jonesboro, Franklin, etc.

The situation at this time outside of the Pensacola region is described in a letter of October 29th from Governor Milton to President Davis, in which he said that the Third regiment, commanded by Col. W. S. Dilworth, was scattered from Fernandina to the mouth of the St. John's, while the Fourth, composed of eight companies, commanded by Col. Edward Hopkins, was stationed part at St. Vincent's island, part at St. Marks under Captain Dial, and at the lighthouse near there, and part at Cedar Keys. The State troops (500 or 600) at Apalachicola were under command of the governor's aide-de-camp, Col. Richard F. Floyd.

On the morning of November 22d began the most imposing military demonstration in the history of Florida, the artillery battle between Fort Pickens assisted by the men-of-war Niagara and Richmond, and Fort McRee and other Confederate batteries. The thunder of the guns continued through two days, and considerable damage was done to the works on each side, the Federal commander testifying that the Confederate fire was "heavy and well directed." The loss of life was small and the result indecisive, except as it indicated that the batteries which had been erected along the coast fronting Pickens could not be expected to do much more against her than maintain the defensive.

General Bragg reported that the enemy opened fire about 9:30 a. m. from Fort Pickens and all his outer batteries without the slightest warning. "His first shots were directed principally upon the navy yard and Fort McRee, the former known to be occupied by women and children and non-combatants, and used by us for defensive purposes only. In less than half an hour we were responding, and the enemy distributed his fire on our whole line. Soon after Fort Pickens opened two large naval steamers, supposed to be the Niagara and Hartford, took position due west from Fort McRee and within good range, from whence they poured in broadsides of the heav-

iest metal throughout the day. From the defective structure of Fort McRee it was unable to return this terrific fire with any effect.

“Assailed at the same time from the south by Fort Pickens and its outer batteries, the devoted garrison of this confined work, under the gallant Colonel Villepigue, Georgia and Mississippi regiments, seemed to be destined to destruction. Three times was the woodwork of the fort on fire, threatening to expel its occupants, and as often extinguished. The magazines were laid bare to the enemy’s shells, which constantly exploded around them, and a wooden building to the windward on the outside of the fort taking fire, showers of live cinders were driven constantly through the broken doors of one of the magazines, threatening destruction to the whole garrison. In the midst of this terrible ordeal the coolness and self-possession of the commander inspired all with confidence, and enabled him to hold a position which seemed to others utterly untenable.

“Toward evening our sand batteries appeared to have crippled the Hartford [Richmond], and she drew off and did not again join in the combat. Darkness closed the contest, which had lasted more than eight hours without an intermission. For the number and caliber of guns and weight of metal brought into action it will rank with the heaviest bombardment in the world. It was grand and sublime. The houses in Pensacola, 10 miles off, trembled from the effect, and immense quantities of dead fish floated to the surface in the bay and lagoon, stunned by the concussion. Our troops behaved with the greatest coolness and gallantry, and surprised me by the regularity and accuracy of their firing, a result which would have been creditable to veterans.

“A dark cloud, accompanied by rain and wind, at 6 o’clock so obscured the night as to enable us to withdraw in safety our transport steamers, which had been caught at the navy yard. The gunboat Nelms, Lieutenant Man-



ston, Louisiana infantry, commanding, was also at the yard when the firing commenced; but she was gallantly backed out, and proceeded to Pensacola unharmed. The fire of the enemy, though terrific in sound and fury, proved to have been only slightly damaging, except to McRee. From Fort Pickens and the sand batteries we sustained very little injury. From the shipping, which fired with much greater accuracy, the fort and garrison of McRee suffered more.

“Our loss from the enemy’s shot was 21 wounded—1 mortally, who died that night; 12 of the others so slightly as not to take them from duty. By an unfortunate accident—the caving in of a defective magazine badly planned and constructed—we had 6 other gallant men smothered, who died calling on their comrades never to give up the fort. Our women and children escaped through a shower of balls without an accident. The reports brought in during the night by my staff officers, dispatched to every point, were very satisfactory and encouraging, except from Fort McRee. Exposed in front, flank and reverse, with half its armament disabled and magazines exposed, without the ability to return the enemy’s fire, it was proposed to blow it up and abandon it. Upon mature reflection as to the effect this would have on the morale of my own troops as well as the enemy, I determined to hold it to the last extremity. An engineer officer and large working party were dispatched to Colonel Villepigue with the decision. Though suffering from a painful wound, he devoted the entire night to the necessary repairs. It was not our policy to keep up this unequal contest at long range, so we waited the enemy’s fire the next morning.

“At about 10:30 he again opened, though much more slowly, and with only one ship. We responded, as before, with caution and deliberation. Their fire was so much slackened that our apprehension about McRee was greatly relieved, and our sand batteries played with a better prospect of success against the remaining ship. Toward

evening the enemy finding all his efforts foiled that our guns were not silenced and McRee not reduced as he had predicted, turned upon the hospital and put several shots into the empty building (the sick having all been removed in anticipation of this barbarous act). The evacuation, however, was not known to them. All the appearance of occupation was kept up; the yellow flag was still flying. After this he poured hot shot into the dwellings of non-combatants in the village of Warrington and Woolsey, by which considerable portions of each were burned. The navy yard, too, received a large supply of these shot and a shower of mortar shells until past midnight, but only one unimportant building was fired, though many houses were struck and more or less damaged. Notwithstanding thousands of shot and shell fell in and around our positions, not a casualty occurred in the whole army for the day. Our fire ceased at dark, except an occasional shell as a warning that we were on the alert, the last shot being ours, about 4 a. m. on the 24th.

“ We had fired about 1,000 shots, the enemy not less than 5,000. There are no means of knowing or conjecturing the loss or damage inflicted on them, but we believe it to have been very considerable. They certainly did not accomplish the object they had in view nor fulfill the expectations of their government. The injury to our side was the loss in killed and wounded given above; a few hundred dollars' damage done to the navy yard; the burning of two churches surmounted by the holy cross—the first buildings fired—and some twenty humble habitations of poor laboring men and women, mostly emigrants from the North; and finally, a violation of our hospital flag, in accordance with a previous threat. This last act stamps its author with infamy and places him beyond the pale of civilized commanders. As they did not renew the action, and drew off with their ships in a crippled condition, our fire was not reopened on Fort Pickens, to damage which is not our object. A fair challenge, however, was offered

them on the 27th, when a small rowboat attempting to enter the harbor was fired on by us and abandoned by them. Several of our shots necessarily passed very near their works, but they declined our invitation. . . . .

“ This would seem not an improper occasion to place on record an expression of the admiration and gratitude I feel for the noble, self-sacrificing spirit which has ever pervaded the whole of this gallant little army. Called suddenly from home, without preparation, to serve an unorganized government, in the midst of a country destitute of supplies, it has patiently and without a murmur submitted to privations and borne labors which can never be appreciated. Consigned by fate to inactivity when their brothers elsewhere, later in entering the service, were reaping a harvest of glory, they have still nobly sustained their commander and maintained a well-deserved reputation for discipline rarely equaled, never surpassed. With a people capable of such sacrifices we may defy the world in arms. But in giving this praise to human virtue let us not be unmindful of an invisible Power which has ruled all things for our good. The hand of disease and death has been lightly laid upon us at a place and in a season when we had reason to expect much suffering and great mortality. And in the hour of our trial the missiles of death, showered upon us by an infuriated enemy, respecting neither women, children nor the sick, have been so directed as to cause us to laugh at their impotent rage. Verily, ‘ Except the Lord keep the city, the watchman walketh but in vain.’ ”

After this great artillery demonstration all was comparatively quiet at Pensacola harbor until the afternoon of January 1, 1862, when the Federals opened fire on a small private steamer that had imprudently run to the navy yard. In the absence of General Bragg the Confederate batteries returned the fire, and a brisk cannonade was kept up until dark. The main damage done on shore was the burning of a large and valuable storehouse in the navy yard.

Late in February the disasters in Tennessee and Kentucky persuaded the war department to authorize the abandonment of the Florida ports, and General Bragg, who had been transferred to Mobile, ordered General Samuel Jones, then in charge at Pensacola, to make dispositions at the earliest moment, working night and day, to abandon the works, removing the heavy guns with ammunition to Mobile, and other supplies to Montgomery. His instructions were: "I desire you particularly to leave nothing the enemy can use; burn all from Fort McRee to the junction with the Mobile road. Save the guns, and if necessary destroy our gunboats and other boats. They might be used against us. Destroy all machinery, etc., public and private, which could be useful to the enemy; especially disable the sawmills in and around the bay, and burn the lumber. Break up the railroad from Pensacola to the junction, carrying the iron up to a safe point."

General Jones immediately afterward succeeded Bragg in department command, and his plan of evacuation, as he stated, differed from Bragg's only in this: that he would detail Col. T. M. Jones and a few hundred men to accomplish the destruction as soon as an overpowering attack was made. Colonel Jones, left in command, sent out the valuable property as rapidly as possible until he was informed of the fall of New Orleans, when he removed the remaining heavy guns and ammunition, leaving the fortifications practically defenseless. On May 7th he was informed of Federal demonstrations at Mobile harbor, and determined to evacuate at once. All the sick and baggage were sent out on the 8th, and on the night of the 9th the infantry marched out toward Oakfield, leaving several companies of cavalry to begin the necessary destruction at a given signal. Precisely at 11:30 two blue lights were set off by Colonel Jones at the hospital, and were promptly answered with similar lights at the navy yard, Barrancas and Fort McRee, "and scarcely had the



signals disappeared," said Colonel Jones, "ere the public buildings, camp tents, and every other combustible thing from the navy yard to Fort McRee were enveloped in a sheet of flames, and in a few minutes the flames of the public property could be distinctly seen at Pensacola. The custom house and commissary storehouses were not destroyed for fear of endangering private property, a thing I scrupulously avoided.

"As soon as the enemy could possibly man his guns and load them, he opened upon us with the greatest fury, and seemed to increase his charges as his anger increased. But in spite of bursting shell, which were thrown with great rapidity and in every direction, the cavalry proceeded with the greatest coolness to make the work of destruction thorough and complete, and see that all orders were implicitly obeyed. Their orders were to destroy all the camp tents, Fort McRee and Fort Barrancas as far as possible, the hospital, the houses in the navy yard, the steamer *Fulton*, the coal left in the yard, all the machinery for drawing out ships, the trays, shears—in fact everything which could be made useful to the enemy. . . . All the powder and most of the large shot and shell were removed; the small-sized shot were buried. I succeeded in getting away all the most valuable machinery, besides large quantities of copper, lead, brass and iron; even the gutters, lightning rods, window weights, bells, pipes, and everything made of these valuable metals were removed." At Pensacola an oil factory was burned, the quartermaster's storehouses, some small boats, and three small steamers used as guard boats, and transports. The Federal troops took possession of the ruins of the navy yard and forts the next day, and on May 12, 1862, a force marched to Pensacola and raised the United States flag, beginning a hostile occupation which continued without interruption during the remainder of the war.

The presence of the Federal forces was soon made forcibly apparent to the people of the surrounding coun-

try. Reconnoitering parties were sent out toward the positions of the Confederate troops at Bluff Springs and Pollard, Ala. About the middle of May some Confederate cavalymen in Milton were assailed by a force sent to that village by boat, and a brisk fight occurred in the town. Three cavalymen, three citizens of Milton and two negroes were carried away by the enemy.

The general plan of abandoning the coast involved other Florida points in addition to Pensacola. Fernandina was evacuated in March, 1862, and the well-constructed defenses abandoned. The town of St. Augustine was surrendered on March 11, 1862, to Commander Rodgers, of the Federal flag-ship Wabash, and on the next day Jacksonville peacefully capitulated.

## CHAPTER III.

ORGANIZATION OF REGIMENTS—SECOND INFANTRY—  
THIRD INFANTRY—FOURTH INFANTRY—FIRST CAV-  
ALRY—SECOND CAVALRY—MARION LIGHT ARTIL-  
LERY—EVENTS OF 1862 AND 1863.

**D**URING the operations about Pensacola narrated in the previous chapter, the organization of troops continued throughout the State. Simultaneous with the formation of the First Florida regiment there was a gathering of the clans from all quarters; company after company organizing and forming into battalions of infantry to be eventually consolidated into regiments and brigades. Before the expiration of two years after the State had seceded, there were eight infantry and two cavalry regiments, besides independent companies enough to form two regiments of infantry that had been ordered by the secretary of war to other States, where they remained in active service until the close of the war. When the armies of Lee and Johnston surrendered the survivors of thousands of Florida's valiant sons were paroled who, through all the battles of the army of Tennessee and in all the Virginia campaigns after the first battle of Manassas, had fought with a gallantry and unfaltering fidelity that will ever reflect luster upon their State's proud roll of honor.

On account of the heavy demand for troops made by the war department, the State forces were comparatively weak for the protection of her territory with its extended line of seacoast. From accounts given by veterans who were identified with these forces we learn that they consisted of one battalion of cavalry, eight companies of independent cavalry, two battalions of infantry, three in-

dependent companies of infantry and two artillery companies. The aggregate was not more than 1,800 effective men, scarcely one man to every mile of coast exposed to the power of the enemy.

The second regimental organization of infantry, designed for service in Virginia, was begun early in April, 1861, soon making up the complement of ten companies which were destined to win a name and fame for their State on the fields of the Old Dominion. The Second infantry went into encampment near the "Brick church," about a mile from Jacksonville, almost exactly where La Villa junction now stands, until the 13th of July, 1861, when they were mustered into the Confederate States service by Maj. Wm. T. Stockton. On Monday, the 15th of July, they left Jacksonville by rail for Virginia, arriving in Richmond on Sunday afternoon, the memorable 21st of July, just as the wires were flashing the news of the great victory achieved by the Confederates at Manassas.

Next in readiness for service was the Third Florida regiment of infantry, organized early in August, 1861, under a call from President Davis for two additional regiments to assist in the defense of the Florida coast. It was composed of ten companies of the most prominent citizens from counties in south, east, middle and west Florida, some of them having formed part of the volunteer militia of the State before the war. Among them were the Jacksonville Light infantry, St. Augustine Blues and Jefferson Rifles. Others of the companies had been organized under the State law after the war became imminent, and many of them had been called out for temporary service before they were accepted to be mustered in as a part of the provisional army of the Confederate States. For this latter purpose they were rendezvoused on Amelia island, except the companies from Duval and St. John's, which were on duty in their own counties. The regiment saw little active service during the first year of



its organization, but a great deal of hard labor was performed by them and other volunteer troops in throwing up sand batteries on Amelia and Talbot islands, and thus strengthening the eastern part of the State. But one skirmish was had with the enemy in that section, which resulted in the loss of their noble lieutenant, Thomas Strange, a veteran of the Mexican war and a gallant and efficient officer. He had been sent with a small reconnoitering party to the vicinity of Jacksonville, and was killed after capturing a Federal post. The two Jefferson companies, under Capt. D. B. Bird, were ordered during the winter of 1861-62 to New Smyrna, to protect the government stores which were brought into Halifax river from Nassau.

On March 26, 1862, a detachment made up mostly from these two companies, while on duty at the beach on Amelia island, under Captain Strain, who had succeeded Captain Girardeau in command of Company H, attacked some launches which were attempting to land from the blockading fleet to destroy our stores. The fight resulted in the loss of several of the boats, and most of the occupants were killed, wounded or captured. After the evacuation of Fernandina the companies not engaged in the Smyrna expedition were stationed at Cedar Keys, where, by their experience in the hardships and discipline of camp life, they were prepared for the arduous service which awaited them later in the war when assigned to duty in the army of Tennessee. During the operations of this command in Florida, the field officers were Wm. S. Dilworth, colonel; Arthur T. Wright, lieutenant-colonel; and Lucius S. Church, major. Colonel Dilworth had enlisted as a private in the Jefferson Beauregards, Lieutenant-Colonel Wright had been in command of the Columbia and Suwannee Guards, and Major Church was a lieutenant in the Madison Grey Eagles.

Early in the spring of 1861 ten more companies of volunteers were organized as the Fourth Florida regiment

of infantry, and at once assigned to duty in the State, where they showed a devotion and daring that entitled them to the highest commendation. Company F, Captain Williams, from Bradford county, was sent to Cedar Keys in June, where Company C, of the Second Florida, under Capt. Walter R. Moore, was stationed. On the 4th of July, 1861, details from these two companies went aboard the steamer Madison to make an attack on certain vessels lying out in the gulf, and captured three schooners. Companies D, E and K of the regiment were stationed on the coast of Tampa bay, a very isolated and unprotected part of the country, having no railroad communication with the interior of the State; Companies B, C and I at St. Marks, a very important fishing point and port for shipping lumber and other stores; Company F at Cedar Keys, and H and G at Fernandina until the evacuation of that place in March, 1862, when they were ordered to Camp Langford in the vicinity of Jacksonville. The enemy having landed at Jacksonville soon after the occupation of Fernandina by the Federal forces about the 12th of March, on the night of the 24th Lieutenant Strange of Company H, and C. H. Ross and Frank Ross of Company I, Third Florida regiment, with ten volunteers, attacked the Federal picket at the "Brick Church," killing four and capturing three. In this skirmish Lieutenant Strange was mortally wounded. Soon after this event the Fourth Florida was ordered to Corinth, Miss.

While these organizations of infantry were being effected, other volunteer companies were formed of men who desired to enlist in another and very essential branch of the service in a country so open to invasion, and they were soon ready to be united into independent battalions and regiments of cavalry. In a State whose line of seacoast, washed by the Atlantic and the Gulf of Mexico, was more than 1,200 miles in extent—with no gunboats and cruisers to protect her seaport towns, neither adequate shore batteries—the defense of the territory required

great skill and sagacity in the disposition of our military forces at or near these exposed points and great activity in the troops, and for this purpose our cavalry was especially fitted, as they could bear up better under long marches through forests and swamps than the infantry.

During the latter part of the terrible conflict they were a great bulwark of protection to our homes from large invading forces that would attempt to march into the interior. Constantly were they on the alert, continuously engaged in scouting and skirmishing, bearing a valuable part in the defense of the most important sections of the State, moving with a rapidity and accuracy which seemed incredible to the enemy. Many of their brilliant exploits are vividly remembered with a thrill of pride: such as their defeat and capture of large bodies of infantry, cavalry and artillery, and their occasional capture of posts on the east side of the St. John's river, which portion of the State had been in possession of the Federals since our evacuation of Fernandina and St. John's bluff.

The companies forming the First Florida cavalry, commanded by Col. G. W. M. Davis at its first organization, were encamped for several months at Camp Davis, about six miles from Tallahassee, performing all the duties necessary for military training, by which discipline they were admirably fitted for the perilous services assigned to them in the army of Tennessee, where they were distinguished for their intrepid gallantry and fortitude in the battles of Richmond, Perryville, Chickamauga and Missionary Ridge. After the abandonment of the coast defenses early in 1862, several gunboats passed the fortifications at the mouth of the St. John's river and Yellow bluff, anchored in front of Jacksonville and landed a considerable force. Colonel Davis was ordered to send a detachment of his cavalry to Camp Langford, near the city, to aid in meeting this emergency. He sent Lieut.-Col. George Troupe Maxwell, with the greater part of the regiment, to take part in the anticipated conflict. They

were soon on the line of march for the first time to meet the invaders of Florida soil. On their arrival scouts were sent out to reconnoiter, who reported that a strong picket-guard was stationed at the "Brick church." A small command under Lieutenant Strange of the Third Florida was ordered to capture the guard, if possible without bloodshed. Thus began the first encounter in which this regiment engaged. The Federal picket guard, though about half our number, wounded several of our men before they gave up the post. It was in this engagement that Lieutenant Strange was mortally wounded. Soon after the enemy retired to the gunboats and Jacksonville was evacuated. It would have been of no advantage to the Confederates to occupy the town, as the gunboats could have at any time shelled the place and destroyed many homes of helpless citizens who were unable to leave. The regiment soon returned to its encampment near Tallahassee, remaining there a short time, when it was ordered to Chattanooga to join the army of Tennessee under Gen. Braxton Bragg.

The Second Florida cavalry, made up of prominent citizens from all parts of the State, was not organized into a regiment until after the evacuation of Fernandina. As independent companies they had been doing valuable service in defense of the middle, western and eastern portions of the State. Prominent among the squadrons operating in west and middle Florida, supporting Dunham's, Abel's and Gamble's artillery, was Col. George W. Scott's battalion. Two companies had been detached and assigned to duty on the west side of the Chattahoochee river to protect the country lying between that point and Pensacola from raiding expeditions. Independent companies under Captains Thigpen, Smith, Blocker, Milton, with Partridge's, Leigh's, Smith's, Turner's and Pickett's independent cavalry, assisted by several other independent companies, were employed for the protection of other important points lying on the west side of the



Suwannee river. The counties lying between and beyond these rivers possessed great productive capacity, and the character of their supplies made them of inestimable value to the State and to the Confederacy; therefore the occupation of this territory was greatly desired by the enemy, and only by a judicious disposition of our forces could there be any security against the advance of raiding parties guided by deserters who were familiar with the country round. Many important points on the Gulf coast, Pensacola, Apalachicola, St. Joseph's and St. Andrew's bays, were blockaded and unprotected.

On the west side of the Chattahoochee river our forces, though comparatively small for the duty required, were able to keep the enemy at bay for a long period, no demonstrations being made to call them into any serious conflict with the Federal troops, then in safe possession of Pensacola, the most valuable stronghold on the extreme western coast.

Dunham's battery, which had been received into the service in March, 1862, and was at this time stationed near the Chattahoochee river, prevented the enemy from ascending the river to effect a landing, but as soon as the water fell in the Apalachicola river so low as to prevent its navigation, the battery was removed to the St. John's river, where the enemy was in large force, and used to cover the erection of a battery on St. John's bluff, five miles from the bar, to prevent the enemy ascending the river higher than that point. This movement was successfully accomplished and the enemy repulsed after four hours' hard fighting, the Confederates holding for a time possession of the river from that point up. Captain Dunham, by his admirable management of his splendid battery, performed an important part in the engagement.

Gen. William A. Owens, who had some years previous moved from South Carolina, and was an honored citizen of Marion county and one of the largest planters in the State, organized in 1861 the first volunteer independent

company of cavalry in Marion county, known as the Marion Dragoons, composed of material not surpassed in any part of the Confederate States. Their personnel was so superb, their horsemanship so splendid, and their equipments of such superior quality, that Gen. R. E. Lee, while on a visit of inspection to the troops and fortifications on the island of Fernandina, paid them a high compliment, saying that "they were the finest looking and most superbly mounted company he had seen, not excepting the Black Horse cavalry of Virginia." This command was enrolled in the Confederate States army and assigned to duty in the summer of 1861 at Fernandina. The officers in command were Wm. A. Owens, captain; Wm. C. Chambers, first lieutenant; Samuel Ross, second lieutenant; and A. McCormick, third lieutenant. The company remained on duty until the evacuation of the island. Owing to impaired health Captain Owens resigned the command and retired to his plantation home to begin another work essential to the well-being of a community: devoting his time and energies to the material support of the cause, the protection of the neighborhoods around, and caring for the helpless families whose protectors were in the field. His nobly generous soul ever cherished a patriotic pride in the career of the gallant men who had once formed his military family, and who were greatly endeared to him by the warm friendship existing and their high estimate of him as a true patriot and noble gentleman. The Dragoons, after the resignation of their beloved commander, were divided into two companies, Lieutenant Chambers being appointed captain of one command and Lieutenant Rou captain of the other. By this arrangement there were nine independent companies of cavalry, and the tenth was formed by special order of General Finegan, authorizing Capt. J. J. Dickison to raise a company of cavalry to make up the complement for a regiment to be mustered into the Con-

federate States army for three years or the war, as the Second Florida regiment of cavalry.

Some time previous to this, Maj. J. J. Dickison, a citizen of Marion county, fitted for cavalry service as a staff officer of General Hardee while a citizen of South Carolina, had engaged in recruiting soldiers for independent cavalry service in the Confederate army. Before his company was complete a proposition was made by Capt. J. M. Martin, a graduate of the Charleston military school, who preferred artillery service, that the company be changed to artillery. This was agreed to, provided he would accept the position of captain, to which proposal he assented. It was then organized at Ocala as the Marion Light Artillery, with John M. Martin, captain; J. J. Dickison, first lieutenant; R. P. McCants, second lieutenant, and Wm. Tidwell, third lieutenant.

On the 4th of November, 1861, the company was ordered by Governor Milton to Fernandina, and instructed to call on Col. D. P. Holland for the battery of field pieces in his possession belonging to the State of Florida, with all its equipment, and to report to Brigadier-General Trapier, commanding district of Florida. In the absence of Captain Martin, Lieutenant Dickison reported the command to Col. Charles Hopkins, then in command of the post, and was received by him into the Confederate States army. On the 21st of November Lieutenant Dickison reported first and second lieutenants present with 6 non-commissioned officers, 45 privates and 26 horses, with certainty of 29 additional privates with the requisite number of horses, the remaining officers to arrive in a few days with a roll of 106 men. He was then ordered by Colonel Dilworth, commanding the department, to make requisition on the quartermaster and commissary, the company having been received into the Confederate service as field artillery and attached to the Third regiment of Florida volunteers.

The company remained on Amelia island about five

months. On the concentration of the enemy's gunboats in good view of the island, General Trapier deemed it advisable to remove his forces to the mainland, as our defensive works, consisting mostly of sand batteries, were not impregnable. During the evacuation of the island the gunboats came up and shelled the trains as they were moving freighted with our troops and many citizens who sought refuge in the interior. The only casualties were the killing of two worthy and prominent citizens. As couriers were continually coming in with reports that the enemy were landing, the artillery was kept ready for any emergency and was ordered from place to place to intercept the invaders. For a short time this command encamped near the St. Mary's river and thence were ordered to Sanderson, where, from the unprecedented severity of the weather, they suffered privation and much sickness, which resulted in several deaths from measles and pneumonia. From this point they were ordered to Camp Langford, thence to Three-mile branch in the vicinity of Jacksonville, where they remained faithful sentinels on the outpost until the latter part of May, at which time the company was reorganized.

In June, 1862, a telegram was received from the war department ordering Captain Martin to proceed to Dalton in supporting distance of Chattanooga. On their arrival they did not long remain inactive, being soon ordered to join Gen. Kirby Smith, and doing most effective service in their first and most important fight at Richmond, Ky. On this memorable occasion the gallant and heroic Martin was seriously and at the time feared to be mortally wounded. Our brave Johnson, Tidwell, Boring and Holsouser were killed early in the engagement, nobly displaying the valor and chivalry of men devoted to a sacred cause. At this battle, the Marion light artillery was the only corps from Florida present, and was placed in a most conspicuous position. Gen. Kirby Smith briefly addressed them just as the fight commenced, and in his own



eloquent manner appealed to the corps to maintain the honor of their State in the coming fight, and nobly did they respond to the appeal. The battery was immediately moved forward into the hottest part of the battle, and by its efficiency contributed in no small degree to the glorious achievements of that memorable day.

“ How fiercely that battery was hurled on the foe  
Where the minie ball hissed and where hurtled the shell;  
Too severe was our fire—the foe are in flight—  
And our noble chief said, with voice clear and loud,  
‘ You have won us the fight, our Florida’s proud. ’ ”

On recovering from his wound, Captain Martin returned to his command in the West and remained at his post until elected a member of Congress. After serving two terms he desired to engage again in active service in the field and was assigned to duty in Florida, with a command of six independent companies of infantry, which were eventually consolidated into the Ninth Florida regiment and ordered to Virginia, where they were destined to pass through many sanguinary conflicts, coming forth from their baptism of fire and blood with all the honor and distinction that could be desired by the Confederate soldier—the highest type of a patriot in arms.

At the reorganization of the Marion light artillery Lieutenant Dickison, preferring cavalry service, withdrew from the command, and it was then that he received the order, previously mentioned, from General Finegan, to raise a cavalry company to complete the Second Florida cavalry regiment, to be mustered into the Confederate State’s service for three years or for the war. The new company which he formed was composed of citizens from the counties of Marion, Alachua, St. John, Putnam, Bradford, Duval, Columbia, Clay, Volusia, Sumter, Hillsboro, Nassau and Madison. It was organized in August, 1862, at Flotard pond and mustered in by Maj. R. B. Thomas, adjutant and inspector-general on General Finegan’s staff, electing as its officers J. J. Dickison, cap-

tain; W. H. McCardell, first lieutenant; D. S. Brantly, second lieutenant; M. J. McEaddy, third lieutenant; with 5 sergeants, 4 corporals and 63 privates. During the period 1862-63 the roll was increased to 70 privates and changes made in rank of officers. Dr. J. A. Williams held the position of surgeon until the close of the war. From Flotard pond they moved to Gainesville, remaining there a week, procuring arms and ammunition, the horses being private property; thence to Jacksonville, where they did picket and other duty for several weeks, and later were ordered to Yellow bluff, and thence to Camp Finegan.

After the enemy began demonstrations on the St. John's the command was ordered to Palatka, 75 miles from Jacksonville. While on the march they captured a large number of negroes who were endeavoring to escape to the enemy, and by this timely capture discovered a plot which had been set on foot to drain that part of the country of slaves. They also captured a number of deserters. A small scouting party was sent from Palatka in the direction of St. Augustine, where they captured 1 lieutenant, 2 non-commissioned officers and 2 privates. Information being received that the Federal troops were in the habit of visiting at the Fairbank place, about one and a half miles from St. Augustine, Captain Dickison crossed the San Sebastian river early in October, 1862, and proceeded to the point where it was expected the enemy would appear. They did not come out in usual force or at the usual time. Six companies, about 350 strong, had crossed the San Sebastian river four miles below the point at which our forces had crossed, to capture our wagon train and cut off the escape of our forces. A detachment of our command held them in check until the train was drawn off, when Captain Dickison came up with his detachment and captured their rear guard of 1 officer and 26 men. The enemy held their position for several hours, then fell back in the direction of St. Au-

gustine, without doing any injury to the Confederates, 43 in number, who had so gallantly repulsed them. The next night our command returned to Palatka and was ordered to Jacksonville where they engaged in several hot skirmishes. Soon afterward being sent back to Palatka, they engaged the transport *Mary Benton*, with 500 negro troops under Lieutenant-Colonel Billings, March 27, 1863. This officer was wounded and about 75 killed and wounded, without loss on our side. The following day Jacksonville was evacuated. For several months afterward the company guarded all the country from St. Augustine to Smyrna. This duty being too heavy the command was reinforced by Company C, Capt. Wm. C. Chambers, and did good work protecting the landing of supplies from our blockade runners.

In the meantime the enemy's gunboats were concentrating in the St. John's river, and the Confederates, having neither naval forces nor batteries at the time on the river, could make no resistance. Jacksonville was in possession of the enemy, affording opportunity to land at pleasure a large army. Fernandina was held by them, a valuable stronghold, where they could concentrate troops and at any time advance with a force of 15,000 to 20,000 troops into the heart of the country, our forces having been greatly depleted by the call of troops to Virginia and the western army.

In the winter of 1863 Captain Dickison was ordered to Fort Meade to act in concert with Colonel Brevard, who was sent to take command of a battalion near that point as the enemy was in considerable force in the neighborhood of Fort Myers. At this critical time the enemy, learning of the scattered state of our troops and being strongly fortified by reinforcements from Hilton Head, made rapid preparations for an invasion of the State, anticipating an easy capture of Lake City, a permanent occupation of that region and a triumphant march on to Tallahassee, the capital, where they could be in

communication with the Federal forces at the Gulf ports. With such co-operation the whole State would be occupied by the Federal army.

Before reaching Fort Meade Colonel Brevard was ordered to return with his troops, in anticipation of the battle of Olustee. After a march day and night of 575 miles with little rest, they were too late by twelve hours to take part in the battle.

A frightful disaster which signalized the spring of 1863 in west Florida was the explosion of the boilers of the gunboat *Chattahoochee*. This vessel, carrying six guns, had been built for the protection of the river whose name she bore, and at the time of the accident was lying at anchor 25 miles above Apalachicola. On May 30th Commander John J. Guthrie was informed that nine Federal launches had come up the river and captured the schooner *Fashion*, loading with cotton, and he immediately ordered steam up to go to the assistance of the schooner. In a few moments the boilers of the gunboat exploded, sinking the vessel, killing 16 persons and severely scalding many others. Among those who lost their lives was Midshipman Mallory, who had distinguished himself by pushing his way first aboard the frigate *Congress* at Hampton Roads, after she had struck her colors to the Virginia. The guns of the *Chattahoochee* were taken off and mounted in battery on the shore, and reinforcements being sent down by General Cobb, then in command in that district, the enemy was prevented from taking advantage of the disaster. In a short time the gunboat was raised and repaired so that she was of service thereafter in defending the river.



## CHAPTER IV.

THE OLUSTEE CAMPAIGN — FORMIDABLE FEDERAL MOVEMENT—DESIGN TO ESTABLISH A NEW STATE GOVERNMENT—CONCENTRATION OF CONFEDERATE FORCES—CRUSHING DEFEAT OF THE ENEMY—OPERATIONS FOLLOWING THE BATTLE.

IN the winter of 1863-64 Florida was an inviting field to Federal aggression. The few Confederate troops left in the State were scattered over the vast extent of territory they gallantly sought to defend, and it appeared that a strong body of Federal soldiers could with little opposition advance into the center of the heart of the State, expel the regularly constituted authorities from the capital, and organize a quasi-State government which should recognize the supremacy of the United States. In a letter to General Gilmore, commanding on the coast, dated January 13, 1864, President Lincoln authorized such a proceeding on the ground that "an effort is being made by some worthy gentlemen to reconstruct a loyal State government in Florida," and he sent his private secretary, Mr. John Hay, with "some blank books and other blanks to aid in the reconstruction." Accordingly General Gilmore, on February 5th, ordered Gen. Truman Seymour to proceed with a division of troops from Hilton Head to Jacksonville. Admiral Dahlgren sailed with a squadron of five gunboats to escort the transports, and the expedition of about 7,000 men, including cavalry, infantry and artillery, was landed at Jacksonville on February 7, 1864. On the receipt of this intelligence, General Finegan, then in command of the forces, immediately notified Lieutenant-Colonel McCormick, who had an effective force of near 350 men of all arms at Camp Finegan, to guard against a surprise.

"On the night of the 8th," General Finegan reported, "the enemy advanced from Jacksonville with great rapidity in three columns, cavalry in the advance, artillery and infantry following, under command of Brigadier-General Seymour. They approached Camp Finegan as the command there were in the act of retiring. Their largely superior numbers deterred Lieutenant-Colonel McCormick from attacking them, and in the darkness of the night he withdrew his command with caution and address and joined me at Camp Beauregard, near Ocean pond on the Olustee, on the 13th inst. The enemy with celerity pressed on to Baldwin, capturing on the way five guns of Companies A and B, Milton light artillery, which had been ordered to Baldwin. They remained at Baldwin a short time, continuing their march on to Barber's the same night. At this point they were met by two companies of cavalry under Maj. Robert Harrison, Second Florida cavalry, whom I had ordered to join me, and who with much gallantry checked their progress for several hours at St. Mary's crossing with but small loss to us and a considerable loss to the enemy. On the 9th I removed all the government stores from Sanderson except 1,500 bushels of corn, which was burned under my orders.

"On the 10th the enemy reached Sanderson. On the 11th they were within 3 miles of Lake City. Here I had hastily collected, principally from the district of middle Florida, a small force of 490 infantry, 110 cavalry and two pieces of artillery. On the night of the 10th I placed this force in a favorable position two and a half miles from Lake City, in the direction of the enemy. At 9:30 the enemy advanced upon us with a force estimated to be 1,400 mounted infantry and five pieces of artillery. Here they opened upon us, fighting as infantry, and skirmished heavily with my advance line. Discovering my position and its strength and probably presuming my force larger than it was, they retreated to Sanderson,

thence to Barber's on the east side of the St. Mary's river, where they constructed field works and concentrated their whole force for a final movement on Lake City. In the meantime I used every possible effort to gather reinforcements, and on the 13th moved to Ocean Pond on Olustee."

On the 13th General Finegan reported that the cavalry command of Lieutenant-Colonel McCormick, which was charged upon by the enemy and dispersed at Camp Finegan on the night of the 8th inst., had nearly all reached him. He also said:

"This expedition is really formidable, and, organized as it is with so large a force of cavalry or mounted infantry, threatens disastrous results unless checked at once by a sufficient force. They are now fortifying Baldwin and a position on the St. Mary's river. I should have more cavalry to prevent their superior mounted force from making raids into the rich counties of Alachua and Marion and destroying the large amount of sugar and syrup which has not yet been sent to market. The supply of beef will now be suspended until the enemy has been driven out. I am intrenched at the Olustee to-night, and have about 1,800 infantry, 450 cavalry, and two batteries and one section of artillery. It is hardly prudent to move forward against so large a cavalry force, which can operate by forced marches in the night on my line of communication and perhaps cut me off from middle Florida by making a detour through the country and a sudden descent on the bridge over the Suwannee, where I have but 30 men. I will act cautiously until the plans of the enemy are more fully developed. They are piloted by traitors familiar with every portion of the country, and, knowing the position and strength of my command, the whole district will be ruined unless timely reinforcements are sent forward. Their cavalry and artillery are at this time at Sanderson, 10 miles from Olustee, and their infantry about 5 miles in the rear. They

credit me with a much larger force than I have. At Lake City they skirmished heavily with my forces for several hours, till they discovered my works and artillery, when they withdrew and retreated to Sanderson. I was not in a position to follow."

After the main body of the Federal force had reached Barber's plantation, the advance was delayed for want of transportation. General Gilmore, who had accompanied the expedition, returned from Baldwin to Jacksonville and thence sailed for Hilton Head, where he issued a proclamation, announcing that he had occupied Florida, and calling on the people of the State to take the oath of allegiance to the United States. Before leaving he instructed Seymour to hold Baldwin and the south fork of the St. Mary's as his outposts from Jacksonville, and occupy Palatka and Magnolia, on the St. John's. But on the 17th, Seymour informed him that he was advancing toward the Suwannee river, though without supplies. Gilmore answered hastily, complaining that Seymour was not following instructions and repeating that the objects of the Florida expedition were as follows: First, to bring Florida into the Union; second, to revive the trade on the St. John's river; third, to recruit the negro regiments and organize a regiment of Florida white troops; fourth, to cut off in part the Confederate supplies drawn from Florida. On the morning of February 20th, General Seymour moved out from Barber's, with all the disposable force at his control, "with the intention," he afterward reported, "of meeting the enemy at or near Lake City, and of then pushing the mounted force to the Suwannee river, to destroy if possible the railroad bridge at that stream."

By the 13th of February there was concentrated near Lake City a Confederate force of 4,600 infantry, 600 cavalry and three field batteries, 12 guns. This force was organized into two brigades. The First brigade, Col. A. H. Colquitt, included the Sixth, Nineteenth, Twenty-third, Twenty-seventh and Twenty-eighth



Georgia regiments; the Sixth Florida battalion and the Chatham battery of Georgia artillery. The Second brigade was composed of the Thirty-second and Sixty-fourth Georgia volunteers, First regiment Georgia regulars, First Florida battalion, Bonaud's battalion infantry and Guerard's light battery, Col. George P. Harrison commanding the brigade. The cavalry was commanded by Col. Caraway Smith, and the Florida light artillery was unattached, in reserve.

General Finegan encamped his little army on a line between Ocean pond and a cypress pond, a position which met the approval of Lieut. M. B. Grant, who was sent from Savannah to act as engineer officer of the command. The country along the line of the railroad east of the Suwannee is exceedingly low and flat, with such streams as would be of little assistance to a defense. The position selected by General Finegan was, in fact, according to the engineer "the only point offering any advantages whatever between Lake City and the south prong of the St. Mary's, the latter being in possession of the enemy. Before the arrival of Lieutenant Grant two small works had been thrown up under direction of Major Bonaud, Second Florida battalion. The left of the line rested upon Ocean pond, a sheet of water some four miles by two, while in front of the line and to the left of the railroad was an open pond, averaging 250 yards in width, extending to within 300 yards of Ocean pond. To the right of the railroad and at an average distance of 400 yards in advance of the line there extended "a thick bay," impassable except within 200 yards on the right of the railroad. Intervening between this bay and our line was an open field over which the enemy would have to advance in approaching the works. Major Clarke, of the engineer corps, arrived, and the fortification of this strong line continued under his direction until the 20th, when the battle was brought on unexpectedly in advance of the fortified line. The enemy advanced that morning early,

in two columns, one by the railroad and the other by the Lake City and Jacksonville road, and they pushed forward rapidly, supposing they had only to contend with the forces they had previously met, and unaware of the reinforcements concentrated at Olustee.

As soon as General Finegan was advised of this movement he sent forward Colonel Caraway with the cavalry, who found the enemy three or four miles east of the Confederate position, and reporting that fact engaged in skirmishing with the Federal advance guard. Col. George P. Harrison, commanding the Second brigade, was then instructed to send forward the Sixty-fourth Georgia and two companies of the Thirty-second, and these troops, going forward from the intrenchments at noon, were instructed to engage the enemy lightly and fall back with a view of drawing him to the works. Next, Colquitt was ordered forward to support the cavalry and infantry, and next the remainder of Harrison's brigade. Thus the battle was brought on some distance to the east of the line selected for defense. Said Colonel Harrison in his report:

"I had scarcely put my command in the double-quick when the report of artillery in my front indicated that the fight had opened. Quickening our pace we moved on until within a few hundred yards of the place where the road we were upon crossed the railroad. Here I halted for a moment, but observing General Colquitt forming his line, and seeing the position across the railroad of the enemy, then sweeping the front of my column with a battery in position near the cross-roads, I moved to the left in double-quick, crossed the railroad and formed line of battle upon the left of that just established by General Colquitt. About this time the action became general. Being now at long range I advanced in conjunction with the right of the line to within about 200 yards of the enemy, who stubbornly stood his ground. In about this position the field was hotly contested by

both parties for about an hour, when the enemy gave way slowly before the close pressure of our gallant men; but soon a new line of the enemy appeared and our advance was checked. His resistance now seemed more stubborn than before for more than twenty minutes, when the enemy sullenly gave back a little, apparently to seek a better position, but still held us at bay. Now the results of the day seemed doubtful. It was whispered down the line, particularly in the Sixth and Thirty-second Georgia regiments, that our ammunition was failing and no ordnance train in sight. This I immediately reported to General Colquitt, who urged that we hold our ground, stating that ammunition would certainly reach us directly. This, I am proud to say, was heroically complied with by my command, many of them for fifteen or twenty minutes standing their ground without a round of ammunition. Seeing the critical position of affairs I dismounted, placed one of my staff whose horse had been disabled upon mine, and he, with the remainder of my staff and couriers, was employed in conveying ammunition from a train of cars some half mile or more distant. By several trips they succeeded in supplying sufficient ammunition to our line to enable the reopening of a rapid and effective fire, before which the enemy had commenced to retire slowly, still keeping up his fire upon us, when the First Florida battalion, under command of Lieut.-Col. C. F. Hopkins, and a section of Guerard's battery, under Lieut. W. Robert Gignilliat, arrived from the intrenchments. I at once ordered the former to the support of the Sixty-fourth Georgia, whose ammunition was nearly exhausted, and the latter to take position and open fire near the left center. These reinforcements, together with some that arrived upon the right, served to embolden our men and intimidate the enemy, for their retreat now became more hurried and their fire less rapid and effective. Under instruction from General Colquitt I now threw forward the Sixth and Thirty-second

ond Georgia to flank the enemy upon their right, which movement succeeded admirably, for soon their right was exposed to a cross fire, which told upon their ranks with fine effect. A general advance of our line now drove the enemy, who retreated, at first sullenly, but now precipitately, before our victorious arms for some miles, when night came on, and by order of General Colquitt we ceased firing and our line halted."

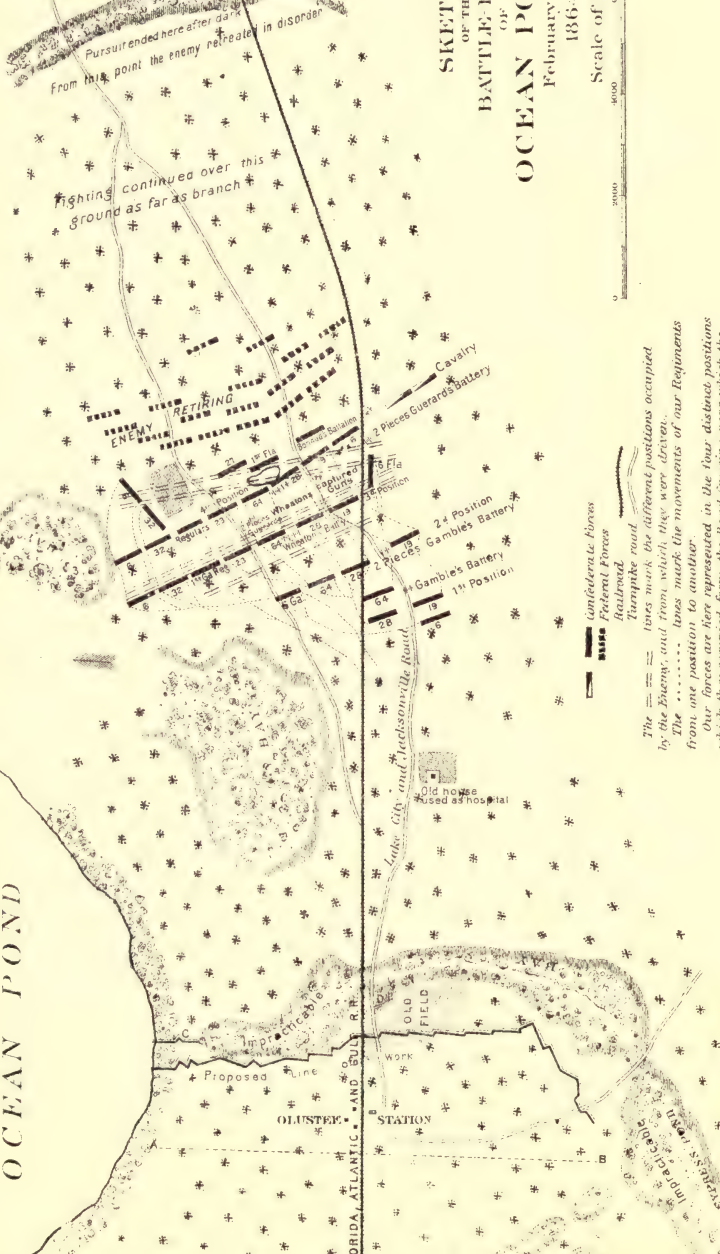
Colonel Caraway Smith, commanding cavalry, gave the following account of the service of his troops: "On the morning of the 20th, it being reported that the enemy were advancing from the direction of Sanderson, I received orders from the brigadier-general commanding to advance and meet them for the purpose of ascertaining their position and number. I accordingly moved out with all the cavalry force then available, which consisted of 250 men, Fourth Georgia cavalry, Colonel Clinch commanding, and 202 men of the Second Florida cavalry, under Lieutenant-Colonel McCormick. I discovered the enemy about four miles distant from our encampment, occupying in force the second crossing of the railroad from Olustee. I reported the fact to you immediately and directed Colonel Clinch to advance a body of skirmishers from his regiment to attack the enemy's pickets, which he did promptly and was pushing the attack earnestly when they were met by a much larger force from the enemy, which compelled them to retire to their horses. This they did in good order. The enemy then moved forward with his whole force, skirmishing on our rear, which we resisted with our rear guard, keeping him in check, while the cavalry retired in line and in perfect order. This skirmishing was kept up until we reached the first crossing of the railroad from Olustee. There I found our infantry and artillery under the command of Brigadier-General Colquitt, from whom I received orders to dispose of the cavalry on the right and left wings of our army, to prevent any flank movement of the enemy.



I accordingly ordered Colonel Clinch to occupy the left with his regiment and Lieutenant-Colonel McCormick with the Second Florida cavalry to take position on the right. Early in the action Colonel Clinch received a severe wound in the leg which made it necessary for him to retire from the field and the command of his regiment then devolved upon Captain Brown, who kept an efficient guard on the left flank while Lieutenant-Colonel McCormick protected the right. On two occasions I discovered that the enemy was attempting to cross the railroad on the right of our infantry, evidently for the purpose of turning that wing, when I directed Lieutenant-Colonel McCormick to dismount a portion of his regiment and drive him back, which he did effectually. Thus by the vigilance of the cavalry on the right and left, the enemy was prevented from deploying his large force so as to turn either flank. The Fifth Florida cavalry battalion, commanded by Maj. G. W. Scott, was not brought upon the field until late in the evening, in consequence of the jaded condition of the men and horses from hard service for the twenty hours preceding. He, however, joined Lieutenant-Colonel McCormick on the right, about the middle of the contest, and rendered him prompt assistance. The fight terminating at night and our infantry lines not being perceptible to me through the woods, and the face of the country being cut up by swamps, making it very favorable for ambushing under cover of night, I deemed it inadvisable to push forward with the whole cavalry force until further information could be had of the position of affairs. In addition to this, after the order to move forward was being executed, another order was received to the effect that we were getting under the fire of our men and also that I should beware of an ambush. I attached the more importance to this order because it had already been discovered that a large body of the enemy's cavalry were resting on the opposite side of a swamp from us. The cavalry, however, as soon as



OCEAN POND



# SKETCH OF THE BATTLE FIELD OF OCEAN POND, FLA. February 20, 1864

Scale of Feet



The lines mark the different positions occupied by the Enemy, and from which they were driven. The ..... lines mark the movements of our Regiments from one position to another. Our forces are here represented in the four distinct positions which they occupied, from the Road-crossing near which the fight opened to where the Enemy's retrograde movement began; from this point our whole line advanced in pursuit.

M.B. GRANT  
Lieut Corps Eng'rs U.S.A.  
Del.

possible followed up the enemy and gathered a number of prisoners, amounting to about 150. In addition to this, several prisoners were taken by Lieutenant-Colonel McCormick and Major Scott while protecting the right flank.

"I have to report that Colonel Clinch and three men of the Fourth Georgia cavalry were wounded. One of the wounded men is missing and supposed to be dead. It is due to the companies of Captains Stephens and Maxwell, of the Second Florida cavalry, to state that the conduct of the men and officers while acting as the rear guard of the cavalry, as we were falling back before the enemy, was highly satisfactory. They behaved with the coolness and deliberation of veterans."

Brig.-Gen. Alfred H. Colquitt, commanding First brigade, in his account of the battle, said:

"Intelligence having been received of the approach of the enemy, I was instructed to take three regiments of my own brigade, with a section of Gamble's artillery, and proceed to the front and assume command of all the forces which had preceded me, consisting of two regiments of cavalry under command of Colonel Smith; the Sixty-fourth Georgia regiment and two companies of the Thirty-second Georgia. Subsequently other troops were sent forward and I was directed to call for such reinforcements as might be needed. About two miles from Olustee station I found the enemy advancing rapidly and our cavalry retiring before them. I threw forward a party of skirmishers and hastily formed line of battle under a brisk fire from the enemy's advance. The Nineteenth Georgia was placed on the right and the Twenty-eighth Georgia on the left, with a section of Captain Gamble's artillery in the center. The Sixty-fourth and the two companies of the Thirty-second were formed on the left of the Twenty-eighth and the Sixth Georgia regiment was sent still farther to the left to prevent a flank movement in that direction. Instructions were sent to Colonel



Smith, commanding cavalry, to place his regiments on the extreme flanks and to guard against any movement of the enemy from either side.

"The line of infantry was then ordered to advance, which was gallantly done, the enemy contesting the ground and giving way slowly. Perceiving that the enemy were in strong force, I sent back for reinforcements and a fresh supply of ammunition. The Sixth Florida battalion and Twenty-third Georgia regiment soon arrived for my support. The Florida battalion was formed on the right of the Nineteenth Georgia and in such position as to come in on the left flank of the enemy. The Twenty-third was put on the left of the Sixty-fourth. Colonel Harrison coming up with the Thirty-second and First Georgia regulars took position on the left between the Twenty-third and Sixth, and was instructed to assume the general direction of the left of the line. The section of Gamble's artillery in the center having been disabled by the loss of horses and injury to limber, Captain Wheaton, who had early arrived upon the field with the Chatham artillery and had taken position on the right, was ordered to the center to relieve Captain Gamble. This battery moved forward and took position under a heavy fire and continued to advance with the line of infantry until the close of the action. Toward night, when Captain Wheaton's ammunition was almost expended, a section of Guerard's battery, of Harrison's brigade, moved up under Lieutenant Gignilliat, and opened fire on the enemy, furnishing Captain Wheaton with part of his ammunition.

"After our line had advanced about one-quarter of a mile, the engagement became general and the ground was stubbornly contested. With two batteries of artillery immediately in our front and a long line of infantry strongly supported, the enemy stood their ground for some time, until the Sixth Florida battalion on the right flank and all the troops in front passing steadily for-

ward, compelled them to fall back and leave five pieces of artillery in our possession. At this time, the ammunition beginning to fail, I ordered the commanding officers to halt their regiments and hold their respective positions until a fresh supply could be brought from the ordnance wagons which, after much delay, had arrived upon the field. Major Bonaud's battalion came upon the field, followed soon after by the Twenty-seventh Georgia and the First Florida battalion. These troops were put in position near the center of the line and a little in advance, to hold the enemy in check until the other commands could be supplied with cartridges. As soon as this was accomplished I ordered a general advance, at the same time sending instructions to Colonel Harrison to move the Sixth and Thirty-second regiments around on the right flank of the enemy. The Twenty-seventh, under Colonel Zachry, pushing forward with great vigor upon the center, and the whole line moving as directed, the enemy gave way in confusion. We continued the pursuit for several miles, when night put an end to the conflict. Instructions were given to the cavalry to follow close upon the enemy and seize every opportunity to strike a favorable blow.

“The results of the engagement in the killed and wounded and prisoners of the enemy, and our own loss, will be found in the reports rendered directly to you. The gallantry and steady courage of officers and men during the engagement are beyond all praise. For more than four hours they struggled with unflinching firmness against superior numbers until they drove them in confusion and panic to seek safety in flight.

“Col. George P. Harrison, who commanded on the left, displayed skill, coolness and gallantry. The officers commanding the various regiments did their duty nobly. Colonel Evans, commanding the Sixty-fourth Georgia, and Captain Crawford, commanding Twenty-eighth Georgia, both gallant officers, were wounded. Lieutenant-Colonel

Barrow of the Sixty-fourth Georgia, a brave and gallant officer, received a fatal shot while gallantly attempting to rally his men. Captain Wheaton and the officers and men of his battery are entitled to special commendation for their courage, coolness and efficiency. Captain Grat-tan, assistant adjutant-general, Lieutenant Colquitt, aide-de-camp, Major Ely and Lieutenant Estill of my staff, were active and conspicuous in every part of the field. My thanks are due Lieutenant Thompson, Second Florida regiment, and Mr. Sterling Turner, volunteer aides, for their gallant services. The names of those in the ranks entitled to be particularly mentioned may be furnished in a subsequent report."

The service of the artillery is appropriately mentioned in the reports of several officers. Capt. Robert H. Gamble, commanding Leon light artillery, said that in the action of the 20th inst. 77 enlisted men, with all the officers of the company, were engaged. "The total number of casualties were as follows: Gun-Corporal Craven Atkinson and Private M. B. Smith, killed; A. C. McCants struck by a fragment of shell and J. B. Lynn struck by a spent ball and B. Bishop wounded in hand, since returned to duty; J. D. Sauls and Wm. Bishop injured by gun carriage. I desire to commend specially for their coolness during the engagement Sergt. R. F. Phillips, Corporals J. R. Lewis and A. W. Mason, Privates James Lee, A. D. Cone, Thomas Neary, Dennis O'Connor, A. M. May, J. J. Smith and Brickle. Lieutenants Dyke and Gamble, chiefs of sections, and Lieut. J. N. Whitner, chief of the line caissons, rendered all the assistance in their power in handling the guns. First-Sergt. F. B. Papy was also active in the discharge of his duty. Two battery horses were killed and seven wounded. These accidents among the horses threw several teams into confusion, during which two limbers were badly injured. The trail of the 12-pounder howitzer was crushed during the action by the recoil of the gun, but

firing was continued from the piece until the broken end of the trail was so deeply imbedded in the earth as to render the gun no longer serviceable, when it was carried off the field."

To these reports may be added the more comprehensive account of General Finegan, commanding the heroic little army. He said:

"On the 20th inst. the enemy advanced in three columns, since ascertained to have been twelve regiments of infantry, nine of white and three of black, estimated at 8,000, and some artillery, number of guns unknown, and 1,400 cavalry. At noon the enemy were within 3 miles of my position. I ordered the cavalry under Colonel Smith, Second Florida cavalry, supported by the Sixty-fourth Georgia, Colonel Evans commanding, and two companies of the Thirty-second Georgia, to advance and skirmish with the enemy and draw them to our works. The remaining force was placed under arms and prepared for action. Apprehending that the enemy was too cautious to approach our works, I ordered Brigadier-General Colquitt, commanding First brigade, to advance with three of his regiments and a section of Gamble's artillery and assume command of the entire force then ordered to the front, and feel the enemy by skirmishing, and if he was not in too heavy force to press him heavily. I had previously instructed Colonel Smith, commanding cavalry, to fall back as our infantry advanced and protect their flanks. This movement was predicated on the information that the enemy had only three regiments of infantry, with some cavalry and artillery. Perceiving that in this movement the force under Brigadier-General Colquitt's command might become too heavily engaged to withdraw without a large supporting force, and intending that if the enemy should prove to be in not too great strength to engage them, I ordered in quick succession, within the space of an hour, the whole command to advance to the front as a supporting force, and myself went



upon the field. These reinforcements were pushed rapidly forward and, as I anticipated, reached the field at the moment when the line was most heavily pressed, and at a time when their presence gave confidence to our men and discouragement to the enemy. I directed Lieutenant-Colonel Hopkins, commanding First Florida battalion, and Major Bonaud, commanding Bonaud's battalion, to fall into line on the left in the direction of the enemy's heaviest firing. After I had ordered these reinforcements and they were some distance on the way to the front, and while I was on the way to the front, I received from Brigadier-General Colquitt, commanding in front, a request for the reinforcements which had already been ordered. The engagement became general very soon after it commenced. The enemy were found in heavy force: their infantry drawn up in three supporting lines, their artillery in position, cavalry on three flanks and rear. I ordered Brigadier-General Colquitt to press them with vigor, which he did with much judgment and gallantry. They contested the ground stubbornly and the battle lasted for four and a half hours. At the end of this time, the enemy's lines having been broken and reformed several times, and two fine Napoleon and three 10-pounder Parrott guns and one set of colors captured from them, they gave way entirely and were closely pressed for 3 miles until nightfall. I directed Brigadier-General Colquitt to continue the pursuit, intending to occupy Sanderson that night, but in deference to his suggestion of the fatigue of the troops and the disadvantages of the pursuit in the dark, and in consequence of a report from an advanced cavalry picket that the enemy had halted for the night and taken a position which was subsequently ascertained to be incorrect, I withdrew the order. During the continuance of the battle, also after the enemy had given way, I sent repeated orders to Col. Caraway Smith, commanding cavalry, to press the enemy on his flanks and to

continue in the pursuit. But through some misapprehension these orders failed to be executed by him, and only two small companies on the left, and these but for a short distance, followed the enemy.

“The enemy retreated that night hastily and in some confusion to Sanderson, leaving a large number of their killed and wounded in our possession on the field. Their loss in killed, both officers and privates, was large. Four hundred and eighteen of their wounded were removed by us from the field, and 400 or near that number were buried by us; also 200 prisoners were captured, several officers of high rank were killed and others severely wounded. Their loss cannot be less than 2,000 or 2,500 men, 5 superior guns, 1 set of colors captured, and 1,600 stand of arms; also 130,000 rounds of cartridges, as appears from the report of the ordnance officer herewith enclosed. The victory was complete and the enemy retired in rapid retreat, evacuating in quick succession Barber’s and Baldwin and falling back on Jacksonville. The enemy’s forces were under command of Brigadier-General Seymour, who was present on the field.

“The conduct of Brigadier-General Colquitt entitles him to high commendation. He exhibited ability in the formation of his line and gallantry in his advance on the enemy. I have also to speak most favorably of Col. George P. Harrison, commanding Second brigade, who exhibited in the engagement all the qualities of a capable and efficient officer. Col. R. B. Thomas, as chief of artillery, likewise rendered efficient service on the field. Colonel Evans, commanding Sixty-fourth Georgia volunteers, and Col. Duncan L. Clinch, commanding Fourth Georgia cavalry, were wounded while bravely performing their duty. Lieutenant-Colonel Barrow, Sixty-fourth Georgia volunteers, and Captain Cannon, commanding, and Lieutenant Daney, of the First Georgia regulars, also Lieutenant Holland, commanding detachment from conscript camp, all officers of high promise, were killed.

Among the killed and wounded were many other officers and men who had distinguished themselves on other fields, for a detailed statement of whom and for instances of individual merit I refer to the reports of brigade commanders. Our loss in the engagement was 93 killed and 841 wounded, a large proportion very slightly. In the opening of the engagement the cavalry, under command of Colonel Smith, skirmished with the enemy with spirit and retired to the flanks in obedience to their orders.

"On the 22d inst., having repaired the railroad so as to secure my supplies, I advanced the command to Sanderson, pushing the cavalry rapidly in the direction of the enemy; and from Sanderson to Barber's and thence to Baldwin and to a point 12 miles from Jacksonville, where my further progress was arrested by orders from Brigadier-General Gardner, who had been directed to assume command."

Lieutenant Drury Rambo, Company A, Milton light artillery, was ordered to the front about 1 p. m., taking a Parrott gun forward by rail, but was informed that the piece could not be used. After the enemy gave way he threw a few shells into their ranks.

In General Harrison's report he mentioned the following casualties in the First Florida battalion: Lieut.-Col. C. F. Hopkins, wounded in arm and thigh, slightly; Lieut. S. K. Collins, Company E, wounded in face, slightly; Lieut. Theophilus Williams, Company F, wounded in breast, slightly. The official statement of casualties showed a total loss in the Confederate ranks of 7 officers and 86 men killed; 49 officers and 798 men wounded, and 6 missing; aggregate, 946. The Sixth Florida battalion lost 1 officer, Lieut. Thomas J. Hill, and 8 men, killed, and 4 officers and 69 men wounded; the First Florida battalion lost 3 men killed and 47 wounded, and the Second Florida battalion (Twenty-eighth Georgia) lost Lieut. W. W. Holland, and 11 men killed, and 2 officers and 93 men wounded.

Under date of February 22d General Beauregard, at Charleston, sent the following congratulatory message to General Finegan: "I congratulate you and your brave officers and their commands on your brilliant victory over the enemy on the 20th inst. Your country will be cheered by this timely success, and I trust it is but the earnest of heavier and crushing blows which shall destroy our enemy on the soil of Florida."

Commendation from still higher sources also came to cheer the hearts of the defenders of Florida, in the following joint resolution of thanks to General Finegan and the officers and men of his command:

Resolved by the Congress of the Confederate States of America, That the thanks of Congress are due, and are hereby tendered, to Brig.-Gen. Joseph Finegan and the officers and men of his command, for the skill and gallantry displayed in achieving the signal victory of Ocean Pond, Fla., on the 20th of February, last.

T. S. BOCOCK,

Speaker of the House of Representatives.

R. M. T. HUNTER,

President pro tempore of the Senate.

Approved May 17, 1864.

JEFFERSON DAVIS.

The prominent officers engaged on the Federal side in this memorable battle under Gen. Truman Seymour were Colonels William B. Barton, Joseph R. Hawley, J. Montgomery and Guy V. Henry, commanding brigades, and Capt. John Hamilton, commanding artillery battalion of three batteries. The Federal loss, according to their official reports, was 11 officers and 192 men killed; 42 officers and 1,110 men wounded; 2 officers and 504 men missing; an aggregate of 1,861.

While our victory was complete at Olustee, the Federals had the vantage ground in that we were not in sufficient force with persistent troops to pursue them vigorously, thus giving them time to fall back to their intrenchments and with their rapid extension of field works



render their position almost impregnable to such force as we could array. After their defeat in a battle where the opposing forces were nearly equal, the Federals fell back to the 2,000 retained in rear near Jacksonville to guard their line of communication, and received not less than 5,000 reinforcements, the estimate of troops concentrated in and around Jacksonville being not less than 12,000, probably from that number to 15,000. Thus strongly intrenched and supported by not less than four gunboats, it was not advisable for the Confederates to attempt an attack. The spirit of our troops would have led them to make an attempt to carry the works around Jacksonville, but it would have been at a great sacrifice of life and to no purpose, as the gunboats would have controlled it. As there was no reason to doubt the correctness of the estimate made of the strength of the enemy, the only measures to be adopted for expelling them from their base of operations was the concentration of all available forces at our command at such places as would be best for a successful operation against their approach. This could only be done by placing troops at favorable points on the St. John's, and so fortifying them as to prevent such an invasion as the one attempted by them, which had ended so disastrously. It was, therefore, absolutely necessary for the protection of the State that our Florida forces should still have the support of the troops that had come to their assistance at the battle of Olustee.

Menaced by a formidable army not twenty miles distant it was truly a momentous crisis, and our commanding generals, deeply impressed by the gravity of the responsibility, moved their headquarters to Baldwin to be nearer the field of action and in readiness for any emergency. The opportune arrival of General Beauregard was hailed as a harbinger of relief. His presence infused new life into the army, and the confidence in his generalship and strategic ability inspired a stronger hope of ultimate success. For nearly two weeks he remained

at Baldwin, making such judicious disposition of the troops as would be most advantageous in the event of a defensive or aggressive movement. The same forces that were engaged in the battle of Olustee were retained:

Colquitt's brigade: Sixth, Nineteenth, Twenty-third, Twenty-seventh and Twenty-eighth Georgia regiments and Chatham artillery. Harrison's brigade: First Georgia regulars, Thirty-second and Sixty-fourth Georgia regiments, Bonaud's battalion, Fourth Georgia cavalry, and Guerard's battery.

District of East Florida, Brig.-Gen. Joseph Finegan: First Florida battalion infantry, Col. Chas. A. Hopkins; Second Florida battalion infantry, Col. Theodore Brevard; Sixth Florida battalion infantry, Col. John M. Martin; independent company Florida infantry, Capt. J. C. Eichelberger; independent company Florida infantry, Capt. B. L. Reynolds; independent company Florida infantry, Capt. John McNeill; five companies Second Florida cavalry, Lieut.-Col. A. McCormick; company independent cavalry, Capt. James D. Starke; company independent cavalry, Capt. W. H. Cone; Milton light artillery, Company A, Capt. Joseph L. Dunham; Milton light artillery, Company B, Capt. H. F. Abell.

District of Middle Florida, Brig.-Gen. W. M. Gardner: five companies Second Florida cavalry, Col. Caraway Smith; Fifth battalion Florida cavalry, Col. G. W. Scott; Fourth battalion Florida infantry, Maj. James F. McClellan; Florida partisan rangers, Capt. W. J. Robinson; Florida light artillery, Capt. Robert H. Gamble.

Having satisfactorily arranged matters in Florida and instructed the major-general in command as to the mode of operations decided upon, General Beauregard returned to South Carolina. On his arrival at Charleston he sent the following report, March 25th, to Gen. Samuel Cooper, at Richmond:

. . . On February 7th Brigadier-General Finegan reported by telegraph that five gunboats and two trans-

ports of the enemy had made their appearance in the St. John's within 5 miles of Jacksonville; and on the next day announced the arrival of eighteen vessels (gunboats and transports), the landing of the enemy in large force, and an immediate advance on the night of February 7th. General Gilmer was at once directed to put in motion and to report to General Finegan all the troops he had been previously ordered to hold in readiness for such an emergency. General Gardner, commanding in middle Florida, was telegraphed to send to the imperiled quarter, with all possible celerity, every soldier he could spare. Colquitt's brigade was ordered from James island to Savannah with a light battery. General Finegan was advised of what was done and instructed to do what he could with his means to hold the enemy at bay and to prevent the capture of slaves; and at the same time I reported to you this hostile movement and my intention to repel it as far as practicable with infantry to be withdrawn from Charleston and Savannah, but requested in consequence of the very recent discharge of some 5,000 South Carolina militia, that other troops should be sent to take their place and avoid danger to Charleston and Savannah. Scarcely had Colquitt's brigade begun to move when the enemy, in anticipation, doubtless, of my attempt to reinforce Finegan, made a strong demonstration on St. John's island. Though assured of the purpose of this movement it assumed, however, so serious a form as to compel me to divert temporarily General Colquitt and three and a half regiments of his brigade to reinforce General Wise, then confronted by at least two brigades of the enemy, about 4,500 strong, pushed forward in advance of the bridge-way between St. John's and Seabrook islands, and in addition several regiments of infantry were detached from Sullivan's and James islands to be in readiness for the development of the enemy's purposes.

On the night of the 11th of February I ordered all our batteries bearing on Morris island to open a heavy simultaneous fire on that position, as if a cover for an assault, and with the hope of forcing the enemy to withdraw from St. John's island to the protection of his own works. This strategem seemed to have produced the desired effect, or assisted to make him abandon the movement on St. John's island and withdraw hastily before daybreak, thus releasing and enabling Colquitt's

command to meet and defeat the enemy at Ocean Pond, some 13 miles in advance of Lake City.

In the meanwhile other troops had been dispatched to the theater of war from the works around Charleston and Savannah and the positions covering the Savannah railroad. This was done, indeed, to a hazardous degree, but as I informed the secretary of war by telegraph on the 9th ult., I regarded it as imperative to attempt to secure the subsistence resources of Florida. General Finegan was also apprised of these reinforcements on February 11th, and instructed to maneuver meantime to check or delay the enemy, but to avoid close quarters and unnecessary loss of men. While these reinforcements were en route the enemy again attempted to delay them by a movement against Whitemarsh island near Savannah, and it became a measure of proper precaution to halt at Savannah two of the regiments on their way to General Finegan for the development of the enemy's plans, one of which regiments I felt it prudent to detain there to the present.

The want of adequate rolling stock on the Georgia & Florida railroad and the existence of the gap of some 26 miles between the two roads, subjected the concentration of my forces to a delay which deprived my efforts to that end of full effect. The absence of General Hill making it injudicious for me to leave this State, I directed Brigadier-General Taliaferro to proceed to Florida and assume the command, not knowing at the time that Brigadier-General Gardner, commanding in middle Florida, his senior, had returned from sick leave and was fit for field service. Apprised of this, I directed General Gardner, on the 21st ult., to assume command and organize for a vigorous offensive movement preliminary to the arrival of General Taliaferro; but subsequently, the victory at Ocean Pond having taken place in which I supposed General Gardner, though not in immediate command, had taken an active part, I directed that officer to assume chief command and, dividing his forces into divisions, to assign General Taliaferro to one of them; soon after which I was advised by the war department of the assignment of Maj.-Gen. James Patton Anderson to the command of the forces in the State of Florida.

Gen. D. H. Hill having arrived at these headquarters on the 28th of February, I left for Florida the same



evening. On the 2d inst., I reached Camp Milton, General Gardner's headquarters, in rear of McGirt's creek, 12 or 13 miles distant from Jacksonville, where I found our troops in position. The day preceding our advance pickets had been thrown forward to Cedar creek, within 6 or 7 miles of Jacksonville.

On the 3d inst. Maj.-Gen. J. Patton Anderson also arrived at Camp Milton and assumed command on the 6th inst. of the forces, now about 8,000 effective of all arms. In the meantime it had been ascertained from reliable sources that the enemy occupied Jacksonville with at least 12,000 men; that the position, naturally strong, had been much strengthened since the battle of the 20th ult., and that four or five gunboats in the St. John's effectually commanded the approaches to the place. Under these circumstances it was determined not to attempt to carry the position by assault, as in effect instructed by your telegram of the 4th inst.

Everything indicates that the rout of the enemy at Ocean Pond was complete; nevertheless the fruits of the victory were comparatively insignificant, mainly because of the inefficiency of the officer commanding the cavalry at the time, no serious attempt being made to pursue with his command, while the exhaustion of the infantry, so gallantly and effectively handled and engaged, and our want of subsistence supplies and ammunition, made an immediate pursuit by them impracticable.

Unless our present forces should be considerably increased and amply supplied with means for a regular siege of Jacksonville, our operations in this quarter must be confined to the defensive—that is, to prevent the penetration of the enemy into the interior, on the line toward Lake City or into the lower portion of the State, to which end a position has been selected on the St. John's a few miles above Jacksonville for a battery of one rifled 32-pounder, three rifled 30-pounders, one 20-pounder and one 10-pounder (Parrotts) and two 8-inch siege howitzers, by which, with torpedoes in the river, it is expected transports at least can be obstructed from passing with troops beyond Jacksonville. Cavalry pickets have also been established for the protection of the railroad to Cedar Keys from injury by raiding parties set on foot from the west bank of the St. John's.

I have for the present organized the forces under Gen-

eral Anderson into three brigades, commanded respectively by Brigadier-Generals Finegan and Colquitt and Col. George P. Harrison, Jr., three meritorious officers, the last two of whom have won promotion by their active participation in the combat of the 20th ult., at which it is proper to say Brigadier-General Colquitt commanded on the immediate field of battle. He has seen much service likewise in the army of Northern Virginia.

The cavalry has also been organized into a brigade under Col. Robert H. Anderson. The four light batteries of four pieces each were placed under command of Lieut.-Col. Charles C. Jones, and two batteries of siege guns (six pieces), present on the field under Maj. George L. Buist. It is hoped this arrangement will enhance the efficiency of the troops, who are in fine spirits and good condition.

Too much praise cannot be awarded to the brave officers and men who encountered and defeated twice their number at Ocean Pond, and I commend them to the notice of the government. They are in all respects worthy comrades of those who on other fields have done honor to Southern manhood.

After the battle of Olustee the Second Florida cavalry, Lieutenant-Colonel McCormick, skirmished in the vicinity of McGirt's creek and Ten-mile station, driving in the enemy's pickets and preventing their advance. While it was deemed hazardous to venture on any decided assault, the general commanding, appreciating the spirit which animated our troops, who were growing impatient at the inactivity forced upon them, determined upon making an advance upon the enemy's outposts to ascertain his position and strength and, if advisable, make an attack. For this purpose a reconnoitering party was sent forward, consisting of Scott's battalion of cavalry, under Major Scott, and Company H, Captain Dickison, Second Florida cavalry. They soon came up with the advanced force of the enemy, who was also reconnoitering, consisting of infantry, cavalry and artillery. Our troops immediately charged, and the enemy stubbornly resisted, while falling back, until they reached Cedar creek, within 6

miles of Jacksonville. A large number of the enemy, having concealed themselves in a thick palmetto scrub, opened fire from their ambush upon a detachment of about 80 of our cavalry while crossing the long causeway, instantly killing Captain Stevens, Second Florida cavalry, a splendid young officer greatly beloved by his command, and wounding several others. At this critical time our main force of four regiments of infantry, 200 cavalry and three pieces of artillery, came up and advanced over the causeway, and the fight became general, about 5 miles of ground being contested, the skirmishing and general engagement lasting from 11 a. m. to 3 p. m. Our forces having effected a crossing on the enemy's right, intending to turn their flank, they hastily retired, falling back to the Three-mile run, where they halted and were reinforced by cavalry and artillery. This vigorous repulse of a force numbering about 3,000 infantry, 500 cavalry and 2 pieces of artillery, after contesting our advance step by step, attested the bravery with which they fought against superior numbers. Our loss was 7 killed and 12 wounded. The enemy acknowledged a loss of 2 killed, 4 wounded and 5 taken prisoners, but later information gave the number of their wounded at about 40. To have advanced upon the enemy in their fortified position would have been attended with disastrous consequences.

The defensive campaign now entered upon was one of great activity. The troops, divided into detachments of infantry, cavalry and sections of artillery, were quartered at such points as were most exposed and upon which the enemy was expected to make an early advance. The only security was in untiring vigilance, and several cavalry companies were deployed for outpost duty, notably among them Col. G. W. Scott's battalion of cavalry, and Company H, Second Florida cavalry, commanded by Capt. J. J. Dickison; Lieutenant-Colonel McCormick with the remaining companies of the Second Florida cavalry com-

mand being stationed in the vicinity of McGirt's creek, about 12 miles from Jacksonville. The infantry was placed on the entire line of railroad from McGirt's creek to Waldo, and through the unprotected country lying between the railroad and the Ocklawaha river. Detachments from the Fourth Georgia cavalry were on duty in this locality to strike the enemy in an advance from Palatka to Orange Springs, at that time a "city of refuge" for families who had been driven from their homes on the St. John's river.

Captain Pearson, while en route for Tampa, was ordered to repair to Orange Springs, as the enemy was supposed to be advancing up the Ocklawaha river in barges from Welaka. At the same time an order was given to send a train down toward Cedar Keys to bring back Captain McNeill's company to the point nearest Orange Springs, to co-operate with Capt. John W. Pearson of the Sixth Florida battalion, and others. Thus every necessary precaution was taken to prevent the enemy from penetrating the country.

The Fourth Georgia cavalry, under Lieutenant-Colonel Harris, was quartered at Waldo, to be ready when necessary to unite with the cavalry force under Col. R. H. Anderson, who was to operate upon the right flank of the enemy in case of a general advance of the enemy upon the front. While these preparations were under way, a request was made by General Gardner for Colonel Scott's battalion, but the exigencies of the service did not admit of compliance. No troops could be spared from the seat of war, therefore a detachment of the siege train was ordered to guard the Aucilla trestle, and Caper's battalion, Wimberly's company and two infantry companies were posted at the Suwannee bridge to prevent depredations in middle Florida.



## CHAPTER V.

ORGANIZATION OF THE DISTRICT OF FLORIDA IN THE SPRING AND SUMMER OF 1864—PALATKA, WELAKA AND FORT BUTLER—WITHDRAWAL OF TROOPS TO VIRGINIA—FIGHTS WITH GUNBOATS ON THE ST. JOHN'S—RENEWED FEDERAL ACTIVITY—BATTLE OF PALATKA—EVACUATION OF CAMP MILTON AND BALDWIN—BATTLE OF GAINESVILLE.

THE districts of Middle and East Florida having been united in the district of Florida and embraced in the department of South Carolina, Georgia and Florida, Maj.-Gen. Patton Anderson was assigned to the command of the district. He assumed control March 4, 1864. His territory was divided into sub-district No. 1, embracing all that portion of Florida between the Choctawatchee river and bay (in west Florida) and the Suwannee river, commanded by Brig.-Gen. William M. Gardner; and sub-district No. 2, embracing all of Florida east of the Suwannee river, Brig.-Gen. Joseph Finegan commanding.

General Beauregard issued special orders for disposition of forces March 5, 1864, transferring the Twenty-sixth Virginia regiment from Finegan's brigade to that commanded by Col. George P. Harrison, Jr.; the Fifty-ninth Virginia regiment from Harrison's brigade to Finegan's; the First Georgia regulars from Finegan's brigade to Colquitt's; and Capt. J. J. Dickison was ordered to proceed at once with his company to Palatka and resume his post there, and the commanding officer of the Fourth Georgia cavalry was directed to hold himself in readiness to support him with his whole command if necessary. Brigadier-General Gardner was ordered to establish the

military posts from Clay landing on the Suwannee river to Tampa, garrisoning the post with the troops previously occupying them, under the order of General Finegan.

Major Buist, commanding heavy artillery, was directed by Major-General Anderson to order a detachment of 85 men under his command at Madison to be armed with small-arms and posted at the Aucilla bridge as a guard for its defense, leaving the siege pieces and a sufficient guard at Madison. Col. John M. Martin was directed to proceed with troops detached from the Sixth Florida battalion to the point nearest Orange Springs, and thence by forced marches to the most favorable locality for intercepting the boat expedition of the enemy, now supposed to be operating on the Ocklawaha river, Pearson's, Westcott's and McNeill's companies to co-operate. Colonel Harris, commanding at Waldo, was directed in the event of Colonel Anderson falling back from his position to join him with all the cavalry under his command, including Captain Dickison's company. In this disposition of our forces, the most advantageous positions were taken, with a view to be ready for an immediate concentration in any emergency.

At the time Major-General Anderson assumed command the enemy occupied Jacksonville with a force estimated at about 12,000, having strong fortifications on the land side of the place and the additional defense of gun-boats in the St. John's river. The Florida troops, with reinforcements from other States, numbering about 8,000 of all arms, had taken position on the west side of McGirt's creek, 12 miles from Jacksonville. Under the supervision and direction of Generals Beauregard and Anderson, breastworks and stockades were constructed at this position, and similar fortifications of a more permanent character were thrown up at Baldwin, 8 miles in the rear of McGirt's creek, and at the intersection of the railroads running from Fernandina to Cedar Keys and from Jacksonville to Lake City. For a time there were many

indications which gave promise of an advance of the Federals, and every preparation was made to meet them at McGirt's creek in the first place, or in the event they should turn that position, then at Baldwin, where it was believed a successful defense might be made against a superior force.

Our effective force operating near Jacksonville was, infantry 6,290, cavalry 1,568, artillery 487. Brigadier-General Gardner, by vigorous measures with the limited force at his command, assisted by civilians, had by this time succeeded to a great extent in suppressing the lawlessness of the bands of deserters and disloyal persons, restoring quiet and establishing a sense of security within the threatened settlements. Preparations were also made for similar measures against such bands in south Florida, whenever a sufficient force could be safely detached from our main force, then confronting superior numbers at Jacksonville.

To prevent the enemy's gunboats from so defiantly navigating the St. John's a number of torpedoes were planted in the channel of the river, 15 miles above Jacksonville, through the skill and energy of Capt. E. Pliny Bryan, of General Beauregard's staff, and the enemy's communication with the garrison at Palatka was rendered precarious. Therefore, another advance not being probable, it was deemed practicable to make a vigorous assault upon Palatka, the movement being greatly encouraged by the fact that one of the largest transports, while descending the river from Palatka, exploded a torpedo and sunk in three fathoms of water. A section of artillery, under Lieutenant Gamble, supported by infantry under Captain Grieve, First Georgia regulars, was sent to complete the wreck, and firing a few rounds at that portion above water, Captain Bryan with two men boarded her and set fire to her upper works. She proved to be the steamer Maple Leaf with the camp and garrison equipage of three regiments, recently arrived at Jacksonville and hurried up to

Palatka. A few weeks later the transport Hunter, on a return trip from Picolata, having on board quartermaster supplies, was also destroyed by a torpedo near the wreck of the Maple Leaf.

An aggressive movement being determined upon, General Finegan was directed to proceed by rail from Baldwin to Waldo with about 2,500 infantry and six pieces of artillery; thence by nearest route to Palatka, which place he was to attack and carry, after which he was to be governed by circumstances and await further orders. Between Waldo and Palatka he was to be joined by Colonel Martin, Sixth Florida battalion, with about 450 infantry, and Lieutenant-Colonel Harris, Fourth Georgia cavalry, with the same number of cavalry. On account of the condition of transportation by rail from Baldwin to Waldo, he was provokingly detained, consuming more hours than miles traveled, so that when he was to have begun the assault at Palatka he had not been able to move his command from Waldo, 38 miles distant. Our scout on the river bringing in information that a large reinforcement of infantry and cavalry had arrived at Jacksonville, it was deemed prudent to recall General Finegan and hold all our available force to meet any attempt on the part of the enemy. On April 13th Lieutenant-Colonel McCormick was ordered to scout the country on his left and front, round Broward's neck and Yellow bluff, with the view of discovering if the enemy was making any movement from that quarter; and Col. R. H. Anderson, commanding the cavalry force in front, was directed to send Captain Dickison's company immediately to Palatka and take position as formerly and report to Lieutenant-Colonel Harris, Fourth Georgia cavalry, at Waldo. Under this special order and information that the enemy had passed up the river toward Palatka, Company H, Second Florida cavalry, 145 strong, was sent with all haste to that point. On their arrival they ascertained that the enemy had landed with 5,000 men. Cap-



tain Dickison reported to Colonel Harris asking for reinforcements, and the latter moved his command, about 125 effective men, to Sweetwater branch, 12 miles from Palatka. Scouts were sent out and reported that the enemy occupied the town. A detachment of the Fourth Georgia cavalry was ordered to support Captain Dickison in driving in the pickets and ascertaining their position and strength, which was soon accomplished, and three pickets with their horses captured. Simple as was this capture, the event was marked by a daring that gave luster to the heroic deed.

The enemy were strongly fortified and remained in Palatka nearly six weeks. During this occupation of the town our cavalry frequently skirmished with them, and with untiring vigilance awaited results. A detachment of 16 men under Captain Dickison, on one occasion was met by a superior force of the enemy, and after a hot skirmish which lasted forty minutes, holding their position without giving an inch, the enemy was reinforced and our men fell back in good order without loss. The enemy's loss was 5 killed and 8 wounded. A few days after we drove in their pickets and took position on the hill overlooking the town. Lieutenant McEaddy was sent to ascertain the true position of the enemy's pickets, and a secret night expedition was planned to capture the post, which proved successful, the entire guard of 8 men being captured. Subsequently Colonel Tabb, now in command at Waldo, ordered Captain Dickison to make a reconnoissance. This was done and the enemy opened fire on our advance guard. The firing soon became general; the enemy sent forward two regiments, one white and one colored, which were held in check for about four hours. Night coming on, the enemy withdrew, with a loss of 11 killed and 22 captured. Our troops then retired in good order without any loss, though the enemy outnumbered them eight to one. On April 22d, in conveying notice of his relief by Col. J. M. Martin, Sixth Florida battalion, Colonel Tabb

expressed to Captain Dickison "the high appreciation in which you and your command are held. The faithfulness, promptness and superior judgment which you have at all times manifested, give assurance of those soldierly qualities which inspire confidence and command respect and admiration everywhere."

The following communications from Adjutant-General Barth to Captain Dickison commanding, will give a clearer idea of the stirring events that followed and the operations of this gallant command:

"April 30th—The enemy, about a regiment strong, are reported as being at Fort Butler in Volusia county on the evening of the 28th inst. The major-general commanding desires that you be on your guard and ready for any emergency."

"May 3d—Your dispatch of the 30th ult. relative to the enemy being at Fort Butler was received last evening, and the major-general commanding directs me to say that your dispositions as detailed therein are fully approved."

"May 11th—Another company is ordered to report to you. Major-General Anderson approves your suggestions and directs that you strike the enemy whenever you have an opportunity of doing so to advantage."

May 17th—Capt. J. W. Pearson's company is ordered to leave Orange Springs. This change will render it necessary for you to watch the approaches to Marion and Sumter counties."

In obedience to these instructions Captain Dickison, accompanied by two of his men, reconnoitered near the enemy's post on the river side opposite Welaka; and the next day at sundown, with a detachment of 35 men of his command, accompanied by Capt. H. A. Gray, Second Florida cavalry, with 25 of his command, marched 9 miles before reaching the St. John's river. Under cover of night they crossed the river in their small boats, then marched 7 miles to reach the enemy's post. At day-break they arrived at Welaka. Placing two detachments on the flank of the enemy, Dickison moved in on the center with a detachment, capturing the pickets and com-

pletely surprising the enemy. He then sent in a demand to the officer commanding for an unconditional surrender, which was complied with. Being advised that a large cavalry force was not far distant, no time was lost in returning to the boats and recrossing the river, with a capture of 62 men, 1 captain and 1 lieutenant, without having fired a gun. After crossing the river, feeling assured all was safe, a needed rest was taken.

Having planned another expedition, 15 miles up the river to Fort Butler, and having transportation for not more than 25 men, he set out with this heroic little band and his gallant Lieutenant McEaddy. He crossed little Lake George and, leaving a guard of three men with the boats, marched a short distance. Anticipating another capture, Captain Dickison wrote demanding the surrender of the Federal command. While thus engaged, a cavalryman rode from a farmhouse near by and was within 50 yards of our men before he was seen by our picket. The men were ordered not to fire and a vigorous pursuit was made, one detachment of 12 men under Sergt. Charles Dickison—son of the captain—following in the direction of the house, while the other detachment under Captain Dickison pursued the horseman down the road, but he succeeded in making his escape. Captain Dickison then made a rapid advance with his detachment on the enemy's post, 2 miles distant, the location being shown by a bright camp fire. Moving cautiously within two hundred yards Lieutenant McEaddy was sent forward with a demand for surrender. The captain in command held a short parley, and very reluctantly complied.

Apprehending the possibility of a revolt when the Federals should see that they had surrendered a garrison of 26 infantry and 6 cavalry to a small detachment of Confederates without firing a gun, the captured arms were secured and given in charge of two men, with orders to push off without delay. By this capture 12 slaves and 2 farm wagons were recovered. Captain Dickison re-

crossed the river and arrived at headquarters at 10 o'clock the next morning. The detachment under Sergeant Dickison marched 15 miles down the swamp to avoid the Federal cavalry, and reached the camp next evening, shouts of welcome greeting them on their safe return from their perilous and tiresome march. The following announcement of this spirited exploit was made by General Anderson:

“The major-general commanding has great pleasure in announcing to the troops under his command the result of a gallant expedition against the enemy's detached posts, undertaken on the 19th inst. by Capt. J. J. Dickison, Second Florida cavalry. Crossing the St. John's river in small boats, Captain Dickison surprised and captured the enemy's garrisons at Welaka and Fort Butler, taking 88 infantry and 6 cavalry, with the arms and equipments, and returning with his brave command safely to their camp, bringing in the whole capture, after an absence of forty-four hours, during which time they traveled 85 miles and effected the results herein detailed without the loss of a man. Such an exploit attests more emphatically the soldierly qualities of the gallant men and their skillful leader who achieved it than any commendation it would be possible to give. The major-general commanding feels, however, that his thanks are due them, and, while thus publicly rendering the tribute so justly due, indulges in the confident hope that every officer and soldier in his district will emulate the patriotic endurance and daring displayed by Captain Dickison and his command.”

On May 24th General Anderson assigned still more extended duties to this command, advising Captain Dickison of “inability to picket Green Cove Springs and Bayard with any other forces than those you command. He therefore directs that you picket these points.”

The withdrawal of a large number of troops from Jacksonville to join the Federal forces concentrating in South Carolina and Virginia, afforded Major-General Anderson the opportunity so long desired of sending a command



to south Florida to the support of the few scattered companies who were so bravely defending the wide extent of country along the Gulf coast against the destructive raiding parties that were continually alarming the citizens by ruthless invasion of their homes—plundering the plantations, carrying off slaves and destroying valuable property. On account of the difficult access of our troops to this more distant part of the State, without railroad facilities, an expedition to that field was one attended with great inconvenience and fatigue, and could not have been undertaken while threatened by so formidable a force of the enemy in front. But the time for action in this department had come, and for such purpose the Sixty-fourth regiment Georgia volunteers was detached. Lieut.-Col. Theodore Brevard, of the Second Florida battalion, familiar with the country and citizens, and upon whose judgment, skill and courage reliance could be placed, was assigned to the command of the expedition. His instructions were of a general character—to repel the advance of raiding parties, arrest deserters, punish and drive out plunderers, and to afford every assistance in his power to the agents of the government whose duty it was to collect beef cattle for the army.

He had proceeded only a little over 100 miles, reaching the borders of the field of operations, when urgent orders reached headquarters which caused the immediate recall of the regiment for service in South Carolina. As soon, however, as new dispositions could be made and transportation obtained, another force—Bonaud's battalion—was sent to the same quarter under Lieutenant-Colonel Brevard. Much good was derived from the expedition, generally by reason of the protection afforded by it to the agents of the commissary department, in collecting supplies for the army, as well as the confidence its presence inspired in loyal citizens and planters, whose property was in constant danger from lawless bands.

On the 15th of April, 1864, the enemy began sending

troops away by sea to Hilton Head, and continued to do so until the 12th of May, when it was estimated that 8,000 Federal soldiers had been withdrawn from Jacksonville. Meanwhile, Major-General Anderson was directed by the commanding general at Charleston to transfer to Savannah the Eleventh and Eighteenth South Carolina volunteers, Twenty-sixth and Fifty-ninth Virginia and Sixty-fourth Georgia regiments, this depletion of our forces being unavoidable in consequence of orders from the war department transferring a large number of troops from South Carolina to Wilmington, N. C. Owing to the continued call for troops for the army in Virginia, other orders rapidly followed, and by May 8, 1864, nearly all the troops that had been sent to reinforce our Florida forces had been sent away. All the cavalry and part of the infantry and artillery marched across the country from Camp Milton through Georgia, by the most expeditious route to Savannah under the circumstances. On account of the removal of these troops from the State, the most vigorous preparations were made to so dispose of our forces that the middle and eastern portions of the State could be guarded and protected against raiding expeditions.

Orders were issued to every department to be on guard and ready for every hostile demonstration. Lieut. C. B. Dyke was ordered to report at Camp Milton without delay with the section of Gamble's battery under his command, and Lieut. Mortimer Bates, with one section of artillery from Captain Dunham's battery, was ordered to report to Captain Dickison. Our forces at this crisis were scarcely sufficient for a vigorous defense against a large invading force, and the utmost caution and vigilance were required. Sections of Gamble's and Abell's batteries were held in middle Florida awaiting the attacks which from indications were imminent. On the west side of the Chattahoochee river the country was guarded by two detach-

ments from Scott's battalion of cavalry, one independent company of cavalry and a few independent companies of infantry, assisted in every emergency by civilians, who were ever ready to fall into line.

After the bombardment of Pensacola and its subsequent evacuation, the Confederate forces, consisting of Alabama and Georgia regiments and a detachment of Florida troops, had taken strong positions a few miles from Pensacola at Pollard, Blakely and Gonzales, guarding all approaches to Mobile, Montgomery and Tallahassee against any expedition that might advance from Pensacola. Vigilance at every point was our only security at this trying crisis—one that indicated that the great conflict was rapidly determining to a momentous issue. Even in the darkest hour hope lured us on. God, the Creator and Supreme Ruler of the Universe, alone governs the destiny of nations. To man—the master work of His hand—is given dominion over earthly things, subject to His gracious overruling and by Him led to carry out His deep designs and work His will. What God has wrought let no one make the impious attempt to destroy. “He is His own interpreter.”

The principal problem in the summer of 1864 was to cover with the forces at our command the large area of country lying between the St. Mary's and the St. John's rivers, and the more thickly populated counties between the rivers and the Gulf coast. The Federals, still in strong force at Jacksonville under the protection of their gunboats, could advance at will into the country. Our only practicable preparation was in providing all facilities for a rapid concentration of our forces and making such dispositions of detachments of infantry and cavalry as would check and harass the enemy in his approach. The cavalry formed a valuable adjunct in such operations. Colonel Scott's battalion was in position at Camp Milton; Lieutenant-Colonel McCormick, Second Florida cavalry, in the neighborhood of Cedar creek and Front creek, with sec-

tions of Dunham's and Gamble's artillery near Baldwin. Company H, Captain Dickison, and Company B, Captain Gray, were on the outposts between Green Cove Spring, Palatka and Welaka, and other exposed points along the river, with one section of Dunham's artillery. The Sixth battalion of infantry, with detachments of the First, Second and Fourth, were at and near Waldo, commanded by Colonels Hopkins, Brevard and Martin.

Lieut. Mortimer Bates, with one 12-pound howitzer and one Napoleon gun and 25 men, reported to Captain Dickison at his headquarters near Palatka, and on the next day while these officers were looking for the most favorable point on the river to engage the enemy's gunboats should they make their appearance, a courier came up in great haste from our pickets on the river below Palatka, with the exciting report that "the river was full of gunboats coming up." Our headquarters being some 3 miles from the river, Lieutenant Bates was directed to proceed with all possible speed to the camp, bring up his battery, and report to Captain Dickison on the hill overlooking Palatka and the river. Captain Gray was also directed to report with all the cavalry at the same place. Very soon the full command reported. By this time two gunboats and four transports were sighted coming up. Captain Dickison dismounted the cavalry, marched into Palatka and took position in the well-arranged intrenchments made by the enemy during their occupation of the town a short time previous. They were scarcely concealed in the breastworks when the transports moved to the east side of the river and commenced landing troops. Two regiments landed, moved out into the field, formed and marched off in full view of our men. Very soon one of the gunboats loaded with troops passed by, going up the river. Not being near enough to engage her with small-arms, every man was ordered to be quiet until she passed. This boat proved to be the Columbine. Captain Dickison then mounted 50 men and taking the artillery, Captain Gray



remaining in command in the breastworks, endeavored to intercept the gunboat at Brown's landing, about 3 miles distant, but was too late by five minutes to engage the boat, which continued on her way. Returning to Palatka he met a courier sent by Captain Gray with information that the gunboat *Ottawa*, the largest boat on the river, carrying 13 guns, two of them 200-pounder rifled guns, and one of the transports that had landed troops on the east bank, were then on their way up the river. He at once ordered his command to follow and press on rapidly to meet the boats at Brown's landing. At sundown a halt was ordered, and Lieutenant Bates unlimbered his guns and moved cautiously to the landing. The men were dismounted and ordered to take position in the swamp, to protect the artillery. At dusk they reached the wharf at the landing and the two guns were put in position. The boats were anchored not more than 200 yards from the landing. Just as we were ready to fire the enemy lighted up their boats, making them a fine target for our little battery, whose fire created great confusion on board. The admirable management of our guns gave us the advantage of 28 rounds before the enemy responded. The transport, as soon as she hoisted anchor (being badly crippled) left without firing a gun, but the *Ottawa* at each round poured into us a heavy broadside, aiming in the darkness at the flash of our guns. This made necessary the removal of our guns, which was done in the best order and with admirable coolness. The injury to the *Ottawa* was such that she did not move off for thirty hours. The report of her loss showed several killed and wounded. Not a man was hurt on our side.

The following day, the 23d of May, 1864, Captain Dickison, with Lieutenant Bates' battery and a detachment of sharpshooters from his cavalry, marched to Horse landing, 6 miles distant from the place of his engagement with the *Ottawa* and transport the night previous. The guns were put in position on the wharf at

this landing and the sharpshooters placed behind cypress trees a short distance on the left. The purpose was to capture the gunboat *Columbine*, which had passed up the river the night before. At 3 o'clock in the evening she came in sight, and Captain Dickison cautioned his men to be cool and not fire without orders. The boat moved slowly on and though bearing dread missiles of destruction was truly a "thing of beauty." She was allowed to come within sixty yards before a gun was fired. The wildest confusion ensued. By the time she was opposite our guns we were ready to fire again. By this round the boat was disabled and floated down the river about 200 yards from our battery and 100 yards from our sharpshooters, striking a sand bar. Then a hot fire ensued, the enemy having two fine 32-pounder rifle guns and 148 men with small arms, but after forty-five minutes she hoisted her flag of surrender. Only 66 of the 148 men were found alive when Lieutenant Bates went aboard to receive the surrender, and of this number one-third were wounded. Several of them died that night. The officers were all killed or wounded excepting the commanding officer. This officer informed Captain Dickison that his first lieutenant, who was killed, was one of the best officers in the navy. He requested to be permitted to bring the remains of this officer to Dickison's headquarters for interment, and that his winding sheet should be one of the three captured United States flags—which request was granted. Never did a command fight with more gallantry than our artillery and sharpshooters in this daring affair, every man displaying remarkable coolness and bravery. There was not a casualty on our side.

After removing the prisoners and the dead, the arms, etc., at sundown Captain Dickison ordered the boat burned, as it was impossible to save her from the enemy, several gunboats being in the river below. The *Columbine* was almost entirely new, and considered a very fast and superior boat. The orders from Major-General Foster capt-

ured on the Columbine explained the Federal movements. The gunboats were ordered to guard each landing, to keep a lookout for sharpshooters and to use all means to prevent Dickison from crossing the river, while the two regiments were to scour the country for his command on the east side of the river, where he had only a few days previous captured two posts.

On reporting this victory Captain Dickison was handsomely complimented by the major-general commanding, and was directed to retain for himself one of the captured swords, reserving the next best for Lieutenant Bates, of the artillery. He returned to his headquarters near Palatka, and during the month of June and part of July the command continued to perform effective service, frequently engaging in skirmishes with detachments of the enemy and capturing their pickets.

Emboldened by their numerical strength and the fact of our having so wide an extent of country to guard with greatly reduced forces, the enemy marched from their intrenchments at Yellow bluff to make an assault on Lieut.-Col. A. H. McCormick's command. The latter reported regarding this affair substantially as follows:

"On the 13th of July scouts from Tucknett's point reported that six vessels had arrived at Jacksonville the day before, but owing to the distance they could not ascertain whether they were loaded or not. At daylight on the same day the enemy advanced upon our pickets on Cedar creek at the railroad, but made no further demonstration in that direction. A scout from Broward's neck reported that two of our scouts, Turner and Houston, of Second Florida cavalry, had been captured by the Tyson's (tories). We afterward found they had been brutally murdered. On the 14th it was ascertained that quite a large force of cavalry had landed at Broward's neck, and advanced as far as Neill Turner's. Lieutenant Cone, who was then at Higginbotham, with a detachment of 25 men, and who was promptly advised of their advance, reported

them to be in considerable force. He remained at his post watching their movements until early the next morning, when Captain McElvey, of the Fifth Florida cavalry battalion, joined him with 30 additional men. He found about 40 of their cavalry, who retreated rapidly before him. He pursued them until he learned that a body of infantry had landed up Trout creek, and was marching in his rear. He then fell back to Hall's branch and skirmished with them until he was flanked by the infantry. He withdrew to Little Trout creek and then to Higginbotham's, and here he skirmished with them until he was almost surrounded. He then retired down the road leading off direct to Baldwin, covering all the approaches with his pickets. The enemy now rested at Higginbotham's and put out infantry pickets; while Captain McElvey camped near Green's plantation on the Baldwin road. The enemy now being in the rear of our pickets on the line of Cedar creek, Major Scott, who commanded at Camp Milton, called them in with his whole command to the junction of the roads leading from Higginbotham and Camp Milton to Baldwin, about 2 miles from Baldwin. During the skirmishing referred to, the enemy were reinforced with 80 cavalry and two pieces of artillery. Their infantry force was composed entirely of negroes. Our left at Camp Milton being now turned, it was deemed best to concentrate our force around Baldwin for its defense, leaving Captain McElvey with 55 men near Higginbotham's to watch their movements. On the morning of the 16th, 50 mounted men were sent down under Captain Gwynn to relieve Captain McElvey's command, which had been without forage for more than twenty-four hours.

"Acting under instructions from Major Scott, Captains McElvey and Gwynn, before the former withdrew his command, made a joint reconnoissance for the purpose of attacking the enemy should they find he was not too strongly fortified. They soon found that it was impossible to dislodge him, even with our whole force. The enemy,



however, showed no signs of advancing during the day, but held his position firmly. On the morning of the 17th Captain Simmons, Second Florida cavalry, was sent down with 50 men to relieve Captain Gwynn's command. During the day, while our cavalry was confronting them, their cavalry under Major Fox dashed up the north end of the King's road to Callahan and burned two flat-cars loaded with railroad iron and Mr. Jones' house, carrying off his horses. On this raid they arrested Joseph Hagans and Washington Broward, citizens, and carried off Mr. Geiger's negroes and burned the house of Joel Wingate. They also carried off the horses of Elijah Higginbotham. About 100 negro troops accompanied this raiding party as far as Thomas' swamp. Reliable citizens whom they visited on the route to Callahan state that they had 125 cavalry and 100 infantry negroes. All the damage done on this raid was accomplished in one day, the distance being very short from the line of the road to Broward's neck to Callahan. On the night of the 17th Captain Dunham arrived at Baldwin with 84 effective men. I also received instructions from you to attack the enemy next morning at daybreak with my whole force, if I did not consider them too strong; and if so, to send for Captain Rou's command and act on the defensive. I was satisfied they were too strong for me, and especially in the position they occupied. I accordingly telegraphed for Rou's command and determined to attack the enemy as soon as it arrived. Two trestles about 12 miles from Baldwin having been burned during that night the train from Gainesville could not come through, and the companies of reserves did not reach me until the 18th.

"Meanwhile I had sent Major Scott with his entire effective cavalry force, 200 in the saddle, to feel the strength of the enemy and to ascertain if there had been any change in his position. He found upon arriving at Higginbotham that the enemy had retired in the direction of Yellow bluff. He was delayed some time in crossing Trout creek,

the bridge being burned, compelling him to cross a ford higher up. He reports that from the appearance of their camps their force must have been larger than had been reported. He did not come up with the enemy, they having taken to their boats. Major Scott then returned with his command, and on the 19th reoccupied Camp Milton and re-established his videttes on the line of Cedar creek. It is but due to Captains McElvey and Gwynn and Lieutenant Cone, who were sent to watch the enemy, to say that I consider their statements entirely reliable. They are cool, intelligent and discreet officers, and gentlemen of unquestioned veracity."

It was the determined purpose of the general commanding at Hilton Head to make such vigorous advances in the interior of Florida with overwhelming forces, that our troops would be forced, after a desperate resistance, to surrender or retire into Georgia and fall in with our army concentrating there. "His dream at midnight in his guarded tent" was of the hour when Florida, her knee in supplicance bent, should tremble at his power. But the trophies of a conqueror were not for him. Florida's beautiful capital, Tallahassee—the rose garden of the State, the city of fairest women—was never captured. The enemy held every place on our Atlantic coast, and at Key West, a Gibraltar for them, their fleet could be reinforced at will and expeditions sent out to bombard every important town and city on the Gulf coast. Once obtaining possession of east Florida their victory would be complete, and soon the entire State would be under Federal authority.

About the 15th of July, indications pointing to an advance of the enemy toward Cedar creek and Camp Milton, Captain Dickison was ordered to report with his command at the headquarters of the general commanding. On the march he was overtaken by a courier from his pickets on the river, with the information that the enemy had landed a large force at Palatka. Sending his men for-

ward under Captain Gray he promptly returned to his encampment, verified the report, and hurried a dispatch to headquarters, requesting the commanding officer to return his command at once, that he might hold the enemy in check and prevent an invasion of the interior. Meanwhile he took a small detachment from Captain Rou's company, under Lieutenant Dell, and with 15 of his pickets made a reconnoissance, meeting a battalion of cavalry, which with greatly superior force pushed him back, captured three of his pickets and took possession of his camp. Captain Dickison then sent to Orange Springs for Capt. W. A. Owens' command of militia, and late that evening Company H returned. Next morning Captain Dickison moved forward cautiously, sending Lieutenant McEaddy in advance, who soon reported the presence of the enemy. Presently his advance encountered the enemy's rear guard and a hot skirmish commenced. Very soon Captain Dickison was up with the main force of the enemy, consisting of one battalion of well mounted cavalry, about 280 strong, armed with Spencer rifles, six shooting navy pistols and sabers. Scorning all odds, charge after charge was made by our brave men, the enemy giving way sullenly. They were 6 miles from Palatka, at which place they had a large force of infantry and artillery, not less than 3,000 or 4,000 strong; but our little band of determined men continued to press on, driving back the ruthless invaders of our homes, killing, wounding and capturing them, until the hill overlooking the city of Palatka was reached.

Captain Dickison with about 30 men was engaged in a hand-to-hand fight, the rest of the command having charge of prisoners, when the commanding officer of the Federals ordered them to cease firing. This indicated a surrender, and the Federals, coming down from a half-speed to a walk, threw our men more than half way down the enemy's lines. Dickison, believing it a surrender, ordered his men to cease firing, and dashed down the line to prevent any escape. Just at this critical moment the enemy

opened a deadly fire, and Sergt. Charlie Dickison, son of the captain, was shot through the heart. He with four of his brave comrades were on the opposite side of the enemy's column. As he fell from his horse, Sergeant Crews, a gallant young soldier, sprang from his horse and clasped him in his arms, calling to the captain that his son was killed. At this time the enemy's column moved, and as they passed, Captain Dickison advanced toward his dying son and received him from his grief-stricken comrades. This noble youth, his heart-blood flowing from his wound, still breathed but never spoke again. Peacefully resting on the bosom of his beloved father, his pure spirit took its heavenward flight to that bright world where his angel mother awaited him with rapturous welcome. The victory was no price for such a loss. With the heaviness of a sorely wounded spirit, the bereaved father carried the lifeless form of his beloved one, on horseback, to the encampment 6 miles distant. The mournful cavalcade proceeded 6 miles before transportation could be secured, and then Captain Dickison, stifling the cries of nature, made a detail of six of his brave boys, under Sergeant Crews, and confided the precious remains of his first-born to their care, to be conveyed to the ladies of Orange Springs as a sacred trust, while he remained at his post to keep watch over the enemy.

That night the Federal forces evacuated Palatka, taking with them a number of their wounded. The next day we buried their dead. Their loss was 14 killed, about 30 wounded, and 28 captured; our loss 1 killed and 1 wounded. The bold and dashing advance of the Confederates no doubt convinced the Federals it was the advance of a large force that would attack them the next day, and caused their hasty retreat. Our troops took possession of the town and held it several weeks. This victory added fresh glory to Dickison's command, and inspired in them the hope of future brilliant achievements to be crowned with like success.



By instructions of Gen. Braxton Bragg, Maj.-Gen. Patton Anderson was directed to report to General Hood for duty in the field, and he left Florida on the 26th of July, 1864. On his arrival at Atlanta he was assigned to command of his old division. Gen. John K. Jackson was ordered to the command of the district of Florida, and he remained on duty until the 30th of September, when he was succeeded by Gen. William Miller, of the First regiment of Florida volunteers, who had been relieved from duty as commandant of conscripts. Encouraged by the success of the expedition against our posts at Cedar creek and Camp Milton, another, more formidable, was attempted and successfully carried out by the Federals, who ascended the St. John's river 25 miles to Black creek and there landed their troops. While crossing the south fork of the creek they were met by our cavalry acting as dismounted skirmishers, and three of the enemy were seriously wounded. Major Scott with 98 men bravely contested the Federal advance, but they pushed on to Darby's still, 5 miles in rear of Baldwin, compelling our forces to fall back to the St. Mary's river. The enemy took possession of Baldwin and held that important post until their defeat a few weeks later at the battle of Gainesville, when they retired to their intrenchments at Jacksonville.

These operations are fully described in the report of August 15th by Lieut.-Col. A. H. McCormick: "On July 23d, Maj. G. W. Scott, commanding outposts, reported that five transports with troops had gone up the St. John's river and were supposed to be landing them at the mouth of Black creek. I immediately ordered him to send a scout in that direction, which was promptly done. We soon learned, however, from other sources, that a large body of the enemy were in the neighborhood of Middleburg, and were probably making their way to Starke or Trail ridge on the Florida railroad. Major Scott was then directed to move with his whole cavalry force, leaving his pickets on the line of Cedar creek and a guard at

Camp Milton, to meet the enemy and check his progress. Accordingly, on the night of the 23d, Major Scott with 98 men moved down near Middleburg, and on the next day met and repulsed from 200 to 500 of their infantry, driving them across the creek. He then fell back about 5 miles to a creek to obtain a more advantageous position and to guard other approaches, and there camped for the night. Early next morning he was preparing to move against them when their infantry attacked his pickets. He sent forward skirmishers and drew them on, while he withdrew his main force to the west side of the creek to make a stand there. The enemy's cavalry dashed upon our skirmishers so suddenly and rapidly that they succeeded in capturing one man and driving the rest back. He learned upon crossing the creek that a body of cavalry had passed around to his rear during the night, by a road he was not advised of, and were making their way to Baldwin or some point on the Florida railroad; and fearing from the exposed condition of Baldwin that they would capture it, he moved his command with the utmost dispatch to that place. It was soon ascertained that they had crossed the railroad at Trail ridge, and, tearing up about 30 feet of the track, had passed in the direction of the St. Mary's trestle. We soon received information that they had burned the trestle and captured Lieutenant Packard and four men of the guard on duty at that place. I had already ordered Captain McElvey, of the Fifth battalion Florida cavalry, who was left in command at Camp Milton, to withdraw his pickets from Cedar creek and fall back to Baldwin. Had also dispatched a train for Captain Spencer's company of reserves and the working party on the Florida railroad engaged in taking up the iron from Callahan. I now determined to defend Baldwin, notwithstanding communication with Lake City was broken; for though our supplies were only for twenty-four hours, we had possession of an engine and train, and provisions could have been shipped us from the St. Mary's trestle, if carried to the

trestle on this side. At that time I supposed that the force in our rear was not more than 80 men, and that they had probably retired after burning the trestle. Meanwhile Captain Cone and Lieutenant Reddick, in command of separate detachments, had been sent to the rear for the purpose of getting fuller information. They left about 3 p. m. After night it was discovered that two other trestles between the St. Mary's and Baldwin were also on fire, and soon the guard at those points reported that the enemy had fired them. It was then apparent that the force had not retired from our rear, and also that our source of supplies was effectually destroyed, even should we succeed in driving them back. Up to 2 o'clock a. m. on the 26th, I could hear nothing from Captain Cone or Lieutenant Reddick, which led to the belief that they were either captured or cut off by a larger force than at first reported, which latter proved to be true. My force at Baldwin consisted of 216 cavalry under Major Scott, Captain Spencer's company of reserves, about 40 on duty, and Captain Villepigue's battery of four guns. At the hour referred to I called a council of officers and we determined to evacuate Baldwin and move by way of Brandy branch and Lang's ferry, on the Big St. Mary's, to this position on the west side of the south prong of that river.

"The whole command moved from Baldwin at 3 o'clock a. m. on the 26th, and crossed Brandy branch at 6 p. m. Here our pickets reported that the enemy's cavalry were in pursuit. The command was immediately put in position to receive them, and soon about 100 cavalry made their appearance, but after five or six shots from Captain Villepigue's battery and a few rounds from our skirmishers they retired. We then crossed the St. Mary's at Lang's ferry, and on Thursday, the 28th, the command arrived and took position at this place. I have since learned that on the night of the 25th three regiments of negroes, one of whites, one of cavalry, and four pieces of artillery reached Darby's still, six miles west of Baldwin.

"I have to report the following loss in prisoners: Lieut. D. M. Packard, Second Florida cavalry, and 3 men on guard at St. Mary's trestle; Assistant Surgeon Wilson and Sergeant Carrol, Captain Villepigue's company, and Private Pendarvis, Company K, Second Florida cavalry; Sergeant Denham, Fifth cavalry battalion, and 2 men on scout in direction of Trail ridge; Private J. E. Purdom, Company B, Second Florida cavalry, on a scout; Private Roche, Company G, Second Florida cavalry, wounded and captured in action at Black creek—making a loss of 2 officers and 10 privates."

On the 13th of August, 1864, Captain Dickison was given command of all the State troops called into service by virtue of the provisions of general orders from the adjutant and inspector's office, Tallahassee, July 30th. After the fight at Palatka, Company H, Second Florida cavalry, continued to perform heavy picket duty on the St. John's river, frequently engaging in skirmishes with the enemy. On the morning of August 15th a simultaneous movement was made by the Federals from Jacksonville and Green Cove Springs with a force of about 5,000 negro infantry, several batteries of artillery, and 400 cavalry. They advanced on our forces near Baldwin, driving them across the Little Suwannee, made a flank movement in the direction of Lake City up to Fort Butler in Bradford county, thence flanking around to Starke, a small town on the railroad 14 miles north of Waldo, where they plundered the town and citizens. Captain Dickison had encamped at Waldo, but the raiders having cut the telegraph wires and torn up the railroad track, no communication could be held with the Confederate forces at and near Lake City. At sundown, Captain Rou with a detachment of his company, Second Florida cavalry, came up to Waldo and reported the enemy at Starke. They remained there but a short time and moved on, flanking Dickison's command about 10 miles below. Just at dark Mr. Boulware and Dr. McCrea came with haste to our



headquarters, reporting the enemy in large force at their plantations, burning Boulware's mill, gin house and other buildings, with about 60 bales of cotton. Captain Dickison immediately prepared to follow them with about 130 cavalry: Company H, about 25 of Captain Starke's company from the Fifth battalion of cavalry, and one section of artillery under command of Lieutenant Bruton, about 90 infantry, new recruits who had reported to Captain Dickison, and Captain Rou's detachment of about 30 men. In all, our cavalry force consisted of about 180 men. The infantry moved out on the road leading to Gainesville under Colonel Earle, staff officer of Governor Milton, while Captain Dickison pushed forward with the cavalry and artillery. The enemy's cavalry, with one piece of artillery, moved through the country in the direction of Gainesville, leaving in their camps near the Boulware plantation 5,000 negro infantry and several sections of artillery. Concluding the latter were there for the night, Dickison followed the raiding party with great rapidity, the enemy occasionally stopping at the plantations and farmhouses on the line of march, taking with them all the negroes, horses and mules. They completely sacked Col. Edward Lewis' plantation, carrying off all the negroes, about 125 in number. Mrs. Lewis, who was alone on the plantation—her husband and son with our command—on hearing of the advance of the enemy, had four large plantation wagons loaded with her most valuable furniture, bedding, clothing, etc, ordering her teamsters to put in four mules to each wagon and drive them to a place of safety in the woods near by. As soon as the Federals came up, by fierce and cruel threats the slaves were intimidated and gave information where the wagons were concealed. They were ordered to drive them on and for all the negroes to follow. Just at daylight Captain Dickison rode up with his advance. Mrs. Lewis met him down the avenue and in heart-thrilling words told of her great loss. She had been robbed of everything, only

one decrepit slave left, who was not able to follow the others. Captain Dickison sent down his line for Mr. Lewis and requested him to remain with Mrs. Lewis. With lofty patriotism she said, "Go on with the command and do your duty and help avenge this invasion of our homes." We record with proper pride that by 10 o'clock that night all of her property, excepting one carriage horse killed, was safely returned.

Learning that the enemy was moving on to Gainesville, 12 miles distant, Captain Dickison continued his march. At this time Capt. W. A. Owens, with a detachment of 15 of the State militia, joined the force. This gallant soldier was one of the first citizens in Marion county in the organization of the Marion Light Dragoons. His health failing, he was compelled to resign, but he soon secured a commission as captain of militia and enrolled a small force of such as were not able to be in the regular service. After the war closed, he said that as he rode by his side on this occasion, Captain Dickison with deep feeling said to him: "We will meet the enemy very soon; we must win this fight or the country is gone. I can see in my brave men a determination to sacrifice their lives or win the fight, and I know they will win it. They have seen their homes invaded and the sore distress of their helpless families and neighbors. Such men may be killed, but never conquered."

As Dickison rode on with his advance—his surgeon, Dr. J. A. Williams, by his side—he saw in the distance the enemy's rear guard near Gainesville. When within one mile of Gainesville he formed his line for the fight. Lieutenant Bruton was directed to throw two shells into the enemy's line. The enemy held the railroad at each crossing and were in the depot, and Dickison, dismounting most of his men, ordered a detachment under Captain Rou and Lieutenant McCardell to move up on the left and take the depot, while Lieutenant McEaddy with a mounted platoon on the right flank and Lieutenant

Dozier in the center advanced and drove the enemy from the road. Our artillery was in the rear, shelling with good effect, and the enemy's artillery was near Beville's hotel shelling our battery at a furious rate. Soon the Federals were driven from the depot, and with our small-arms we got a cross-fire on their guns, killing every horse but one in the caisson. The fight grew very exciting, the right and left closing in around the town. After a fierce resistance of about two hours the enemy began to give way and our gallant men charging them on all sides they were soon in full retreat in two columns. At this time Captain Dickison dashed through the streets, calling to his men to mount their horses and follow, which was quickly done—the enemy scattering along the roads and through the woods, pursued on every side by our brave boys. The pursuit continued as far as Newnansville, 15 miles distant, many being killed and captured on the road. Their main column, with one piece of artillery, led by Colonel Harris, of the Seventy-fifth Ohio, was followed by Dickison and his command, who captured the gun one mile from town, in front of Dr. McCrea's residence. It was supposed that Colonel Harris' command had been reduced to 40 men during the pursuit. They had gone about 4 miles when they were met by a scouting party of 4 men who had been sent out the day previous to ascertain the movements of the enemy, and returning to our camp that morning found the command gone. Hearing our artillery in the direction of Gainesville they pressed on to the scene of action, and at a most opportune time passed through a long lane that turned abruptly to the right and there met 30 men with one lieutenant in full retreat, coming upon them before either saw the other. These 4 daring young soldiers demanded a surrender, which was immediately made, the enemy naturally supposing they were the advance of a reinforcement on the way to Captain Dickison. The prisoners were ordered to throw down their arms. Just then

Colonel Harris was seen riding up with 10 men. Sergeant Poer, who was in command of this daring little party, dashed off through the woods, ordering his prisoners to follow, and giving orders to his men to fire upon the first man who refused to obey. The colonel, seeing the capture of his men, made no attempt to rescue them, but turned in an opposite direction, around a plantation, and with a small remnant of his command made his escape and reached the negro troops he had left at Boulware plantation the night before, and a general retreat was ordered to their headquarters at Green Cove Springs on the St. John's river. Sergeant Poer, with his invincible command of three heroic boys, brought in their prisoners that evening to our headquarters at Gainesville.

On Captain Dickison's return to Gainesville he found some 200 prisoners, several of them commissioned officers. The only officer who escaped to tell the story of their defeat was Colonel Harris. The major commanding the Fourth Massachusetts battalion of cavalry, with two of his men, who were making their escape on foot, their horses having been killed in the fight, were captured when they had nearly reached the St. John's river, about 50 miles from Gainesville. They were brought to Captain Dickison, who met the major, whose name was Fox, and said pleasantly, "Major Fox, how is it you allow the 'Gray Fox' to outrun and capture the Red Fox?" It was well known that this officer with his fine battalion had been sent on the St. John's river especially to capture Captain Dickison, but he suffered the fate of similar expeditions. One hundred and seventy-five men of the Confederate command were in the fight. The remainder did not come up until the fight in the town was over, after which they scoured the country, doing most valuable service in capturing the enemy for more than 40 miles from Gainesville. There were 52 of the Federals killed in the town. It was never correctly learned how many were killed in the retreat to the river. The



prisoners captured, including a number of officers, were about 300, many of them badly wounded. Several hundred stand of arms, one fine 12-pound howitzer and 260 horses fell into our hands. Our loss was 3 men killed and 5 wounded, of whom 2 died the next day. Several wagons were recovered that had been stolen in the raid, loaded with the plunder collected, some of it valuable silver plate; also 200 slaves that had been carried off from the plantations. This property was carefully guarded and turned over to the proper owners.

The plan of the enemy, as shown by the orders captured, was to march the next day with the 5,000 negro troops and several sections of artillery into Gainesville, confident of the successful occupation of the town by their large cavalry force. If such had been their success they would have secured several thousand bales of fine sea island cotton as a rich prize, and untold horrors would have been enacted in desolated homes. But they failed, for our heroes were fighting for their homes and all that was dear to them in life, and their battle-cry, "Victory or Death," sent terror into the hearts of the invaders.

This victory saved east and south Florida. The counties of Bradford, Alachua, Marion, Levy and Hernando, lying between the St. John's river and the Gulf of Mexico, were known by the enemy to be among the most valuable portions of the State, owing to the almost inexhaustible supplies of sugar, syrup, cattle, with oranges, lemons, limes, arrowroot and other semi-tropical productions, which were of inestimable value to the State and the Confederacy. Our largest and most productive interest—sea island cotton—and the immense supplies of corn and forage, made it of the highest importance that this wide extent of country should be closely watched and the advances of the enemy checked, preventing widespread desolation and the carrying off of the slaves, who were the only able-bodied tillers of the soil, and better fitted for field work than the white man.

Too high an estimate cannot be placed upon the importance of the great responsibility resting upon the gallant men whose duty it was to be a living bulwark between the enemy and the helpless families whose homes were imperiled. Only by the most untiring vigilance of our patriotic soldiery could the inestimable resources of our beautiful peninsula be preserved and rendered available to their utmost capacity. Truly did they immortalize themselves in the proud victory won at the battle of Gainesville. The general commanding at Charleston conveyed to Captain Dickison his congratulations, and stated that he took pleasure "in bringing this and several other instances of gallantry on the part of yourself and noble command to the notice of the President, and in recommending you for that promotion which your repeated acts of good service so justly entitle you to receive. He begs that you will make known to your officers and men his appreciation of their gallantry and good service."

Gen. Sam. Jones, commanding the district of Florida, in a letter to Adj.-Gen. Samuel Cooper, asked that Captain Dickison be given adequate rank, so that he could take command of the cavalry in Florida, and added, "I have reason to believe that the name of Captain Dickison is held in great terror by the enemy. A surgeon who was captured at Baldwin, and who has since been exchanged, reported that the forces of General Birney were kept in a constant state of dread lest Dickison should come upon them." Gen. J. K. Jackson, in General Orders No. 44, said: "With pride and pleasure the brigadier-general commanding announces to the troops of this district the brilliant victory of Capt. J. J. Dickison and the forces under his command. After a forced march from Waldo they met the enemy at Gainesville, and undaunted by the superiority of his numbers, attacked and completely routed him. This unparalleled success merits for the gallant little band in south Florida the everlasting gratitude of their countrymen, whose homes and honor they have saved

from a brutal soldiery. The brigadier-general commanding tenders to them his sincere thanks, and promises that every effort on his part shall be exerted to secure to their leader the reward of promotion which he so richly deserves and which they have enabled him to win."

In obedience to the order of General Jackson Captain Dickison remained for a few days in Gainesville with his forces as a corps of observation. Meanwhile on August 26th the troops under the command of Capt. Edward J. Sutterloh and Lieut. John B. Dell, Company F, Second Florida cavalry, had a brilliant engagement with one of the enemy's gunboats on the Suwannee river, repulsing the enemy and adding to the renown of the Florida troops.

A letter from Camp Dickison, Waldo, to the Lake City Columbian, well describes the situation early in September and the service of the militia: "Three Federal prisoners, stragglers from the recent raiding expedition to Gainesville which suffered such disastrous defeat, have been captured within the past few days by the troops of this command. The enemy is known to be in large force at Jacksonville and Magnolia. All that can be said is that our troops are as ready to administer to these merciless invaders the same chastisement they were wont to give on past occasions. The State troops in this command are doing much to entitle them to the sincere gratitude of their country. Truly such an exhibition of patriotism has never been witnessed, certainly never excelled in the annals of warfare, as has been demonstrated in this glorious little State. The grandfather vies with his offspring in deeds of valor; and the silver-haired patriarch, bowed with the weight of years, stands firmly by the side of his fair-haired boys in forming that solid phalanx contending for all that is dear to them and against which the combined forces of the enemy cannot successfully combat. At Gainesville, though suddenly assembled upon the emergency, under command of Judge Thomas F. King, the citizen soldiery emulated the example of their com-

rades, the sturdy veterans and victors on many fields of carnage, and by their valor and intrepidity contributed much to the glorious result." On September 22d, the State troops, under Captains King, Dudley and Richards, were sent home on furlough with the congratulations of the commanding officer.



## CHAPTER VI

FURTHER OPERATIONS IN THE FALL OF 1864—FEDERAL INCURSION TO MARIANNA—GREEN COVE SPRINGS—RAID TO MILTON—FIGHT NEAR BRADDOCK FARM—NEAR CEDAR KEYS—NATURAL BRIDGE—THE CLOSING SCENES.

ON the morning of the 25th of September, 1864, the usually quiet little town of Marianna, in west Florida, of about 2,000 inhabitants, was in a state of great anxiety over the report that the "Yankees were coming." The nearest railway station was Quincy, some 50 miles east, and the nearest point on the gulf coast, St. Andrews bay, about an equal distance, where a number of Federal gunboats blockaded the sound. Pensacola, the largest naval station in the South, 150 miles to the west, was held by the Federals. The inhabitants, aside from the slaves, consisted of well-to-do planters, mostly emigrants from North Carolina and Georgia. The politics of this county previous to the war was strongly Whig, and secession was bitterly opposed; but after the war commenced the young men volunteered freely in the Confederate army. A small detachment of Confederate cavalry was then stationed at and near Marianna, about 300 men all told, residents of Jackson and adjoining counties, and men of fine intelligence. At Marianna was a cavalry company, commanded by Captain Chisolm; two other companies detached from Colonel Scott's battalion of cavalry were stationed, one under Capt. W. H. Milton 25 miles south of Marianna, and one under Captain Jeter 20 miles west, at Hickory hill. They were under the command of Colonel Montgomery, once a lieutenant in United States army and appointed from private

life. He was a martinet with little or no experience in the field. There was also a post hospital in charge of Assistant Surgeon H. Robinson, C. S. A.

The scouts had often brought alarms that the Yankees were coming from St. Andrews bay, but they generally proved false. On this occasion, however, September 25th, Colonel Montgomery made a personal reconnoissance and found the report well founded. He hastily returned to headquarters and sent out couriers to his scattered companies, with orders to report in all haste at Marianna. The church bells were rung, calling out all citizens to the court house, where a meeting was held and resolutions passed to repel the invaders. A few Confederate soldiers, then at home on sick leave, formed a nucleus of an organization which was at once perfected. Grayheaded old men, boys under 16 years of age within the town and ten miles around, regardless of previous Union sentiment, arrived with shotguns and formed what they themselves called "The Cradle and Grave militia company," in all about 200, and partly mounted. They elected Captain Norwood, a prominent Unionist, as their captain, and reported for duty to Colonel Montgomery, full of ardor and brave endeavor.

Two roads enter Marianna from the west in parallel lines, one from Campbellton and the other from St. Andrew's bay. At the point where the two roads unite in the center of the village, forming the main street, there was on the left an Episcopal church and cemetery, and opposite the church a large two-story boarding-house. Another road, diverging from the Campbellton road, led around the town in the rear. As Colonel Montgomery had no pickets out he did not know from which direction the Federals would advance. He ordered his hastily levied militia to form a line, and constructed an abatis of old wagons and logs of wood across the street at the junction of the Campbellton and St. Andrews roads, forming his right at the boarding-house and his left rest-

ing at the Episcopal church. Here the gallant men and boys impatiently awaited the arrival of the enemy. The Federal command consisted of a battalion of the Second Maine cavalry under Maj. Nathan Cutler, of Augusta, Me., and several companies of deserters, the so-called First regiment of Florida Union troops, and two full companies of ferocious Louisiana negroes, in all about 600, under the command of Brigadier-General Ashboth.

About two o'clock in the day the advanced pickets of the enemy made their appearance on the edge of the town, from the Campbellton road. It was then too late to draw in Colonel Montgomery's straggling line, so fire was opened upon the pickets about 200 yards in front of our men, under which the Federal advance made a hasty retreat, inspiring the little Spartan band of defenders with hope of victory. But presently the main body made its appearance and General Ashboth detached a part of his command to flank the village, and advanced the main body directly toward the church. An indiscriminate firing began from the Confederate front and rear, the old men and beardless boys fighting like enraged lions, disputing every inch of ground. The contest was fierce and deadly for half an hour, when General Ashboth ordered the church, boarding-house and a private residence opposite burned. The militia kept their ground manfully between the two walls of flames. In the meantime the Federal flanking party gained the rear of the militia and commenced an indiscriminate slaughter, giving no quarter to any one. The negro companies in particular acted in the most fiendish manner. Old men and boys who offered to surrender were driven into the flames of the burning buildings; young lads who laid down their arms were cut to pieces; others picked up bodily by stalwart negro soldiers and thrown into the seething, burning church. The charred remains of several of the half-grown boys were afterward found in the ruins of the church. Colonel Montgomery and his staff made a very precipitate

retreat toward the Chipola river, the eastern boundary of the village, leaving the men to fight it out the best they could. The colonel was unhorsed and captured, and the staff made their way across the river in safety. The Confederates scattered in every direction, every man for himself, pursued by the Maine cavalry who kept up a steady fire upon them. The casualties on the Federal side were Captain Adams and 10 men of the Second Maine cavalry, killed. General Ashboth and Maj. N. Cutler were seriously wounded, and about 25 enlisted men wounded. The loss on our side was about 60 killed, burned and wounded. About 50 of the Confederates succeeded in crossing the Chipola river and tore up the bridge. Captain Miller, quartermaster, and Dr. Robinson, post surgeon, made attempts to reform the scattered command, and held them together until late in the evening, when they were reinforced by the arrival of Captain Milton with 75 mounted men. The whole fight lasted about an hour. With the retreat of the Confederates across the river, the town was in full possession of the Federals. General Ashboth and Major Cutler were carried to a private house, where their wounds were dressed. A council of war was held by the Federal officers, who concluded that in consequence of the wounded condition of their general they would return to Pensacola with their prisoners, contraband and plunder. About midnight General Ashboth was carried off in a carriage. Major Cutler and the other wounded were left behind, and the town evacuated. The several companies of Confederate cavalry who had been previously sent for made their appearance on the east side of the river, anticipating and hoping for a renewal of hostilities next morning. By dawn their scouts were sent in town and learned of its evacuation by the enemy.

It was deemed advisable not to attempt a pursuit until stronger reinforcements that were looked for from Tallahassee should arrive, but to take possession of the town



and await results. The prisoners carried off by the Federals were most of them old men and boys who had surrendered, also a number of non-combatants, in all about 100 men. They were sent to northern prisons, principally Elmira, N. Y. About 40 of these unfortunates survived the rigor of the climate and the painful experience of prison life and returned to their homes so enfeebled in health and broken-hearted that most of them were soon released from a life of suffering before the year expired, and but few are living to tell the tale of their sufferings.

On the arrival of Col. G. W. Scott with a battalion the day following, an attempt at pursuit was made, but the enemy had 24 hours start and the desperate Confederates failed to overtake them. The day after the fight, Marianna presented a pitiable sight. The dead and wounded lay all about, and the wails and cries of mothers, wives and sisters could be heard in every direction. Women and children searched for father, son or brother in the ashes of the burnt buildings. Here and there a charred thigh or ghastly skull was disinterred from the debris. Eventually some sort of order was evolved from the chaos. The dead were buried, the wounded citizens taken to their homes or those of friends, and the Federal wounded to the military hospital. While this skirmish was a defeat to the people of Marianna, it in reality resulted in a victory. The objective point of General Ashboth's expedition was to capture Tallahassee, the capital of the State, and as the resistance made at Marianna frustrated his object and compelled his hasty retreat to Pensacola, his success was barren.

The foregoing account of this cruel raid was given by the post surgeon, an eye-witness of the horrors of the invasion and the atrocities that were perpetrated.

On being advised of the Federal movement threatening Marianna and Tallahassee, General Jackson had ordered Brigadier-General Miller to assume command of sub-districts, Colonels Turney and Smith being sick; and ordered

all the troops in Colonel Smith's district and four companies of Fifth Florida cavalry, with Lieutenant-Colonel Scott, from Colonel Turney's district, to report to General Miller. Jackson also reported: "I think there is great danger of an attack from the west coast, of which this present raid is the precursor. My force is entirely inadequate to meet these different attacks; too small when concentrated, it is indeed too weak when divided."

On the 23d of October, 1864, Captain Dickinson received a dispatch from Lieutenant Haynes of the Fifth battalion of cavalry, on the outposts near Green Cove Springs, that the enemy in considerable force had been met and driven back by his command about 3 miles. He immediately moved with all haste to the front, his command consisting of a detachment of Company C, Captain Chambers; a detachment of his own Company H, under Lieutenant McCardell, and one 12-pound howitzer in command of Sergt. J. C. Crews; in all about 90 men. Arriving on the morning of the 24th of October, and supposing that the enemy would again come out at or near the same place, he made immediate arrangements for an attack. They failed to come out. He then learned there was a crossing 5 miles above at Finegan's ford, whither he sent a scout, who soon reported that a cavalry command had crossed at that place and taken the road to Middleburg, on Black creek. He immediately marched to meet them on their return. There being two roads to guard, he placed a detachment on each, at a distance convenient for rapid concentration should it become necessary. Presently the enemy were seen returning, driving in a large drove of fine cattle to enrich their commissary stores with what they called "rebel beef." Dickison concentrated his force to meet the Federals, who were preparing for the charge. On they came with drawn sabers, the polished blades flashing in the sunlight, but as they drew near they were met with a telling volley. Halting, they quickly reformed and charged a second time, again

to be checked by a deadly volley. Then the howitzer opened fire, and as they fell back in great confusion our intrepid men charged them, killing and capturing almost the entire command. The fight lasted an hour, through an open woodland nearly two miles in extent. Only three made their escape, by leaving their horses and taking to the swamp. One of them, a captain, was badly wounded in the head, but, before he would be taken prisoner, left his horse and pistols and concealed himself in the swamp. It was learned a few days later that he reached his headquarters and soon recovered from his wound. The enemy's loss was 9 killed and 65 prisoners, 12 of whom were wounded, 1 fatally. We captured 75 fine horses and all their arms, consisting of Spencer rifles, pistols and sabers. All without a wound in the Confederate ranks.

Only a short time elapsed when a scout from the east side of the St. John's river, where a small party was kept on watch, reported the enemy coming out in considerable force every day to the Fairbanks place, 2 miles north of St. Augustine, situated between San Sebastian and North rivers. Captain Dickison ordered 50 men of Company C, Second Florida cavalry, under the gallant Lieut. Samuel Reddick, and 50 men from his own Company H, to move at the shortest notice with four days' rations. Starting at night he reached the St. John's river early the next morning, but having only one flat-boat it took some time to cross the river with 100 cavalry. By marching all night they arrived within a short distance of the place where the enemy was expected. Leaving a detachment in front of St. Augustine to guard against the enemy coming out at that point to cut them off, he crossed the San Sebastian river at its head waters and at sunrise reached the Fairbanks place, where he arranged his command to surprise and capture the Federals. Lieutenant Reddick with his detachment was to watch them, but allow them to pass until they reached the Dickison detachment, when the two would attack in front and

rear. Soon the brave and faithful sentinel, B. F. Oliveros, signaled that the enemy were advancing. Happily for the Federals, their advance guard was a considerable distance to the front, so that when it reached Captain Dickison the main force had not passed the position of Lieutenant Reddick.

Captain Dickison had concealed himself about twenty feet from the road, and, when the advance was within a few yards of him, he arose and ordered them to surrender. They replied with a volley which drew the fire of the dismounted Confederates, and a charge immediately followed which resulted in the killing or capturing of the entire advance. At this alarm the main body wheeled around and dashed back in great confusion, Lieutenant Reddick gallantly pursuing them through an almost impenetrable scrub, killing 3 and mortally wounding their commanding officer. Company H remounted, and some of them also pursued the enemy through their picket lines, capturing and bringing out several of their pickets, the total capture being 35. Being only a mile and a half from the city, and knowing the enemy would soon be out in large force, the prisoners and arms were sent to the rear.

Captain Dickison and Lieutenant Reddick rode up to where a wounded Federal officer lay near one of his men, mortally wounded. On examining the officer's wound, Captain Dickison saw it was mortal, and, as his surgeon was not in attendance, he bound it with his handkerchief and made a pillow of his only blanket for the dying soldier. Choice being given him to be paroled or carried off as prisoner, he accepted parole, as also did his wounded comrade. The next day death, the last conqueror, claimed his own. After performing this humane act the Confederate officers had barely time to regain their command when a Federal force came out to remove their wounded and dead. Had not their advance guard been good soldiers and well trained, the entire battalion would



have been captured. The next day Dickison recrossed the river with his prisoners, arriving at his headquarters without a casualty.

The disastrous result of our heroic defense at Marianna led the enemy to attempt another invasion upon the most exposed points along the coast. On the 24th of October, 1864, almost at the same time of a similar movement on the St. John's river, two steam transports left Barrancas, having a force of 700 men and two howitzers, with orders to proceed up the Blackwater bay, whence the troops were to march to Pierce's mills to secure a supply of lumber, and thence advance toward Milton, about 12 miles distant. Nearing Milton they came upon a detachment of about 80 Confederate cavalry, and a brisk fight ensued, our troops steadily and gallantly meeting the attack until reinforcements of cavalry and artillery came up and they were forced to retire. The enemy pursued through Milton and on the road to Pollard. But the Confederate force, though unequal to a conflict with such superior numbers, succeeded in escaping capture. The Federals returned to Milton, leaving their cavalry to hold the place, where on the following morning a transport arrived, and the enemy secured several flatboats and destroyed the ferry across the river. In this ruthless invasion, what spoils could not be carried off were destroyed.

The Federals being strongly intrenched at Pensacola, with gunboats and transports in the bay, the towns lying on the Gulf coast having but limited means of defense and of easy access were made objective points of frequent expeditions. Too much credit cannot be given to our gallant soldiers on the west side of the Chattahoochee river who were thus constantly exposed to assaults by overwhelming forces.

In the east the enemy continued his demonstrations, and our outposts near Green Cove Springs, Palatka and up the St. John's river as far as Volusia county, were kept constantly engaged. Learning from his scouts on the

east side of the river that the enemy's garrison at Picolata was about 400 strong and was becoming very troublesome and insulting to our loyal citizens in that neighborhood, Captain Dickison resolved on an expedition across the river, could he gain the consent of his general commanding and arrange some plan for the relief and protection of these unfortunate people. In reply to his telegram the general replied that he would leave it to his good judgment; but to be very cautious, as the enemy were in large force at Jacksonville, Green Cove Springs and St. Augustine, with their gunboats in the river. Dickison at once decided to cross the river and reconnoiter near the enemy's stronghold, and ordered preparations made for five days' rations. His cavalry consisted of a detachment from Company H of 64 men under Lieutenants McCardell and McEaddy, 33 from Company B of the same regiment, and 28 from Company H of the Fifth battalion of cavalry, under command of Lieutenants McLeod, Haile and Haynes. His destination was not confided to his command.

On the 2d of February, 1865, just at sunset, they reached the deserted city of Palatka. He then formed his men and made known to them that he intended crossing over into the enemy's lines. Not one of the heroic little band faltered in his duty or desired to turn back. The distance across the river was one mile, their only transportation one flatboat that could carry but twelve men and horses. They were all night and until 10 o'clock the next morning making the passage over, but landed safely and in fine spirits. They had a long and circuitous route to march to reach Picolata, continuing until 2 o'clock that night. When within one mile of the fort a halt was called and a young soldier in the command, whose father lived inside the Federal lines, was detailed to pass through the picket line and bring out his father. This hazardous duty was performed and the worthy parent informed Captain Dickison that the enemy had been

reinforced that day with about 300 men and had several pieces of artillery in position on the fort. It was apparent that it would be futile to attack this strong post without artillery; but the same informant reported there was to be a large assembly of the people that night for a dance, from St. Augustine and Jacksonville, and that about 12 miles off, on the road to the house of entertainment, was a station where several soldiers and horses were kept. Sending down his line to arouse the men, who, after long and toilsome marches, would often fall asleep as soon as a halt was ordered, Dickison moved on rapidly to reach if possible each place before daylight. Arriving at the station, they captured the 12 Federal cavalry with as many horses, and then pressed on to the banquet hall.

Placing a detachment on the road leading to Jacksonville and one on the road to St. Augustine, just at the dawn of day Captain Dickison moved up in the rear. As he drew near the house he saw two officers, a major with his adjutant, riding off. He dashed up to them and demanded a surrender. These officers belonged to the garrison at Picolata. At the house, several soldiers, with 1 captain and 1 lieutenant, were captured. The detachment by the roadside captured the band of musicians, composed of 12 young soldiers, in a fine four-horse ambulance, on their way to St. Augustine. They were ordered to halt, our boys saying, "We want that carriage to take a ride." At these places were captured about 40 men, including 4 officers, also 18 horses and 1 ambulance. Dickison now learned that Colonel Wilcoxson, with the Seventeenth Connecticut and ten large six-mule wagons, had gone up the road in the direction of Volusia county. Dividing his command he took 52 men with one lieutenant to follow in pursuit of Colonel Wilcoxson, leaving the remainder under Lieutenants Haile, Haynes and McCardell with the guard in charge of the prisoners, with orders to move on by the way of Haw's creek and

meet him at or near Braddock's farm, about 6 miles east of the river. He then rapidly proceeded with his detachment. They had marched but a few miles when Lieutenant McEaddy, commanding the advance, met a detachment of cavalry under Captain Staples and captured 1 man and 2 horses, the others making their escape in the swamp near by. Upon reaching the main road, a bright moonlight smiling upon them, they continued to press forward until midnight, when a halt was ordered for an hour. They continued their march, every few miles meeting deserters on their way to St. Augustine. Gaining all the information desired from them they were sent to the rear as prisoners. On the evening of the third day they learned from two deserters who were just from Wilcoxson's headquarters at Braddock's farmhouse, only 2 miles distant, that they were making ready to start back their wagons loaded with cotton. Captain Dickison then advanced a little nearer, halted, and arranged his little command for a desperate encounter, as he well knew the enemy outnumbered him two to one, their regiment a fine and well disciplined one. Lieutenant McEaddy, the only commissioned officer with him except his surgeon, Dr. Williams, was directed to keep his men in good line, ready for the charge, the signal to be given to him from the head of the advance by a wave of his handkerchief.

Moving on slowly, his surgeon by his side, he saw the enemy at some distance moving down a long hill with a heavy train of wagons. He could see them marching along in no particular order by the side of the wagons, having no advance guard, as they had just left their headquarters. A branch being between the enemy and our men, he ordered our advance, consisting of 10 men under Sergt. William Cox, to dismount and take position at the branch and await orders. The enemy halted not over 150 yards distant, and our advance under the excitement fired into them without orders. They



were then ordered to make a charge. The heart of any commander would have thrilled with proud delight at the splendid heroism they displayed. They fought as only brave men fight. Charging up to the long line of wagons under a heavy fire, they pressed on until the enemy gave way and fell back to the woods, pursued by our intrepid dragoons. The captain demanded a surrender, ordering them to throw down their arms. This was all done before they had time to learn the strength of our force. As we passed the wagons in the charge Captain Dickison directed his surgeon, Dr. Williams, to remain with the wagons and stop our advance as they came up. At this juncture Lieutenant McEaddy, in making ready for a charge, struck a pond, around which he with a few of his command made the charge, Colonel Wilcoxson with his staff and a detachment of 20 cavalry being at that moment ready to meet him. They charged down the hill upon our men, coming up near where the prisoners had surrendered. Our command then fired into the colonel's escort which dashed off on the road toward the wagons, where a lively fight ensued, our surgeon and Sergeant Cox with 10 men killing and capturing every one, except Colonel Wilcoxson. He fought fearlessly. After firing his last shot he threw his pistol at one of our soldiers, then drew his sword and started down the road where 3 men were guarding the prisoners. There was but one way for him to make his escape, between this guard and Captain Dickison, who was on the watch, fearing the prisoners would revolt. Seeing this officer approaching, not knowing who he was, he rode on to meet him, and demanded a surrender. Driven to desperation, the Federal drew his sword and made a furious charge at Dickison, who fired, the shot taking effect in his left side. As their horses were moving rapidly they passed each other. Dickison quickly turned and soon gained upon his adversary, whose glittering sword flashed defiance. Again he fired with sure aim, the saber strokes

falling fast. One more shot and his antagonist fell. At this moment one of our men rode up and the wounded man was left in his care. The fight ended, Captain Dickison on inquiry learned that Colonel Wilcoxson was not among the prisoners. He looked in the direction he had left the wounded officer and saw him approaching, leaning upon the arm of the young guard, who called to Captain Dickison that Colonel Wilcoxson desired to see him. He dismounted to meet him, with an emotion that stirs the heart of every brave man, for "the bravest are the tenderest," and addressed him, "Colonel, why did you throw your life away?" The colonel with true manhood replied, "Do not blame yourself. You are only doing your duty as a soldier. I alone am to blame." Dr. Williams, our noble surgeon, soon came up and greeted the unfortunate officer as a brother united by the "mystic tie." He was faithfully ministered to by true and brave hearts until his ear was deaf to earth's rude alarms and the weary spirit peacefully departed to its eternal rest.

The victory was a decided and brilliant one. The entire command was captured, about 75 in number, except 4 killed, also their wagon train, with ten fine wagons, each with six mules and horses, with best equipments, all loaded with sea island cotton that had been stored at Braddock's farm, and all of their fine cavalry horses. Not a man was hurt on our side.

Captain Dickison was then about 10 miles from the river, and up to this time had heard nothing of Lieutenant McCardell's command, which had left three days previous, with instructions to meet our detachment at or near this place. Considerable anxiety prevailed in regard to their safety, increased by the great difficulty to be met in making a successful crossing of the river. But he moved on for about 3 miles, when night coming on, a halt was ordered and a detachment of four men was sent on to Horse landing to order the flatboat brought over by the time he would reach the landing next morning.

Before crossing the river, he had directed Captain McGahaghan, who was at Horse landing with an infantry company of reserves for the purpose of removing the machinery of the gunboat Columbine, to be ready to assist him when he returned from his expedition. Early next morning on arriving at the landing the boat was found ready. The position was a very critical one. It was apprehended that the enemy would soon follow with a large force to cut them off—an almost impenetrable swamp to the right and the St. John's in front giving them the advantage. This called forth all the resources of the leader to plan the successful accomplishment of so dangerous a transportation. He sent a scout 8 miles in his rear to watch the enemy's movements. He fully understood, should Lieutenant McCardell come up, there would be about 250 men and over 200 horses, with ten heavily loaded wagons and two ambulances, to be moved across the St. John's river by means of one flatboat, with capacity to carry one wagon or twelve men and horses. Fortunately the infantry company of about 70 men on the opposite shore would render valuable assistance in unloading each transport. He then made a detail of three detachments, sufficiently strong to manage the boat and respectively take command.

At 10 o'clock a. m. they began their difficult and arduous task. The prisoners were first sent over, then the captured wagons and horses, until all were safely landed. Day and night these dauntless men worked with such caution and accuracy that not a mistake was made, either in loading or discharging. The boat was never stopped until the last man, horse and wagon were safely landed on the west side of the St. John's river. While this was going on a courier reported that Lieutenant McCardell and command were all safe and would soon be up. On their arrival they gave most efficient help to our tired men who had so often crossed and re-crossed the river in performance of their arduous and perilous duty. By 11

o'clock the next morning, a period of 25 hours, the last boat, bearing Captain Dickison, landed, greeted by repeated shouts of welcome. After ten days from the time Dickison left his headquarters he returned with his proud command, all rejoicing over their brilliant victory, and feeling richly rewarded for the dangers and privations they had experienced by the assurance that the loyal citizens on the east side of the river, who had lived in constant dread of raiding parties, would now enjoy a happy security from their merciless enemies, who were now restrained in their vandalism by the brilliant and signal successes of our gallant and intrepid men in every expedition they had ventured upon in that section of country.

During the absence of the brave defenders of our homes, a weary period of ten days' sad vigil, loved ones suffered great anguish of heart and every citizen felt the most intense anxiety. Appreciating the distress of such harrowing suspense Dickison lost no time in sending dispatches to his telegraph operator at Waldo, a distance of 50 miles, to be forwarded to the department at Tallahassee, also to his family at Quincy. The bearer of these dispatches was D. G. Ambler, a member of Company H, Second Florida cavalry, whose fearlessness and executive ability admirably fitted him for any important trust. On this memorable occasion, as on every other, he was not found wanting, and soon the electric current did its heaven-directed work. The wires flashed joy into every heart, and loud peans were heard from every home in the "land of flowers," and the good tidings borne to our sister States made glad the whole Southland, for all hearts beat as one that were enlisted in our sacred cause.

On the night Captain Dickison returned from his expedition just described, he received a dispatch from Capt. E. J. Sutterloh, reporting the enemy landing in large force at Cedar Keys, under cover of their gunboats, and marching out in the interior. A few hours later, an-



other dispatch from this vigilant officer stated that the enemy were at Levyville and a portion of their command moving in the direction of Lake City. This was communicated to headquarters at Tallahassee, whence orders came to move forward, with all the force available, to get in the rear of the enemy and harass them until General Miller could arrive with his brigade, which would soon leave by train for Lake City, and thence march through the country with all the ordnance stores needed. Dickison at once set out with 52 men from Company H, under Lieutenants McCardell and McEaddy, and 20 from Company H, Fifth battalion of cavalry, in command of Lieutenants Haile and Haynes, with one 12-pound howitzer, commanded by Lieutenant Bruton. The prisoners were forwarded to Tallahassee under a strong guard. Though almost broken down by fatigue, Dickison's men pressed on with great rapidity. A scout reported that the enemy had left Levyville in a hasty retreat. It was soon found to be impossible to cut them off. Just before sundown they reached "No. 4," near Cedar Keys, about 4 miles in the rear of the enemy. When night came on a halt was ordered and a strong picket put out. At daylight the next morning the following troops reported to Captain Dickison: Captain Sutterloh, with 18 men from the outpost, and the militia numbering 37 men, under Captains King, Dudley, Price and Watterson, making our entire force 160 men, including the artillery. A courier brought in a dispatch that General Miller was about 50 miles in our rear, on the road leading from Lake City. Confident that the enemy would fall back to the island, under cover of their gunboats, it was decided to engage them at once.

The enemy's force consisted of two regiments of white and negro troops, from 600 to 700 strong, occupying a strong position behind the high embankment of the railroad. Captain Dickison put out a picket line on his right and, with 142 men, moved and encountered the fire

of the Federal picket. Dismounting his men a volley was received and returned, and then the Confederates made a daring charge. The enemy in their stronghold gave way before such dauntless bravery and in a few minutes Dickison held the road. The fight then became general, our artillery shelling them at a furious rate. They would give way, but rally again and again and renew the attack. Lieutenant Dell brought word that the Federals had been reinforced and were crossing the railroad trestle to flank him on the right. Our left being well protected by Lieutenants Haile and Haynes, our center bravely holding their position, Lieutenant Bruton was ordered with his howitzer and 10 men to the trestle that crosses over to the island. They were soon at the place. Never was artillery better handled; never more effective service rendered. At every attempt of the enemy to cross, a distance of 300 yards, our heroic Bruton would throw a shell into their lines and they would fall back. He would then turn his gun and shell the enemy where the rest of the command were fighting.

Unfortunately our ammunition was soon expended. Lieutenant Bruton reported only four more shells. He was ordered to the center, leaving Lieutenant McEaddy with 10 men to hold the trestle as long as possible. As the gallant Bruton dashed up with his gun, making a desperate charge, he allowed the Federals to come within a short distance, then opened fire upon them with a storm of grape-shot which drove them back in the wildest confusion. There stood the invincible Bruton, calm and undaunted, until his last round was fired, when he turned and coolly said, "Captain, I have fired my last shell; what shall I do?" "Remove your gun." Captain Dickison, riding along the line, learned that many of his men had shot their last cartridges, and having 200, in the thickest of the fight he distributed them. In a few minutes every round was fired. The command then fell back in good order about 600 yards, in view of the en-

emy and remained there some time, the enemy making no attempt to renew an attack. A courier at this time coming up reported the wagons within 6 or 8 miles, with ammunition for artillery and small arms. It was some time after dark before they reached our camp. The next day at an early hour the Confederates moved forward and learned that the enemy had left in great confusion, not removing their dead from the battlefield. During the fight many undertook to retreat across the bay to the island, being cut off from the trestle. Some were seen wading up to their necks, others trying to swim. Many found a watery grave.

Had our ammunition come in time, the entire force would have been captured. It is said by an eye witness of this most unequal fight of 160 men battling against not less than 600, that the cool determination and intrepidity exhibited by every man was too wonderful to describe. The Confederate troops and militia fought side by side. They were fighting on their own soil for their most sacred rights, many of them in sight of their once peaceful homes, knowing that the hearts of their loved ones suffered the most terrible agony as the sound of the distant cannon reached their ear. The enemy had advanced some distance in the interior, plundering the unprotected citizens, and were so insulting and brutal in their threats that the bravest hearts among our fair women trembled and sweet lips grew pale at their approach. Had it not been for the timely arrival of our heroic little band and the brave militia soldiery who so bravely hastened to their assistance, fearful indeed would the result have been. Thank God, who giveth the victory, "the battle was not to the strong," and the horrors that had again threatened every home were averted by His overwhelming love.

The slaves, horses and several hundred head of cattle, with other valuable property, were captured and returned to the owners. The enemy's loss was 70 killed and taken prisoner. We had 6 severely wounded. Three of

these gallant young soldiers, Joseph C. Crews, Edwin L'Engle and John M. Johns, never entirely recovered from their wounds. During the years that have gone by they have been often reminded of their heroic deeds on that memorable occasion by their sufferings and the scars left as a lasting memorial. All honor to our brave defenders!

"Give them the meed they have won in the past,  
Give them the laurels they won in the strife."

On their return to headquarters at Waldo they were met by General Miller and his command at Gainesville, also a detachment of cavalry under Lieutenant-Colonel McCormick. The noble matrons of the town gave them a kindly welcome, with a sumptuous dinner they had prepared in anticipation of their arrival.

In his report of this engagement Captain Dickison said, after recounting the events already narrated: "I desire to make especial mention of the good conduct and gallantry of Lieutenant Bruton, of the artillery, and the heroic men under his command. Their conduct upon the field, under the most trying circumstances, was all that could be desired. Sergt. William Cox of Company H, Second Florida cavalry, acting adjutant, was conspicuous for his gallantry and is entitled to the highest commendation for the efficient services rendered by him. The entire command, officers and men, behaved in such manner as entitle them to the grateful thanks of their commanding officer and the plaudits of their countrymen."

On March 15th Captain Dickison reported subsequent operations in his field as follows: "On the evening of the 10th inst., I received information from Marion county, through Col. Samuel Owens, that the enemy was advancing by way of Marshall's bridge and had advanced 12 miles in the interior, burning the bridge. I immediately ordered out my command and in two hours was in rapid



march in that direction. While near Silver Springs a courier reached me with a dispatch, stating that the enemy had burned the Ocklawaha bridge and were retreating toward the St. John's river. I then ordered my command to march back in the direction of Palatka, and sent an advance guard to have the flatboat in readiness for us to cross the river. On arriving at the river the wind blew very strong, which delayed our crossing about ten hours. After much difficulty, hard labor and great peril, we succeeded in crossing 50 of my command, leaving the remainder with one piece of artillery to guard and picket other points on the river. Hearing, on my arrival at Palatka, that the enemy had gone up the river in barges, I marched all night and at times at half speed and reached Fort Peaton, 7 miles from St. Augustine, where I overtook four negroes. We continued at fast speed toward the city and within a mile of their picket line, and captured twenty more, also a wagon and six ponies. Three of these ponies have since been claimed by citizens and delivered to them. The enemy, on hearing we were in pursuit of them, left wagons, mules and provisions at the river, where they had crossed near Fort Gates.

"The march was truly a hard one. We marched four days and nights with but little forage or provisions. My men were resolved, and showed a determination to pursue the enemy to the very gates of the city. The negroes, twenty-four in number, with the wagons and mules captured, belonged to Mrs. Marshall, of Marion county. The raiding party on reaching her plantation destroyed 200 hogsheads of sugar. Some of our militia met them, and in an engagement two of our men were killed. Had information reached me earlier they would have been overtaken with their rich spoils before reaching the river. All praise is due these noble, gallant men for their unflinching spirit and resignation, having endured every hardship without a murmur."

On April 5th Captain Dickison reported: "I have the

honor to report that my picket of two men on the east side of the St. John's river intercepted the courier line between St. Augustine and Jacksonville, killing four of the enemy and wounding the fifth, capturing two horses and the mails from St. Augustine and Jacksonville. I have allowed the gallant party to retain these horses for their use, and hope this reward to brave men may meet with approbation from the department."

After the defeat of the Federals at Cedar Keys on the 13th of February, 1865, they determined upon making another effort to capture Tallahassee, and for this purpose an expedition was planned by Gen. John Newton for a concentration of forces from Cedar Keys, Punta Rassa and Key West, to land in the neighborhood of St. Marks and, in conjunction with a naval force, ascend the river. Landing their forces of cavalry, infantry and artillery at the lighthouse, they marched to Newport and, finding that the bridge had been burned, advanced about 8 miles further up to the Natural Bridge, where some of our troops had taken position and were ready to meet them. This was a surprise to the enemy, as the opinion prevailed that our forces were so scattered from Fort Myers to the extreme western border of the State that it would be an opportune time for a successful expedition.

Our troops made a most gallant and determined charge, repulsing the Federals at every point until they were forced to fall back to their gunboats, sustaining a very heavy loss. In this engagement the negro troops were commanded by Maj. Edmund C. Weeks, who a few weeks previous had been completely defeated and routed by Dickison's command and the militia forces at "No. 4," near Cedar Keys. During the dark days when our people were passing through the fiery furnace of the reconstruction stage and withering under carpet-bag rule, Major Weeks, with other carpet-baggers, made his home in the city of Tallahassee. Among the captured papers was an order from his commanding general, John

Newton, promising the negro troops, "that should the expedition prove successful and Tallahassee be taken, they would be at liberty to sack the city." But our victory at Natural Bridge was a signal one, and again were the invaders foiled in their long cherished design to get possession of Tallahassee. Many instances of individual gallantry could be recorded, but where all fought with such dauntless intrepidity, not once wavering in their steady advance upon the enemy, repulsing them at every charge, they are all entitled to the highest commendation.

The Kilcrease artillery, Gamble's battery commanded by Capt. Patrick Houston, and a section of Dunham's battery under Captain Raube, acted in the most gallant manner, dealing death and destruction to the invaders and contributing largely to the result of the battle.

This battle and the operations closely preceding it were officially reported by Gen. Sam Jones on March 20, 1865, from Tallahassee, as follows:

"Since I have been in command in this military district several raids have been made on it, and one demonstration of a more formidable nature, designed to get possession of St. Marks and this city. All have been frustrated with little loss to us, and in a manner highly creditable to those of our troops engaged. The first was made from Cedar Keys by a party of from 600 to 700 men on the 9th of February. It was thought they intended to penetrate by way of Newnansville to the railroad bridge, over the Suwannee river. I sent a party of the reserves and Second cavalry to Newnansville, under Brigadier-General Miller, and directed Capt. J. J. Dickison with his command to endeavor to get in rear of the enemy. Finding, I suppose, that they would encounter more opposition than they expected, they did not advance as far as Newnansville, but fell back to a position, "No. 4," on the Florida railroad, near Cedar Keys.

"Captain Dickison attacked them early on the morning of the 13th ult., and though his numerical strength was scarcely a sixth to that of the enemy, in a sharp fight of

two or three hours duration he punished them so severely that they retired hastily to Cedar Keys, leaving their dead on the field; the loss on our part 6 wounded. Our men inflicted on the enemy a loss of 70 in killed, wounded and captured, and captured a quantity of cattle, wagons and other property which the enemy had taken on the march. Captain Dickison and his men started on this service the day after they had returned from the last on the St. John's river, where, without the loss of a man, they killed 4 of the enemy, including the adjutant, and captured 88 prisoners, including a lieutenant-colonel and 3 captains, an ambulance and 10 wagons with their teams, a number of small arms and horses and several thousand pounds of cotton. The lieutenant-colonel (Wilcoxson) captured was mortally wounded, and has since died in hospital at this place.

"On the 4th inst. a fleet of fourteen vessels, most of them transports, appeared off Saint Mark's lighthouse and landed a force estimated from 1,500 to 2,000 men, Brig.-Gen. John Newton commanding. On the 5th they moved inland, retarded in their march by a part of the Fifth battalion Florida cavalry, Lieutenant-Colonel Scott commanding. They reached Newport in the afternoon, after capturing a piece of artillery, the horses of which became unmanageable, shelled the village and burned two houses on the left bank. We burned the bridge at that point. I went to Newport early in the night of the 5th, where I found Brigadier-General Miller, who had promptly gone there with a company of cadets and a small body of militia. On the first intimation that the enemy had landed, the militia were called out and all the available troops in the district within reach were ordered to Tallahassee. During the night of the 15th, the enemy left a detachment opposite Newport and moved the principal force up to cross the St. Mark's at the Natural Bridge. Brigadier-General Miller, anticipating the movement, sent Colonel Scott with a small body of cavalry to meet them there. I ordered the reserves, militia and two sections of artillery, and the force at Newport under command of General Miller, to the same point. They arrived at the Natural Bridge about 4 o'clock in the morning, just in time to meet and repel two attacks. The enemy then formed under cover of a thick hammock and kept up an obstinate fight at intervals for ten or twelve hours.



Early in the afternoon a part of the Second Florida cavalry under Col. Caraway Smith arrived. Our artillery, four pieces, opened a brisk fire, which our men followed up by a charge, and the enemy fled to their boats leaving many of their dead on the field. Our numbers were scarcely a third that of the enemy. Their loss is estimated at not less than 300 in killed, wounded and captured. Prisoners captured represent the loss as particularly heavy in officers; General Newton reported wounded. Our loss 3 killed and 22 wounded. Among the killed was Capt. H. H. Simmons, Second Florida cavalry, when gallantly leading his company.

"Between the 3d of February and the 6th of March, 1865, it is estimated that our troops in this district have killed, wounded and captured a number of the enemy equal to one-third of our effective strength, as borne on the last return. Have added materially to our field transportation and recaptured much stolen property. The enemy's squadron is still off St. Mark's, and I anticipate another and more formidable demonstration to get possession of that port and this city."

Dazzled as we are by the transcendent brilliancy of the military achievements of our great leaders, Lee, Jackson, Johnston, Longstreet, Hill, Stuart, Ashby, Hampton, Gordon, Forrest, Morgan and a host of others whose names will shine through the ages with undiminished luster on the page of history, yet there were thousands of gallant men in our own proud little State whose brave hearts never faltered, even at the cannon's mouth, the grandeur of whose character and warlike deeds have proudly illustrated the age, renowned as it is with heroes and events unparalleled in the annals of the world. Such the heroic soldier whose valorous deeds have been recorded in these pages, and whose patriotism and adherence to principle are worthy of emulation by the chivalrous and brave in every land. May the youth of our grand Southland ever revere these illustrious heroes, living or dead, of a lost but just cause. All did their duty nobly, and their deeds of heroism will live in the heart of every true patriot and lover of the land that gave birth to such noble sons.

The surrender at Appomattox Court House, April 9, 1865, of our noble chieftain, Robert E. Lee, the incorruptible patriot and brave defender of his country's rights, soon followed by the surrender of that faithful, devoted patriot and grand hero, Joseph E. Johnston, was the death-knell to our long-cherished hopes and sealed the fate of the Southern Confederacy. As a proud and honorable people we accepted the arbitration of our leaders and, as heaven willed, resigned ourselves to the inevitable.

When the banner of the Confederacy was furled and the terms of peace had been accepted, the summons came for our own heroic soldiers to assemble in their respective districts to be paroled. It was a bitter trial to these dauntless men to accept a situation so hard to realize; but with proud consciousness of having done their duty they laid down their arms, received their parole, bade farewell to their brave companions in arms and returned to the enjoyment once more of the endearments of home, beguiled by the hope that peace was restored. Alas! how evanescent so blissful a dream! Owing to the lamentable death of our patriotic governor, John Milton, Gen. A. K. Allison, president of the senate, filled the executive chair for a short time. The Hon. William Marvin was made provisional governor, and held the office, by appointment of the president of the United States, until the winter of 1865, when we were granted the privilege of an election by the people for our State officers. One of our supreme judges, David S. Walker, by the unanimous voice of a proud constituency, was made governor. Not long, a little over two years, were we permitted to enjoy the blessings of his wise and peaceful administration. The red planet Mars was still in the ascendant, and eclipsed the pure lambent light of the beauteous star of peace. Our courtly governor was deposed by order of a military satrap, and a new régime established, most destructive to our prosperity and inexpressibly galling to the proud spirit of our citizens "to the manor born." The despot's

heel was upon our beloved land. We were deprived of all civil and political rights. We had neither law nor order; there was no protection of life, liberty or property. As a conquered province we were held in durance vile. With military dictators in authority at every city, town and village, the "Bureau" for "the wards of the nation," and that valiant cohort of carpet-baggers fraternizing with the "brother in black," a scene of degradation followed that presented so appalling a picture no pen can portray. With such rulers over our State, corruption, fraud and profligacy held high carnival. From every wronged heart the cry arose, "How long, oh Lord, how long, wilt thou delay thy vengeance." After a weary decade of bitter humiliation, our noble leaders made a bold charge as grand as that of the famous Light Brigade, and completely routed their political opponents. The great seal of State once more passed into their hands, and from that time to the present hour sacredly have they guarded it.

It was not easy to discharge the duties of citizenship in the States which had formed the Southern Confederacy during the years immediately succeeding the war. The plan of reconstruction inaugurated by the executive in 1865 was accepted by the people; they returned to their usual vocations, and peace and order were gradually restored; but before the new State governments were fully organized the plans of the executive were overthrown by the Congressional scheme, and the newly enfranchised freedman became a potent political factor under the second reconstruction. Years of strife, confusion, corruption and misgovernment necessarily followed. They were hard years for the inhabitants of the States who had been identified with the Southern cause. No other teacher than experience can enable one to form a correct idea of the trials and difficulties and perplexities of those days. In sections of country where the white people were in the minority—a very large minority in

States bordering on the Gulf coast—the conditions were aggravated. It was a contest for the preservation of civilization, and in the end the intelligent citizens regained control of the States, because they had leaders with wisdom and prudence and determination to take advantage of suitable opportunities such as from time to time aided them to restore good government. When, as the work of restoration progressed, these representative men were sent by their States and districts to Washington, there were many who declared that those who had once been in arms against the government could not be trusted to legislate for its maintenance, and that their admission to seats in the Senate and House, and to other high places, threatened the permanence of the Union. But this personal contact of senators and representatives who were on different sides during the civil war has been a potent influence in bringing the sections into closer and more friendly relations; and whatever fears may have been entertained of the effects of the return of the Southern leaders to place and power in the national government, they have long since been dissipated.



## CHAPTER VII.

### FLORIDA TROOPS IN THE ARMY OF NORTHERN VIRGINIA—SECOND REGIMENT ON THE PENINSULA—PERRY'S BRIGADE—BATTLE OF GETTYSBURG—FINEGAN'S BRIGADE.

THE Second regiment Florida infantry was composed of the following companies: The St. John's Grays, Capt. J. J. Daniel, Duval county; the Gulf State Guards, Capt. J. F. McClellan, Jackson county; Starke's company, Capt. John W. Starke, Putnam county; the Hammock Guards, Capt. John D. Hopkins, Marion county; the Davis Guards, Capt. George W. Call, Nassau county; Brevard's company, Leon county; the Hamilton Blues, Capt. H. J. Stewart, Hamilton county; the Madison Rangers, Capt. W. P. Pillans, Madison county; the Alachua Guards, Capt. L. Williams, Alachua county; the Columbia Rifles, Capt. W. R. Moore, Columbia county. Soon after reaching Virginia the Rifle Rangers, Capt. E. A. Perry, Escambia county, and the Howell Guards, Capt. G. W. Parkhill, Leon county, were incorporated with the regiment, they having gone to Virginia as independent companies. The Second Florida was organized by the election of George T. Ward of Leon county, colonel; St. George Rogers of Marion county, lieutenant-colonel; and Lewis G. Pyles of Alachua county, major.

The staff appointments were: Dr. Thomas M. Palmer of Monticello, surgeon; Dr. Thomas Henry of Quincy, assistant surgeon; Capt. Edward M. L'Engle of Jacksonville, assistant quartermaster; Capt. W. A. Daniel of Jacksonville, assistant commissary; Lieut. R. B. Thomas, adjutant; Edward Houston of Tallahassee, sergeant-

major; and T. W. Givens, quartermaster-sergeant. The personnel of the regiment was second to none raised in the State. It was made up of the bravest, most gallant and gifted of Florida's patriotic sons. On July 13, 1861, the regiment was mustered into the service of the Confederate States, for 12 months' service, by Maj. W. T. Stockton, and a few days later it departed from Jacksonville by rail, arriving at Richmond on Sunday afternoon, the memorable 21st of July, 1861. They were disappointed in their expectation of being sent immediately to Manassas, and were kept in the vicinity of Richmond for nearly two months, part of the time performing the duty of guarding the Federal prisoners captured at Manassas. On September 17th they left for Yorktown, where, during the fall of 1861 and winter following, the Second Florida constituted a part of the army of the Peninsula, under the command of Maj.-Gen. J. B. Magruder. Early in October, Adjutant Thomas was ordered to report to Richmond for duty, and his place was filled by Lieut. Charles Seton Fleming, of Captain Starke's company. With the opening of spring began the advance of McClellan with his formidable army. It was during the siege of Yorktown that the Second Florida received its baptism of fire. With the Second Mississippi battalion it was selected to make a sortie to dislodge a detachment of the enemy's sharpshooters which had approached very near Fort Magruder. How this duty was performed is told in the report of General Magruder: "The enemy's skirmishers pressed closely in front of Yorktown. Brigadier-General Early ordered a sortie to be made from the redoubts for the purpose of dislodging the enemy from Pulmentary's peach orchard. This was effected in the most brilliant manner by the Second Florida, Colonel Ward, and the Second Mississippi battalion, Lieutenant-Colonel Taylor, all under command of Colonel Ward. The quick and reckless charge of our men, by throwing the enemy into a hasty flight, enabled us to

effect, with little loss, an enterprise of great hazard, against a superior force supported by artillery, when the least wavering or hesitation on our part would have been attended with great loss."

At the evacuation of Yorktown the night of May 3, 1862, the regiment, then incorporated in General Early's brigade, marched out of the works that they had held for more than a month, and, passing through Williamsburg the next day, encamped a mile or two beyond. The following morning, May 5th, the booming of cannon beyond Williamsburg announced that McClellan's advance had reached the Confederate rear, and Early's brigade was marched back through Williamsburg, and during the afternoon advanced to the scene of action. The Second Florida was taken to the Confederate right and thrown into line of battle. In this, their first general engagement, they advanced with the steadiness of veterans across an open field, under a heavy fire from the enemy. On reaching the fallen timber where the enemy was posted, the regiment halted and opened fire. It was here that the fatal bullet pierced the heart of Colonel Ward and terminated the life of that gallant and heroic soldier and accomplished gentleman. The enemy now showing strength on the Confederate right, the regiment was ordered back across the field, where they were reformed by Lieutenant-Colonel Rogers, ably assisted by Lieut. Seton Fleming, acting adjutant. They were advanced to a position along an old line of fence, almost midway of the field. The position of the regiment was soon after changed to face a flanking force of the enemy, and while in this position a party consisting of Captains Call and Brevard, Lieut. Seton Fleming, Sergt. B. M. Burroughs, Corporals D. E. Maxwell and E. W. Burroughs, with a guard of five or six men under Capt. E. A. Perry, advanced to the front for the purpose of recovering the body of Colonel Ward, which was lying where it fell, between the lines of the contending armies. Despite a steady

fire they accomplished their mission, reached the body in safety, but on the return the gallant Fleming was shot down, a ball passing through his body. Supposing himself mortally wounded, he said to his comrades, "Leave me and let me die in peace." The colonel's body was taken to Williamsburg on the shoulders of his devoted soldiers and left, near midnight, at a house in the town, with a note pinned to it, giving the name and rank of the lamented dead and requesting interment. This proved to be the house of an Episcopal minister who had been a classmate and warm personal friend of Colonel Ward, and who performed for him at Williamsburg the last sad rites of Christian burial. President Davis, in his "Rise and Fall of the Confederate Government," referring to the battle of Williamsburg makes the following mention of Colonel Ward: "Among the gallant and much regretted lost by us was Colonel Ward of Florida, whose conduct at Yorktown had been previously noticed, and of whom General Early in his report of the battle of Williamsburg says: 'On the list of the killed in the Second Florida regiment is found the name of Col. George T. Ward, as true a gentleman and as gallant a soldier as has drawn a sword in this war, and whose conduct under fire it was my fortune to witness on another occasion. His loss to his regiment, to his State and to the Confederacy cannot be easily compensated.' "

Lieutenant Fleming, upon reviving from the first shock of his wound, managed to drag himself a short distance toward the regiment and was discovered and brought in by Perry's company on the extreme left. His brother, Lieut. Frank P. Fleming, with volunteers from Starke's company, carried him to Williamsburg, and, while assisting in this, Corporal Grey received a wound in the leg from a minie ball. When the enemy entered Williamsburg, with the assistance of the Confederate surgeons the wounded who were left there were cared for, and Lieutenant Fleming was allowed to remain at the house



of a Virginia lady, Mrs. Mary Claiborne, who took care of and nursed him with the devotion of a mother. On the 5th of August he was exchanged and returned to his regiment.

While the army was on the Chickahominy, the Second Florida held its election of officers under the reorganization, and Capt. E. A. Perry was elected colonel, Maj. L. G. Pyles lieutenant-colonel, and Capt. George W. Call major. At Seven Pines the regiment, then in General Garland's brigade of D. H. Hill's division, at a fearful sacrifice of life won imperishable laurels for Florida, charging up to the guns of the enemy under the most terrific fire and participating in the capture of Battery A, New York artillery, of General Casey's division, better known as the "Napoleon battery." The terrible loss sustained in this engagement by the Second Florida is an eloquent tribute to their heroic courage. Here the gallant and lamented Maj. George W. Call fell, leading the left wing of his regiment, a loss deeply felt by his command and State. His talents were of the first order. Though scarcely reaching middle age, he was for some years before the war acknowledged to be at the head of the Florida bar with such contemporaries as Sanderson, Archer, Yonge, Forward, Burrit and others, who shed luster upon the forum of our State. Of eleven captains of the Second Florida who went into this battle, four, Captains C. S. Flagg, I. H. Pooser, C. A. Butler and T. A. Perry, were killed; and six, Captains McCaslan, Musgrove, Duncan, Williams, Moore and Ballantine, were wounded. Lieutenant-Colonel Pyles was also severely wounded, from which he never recovered, and died soon after the termination of the war.

Our limits will not permit the special mention of each noble son of Florida who fell upon this bloody field. Their names are recorded in a sketch of "Florida Troops in Virginia," in a memoir of Charles Seton Fleming, written by his brother, Ex-Governor Frank P. Fleming, from which liberal quotations are made in this chapter. A

large majority of them were privates in the ranks, who fought not for glory or fame, but from a sense of duty to their country. General Garland in his report of the casualties said: "We have to mourn the loss of Maj. G. W. Call. Lieutenant-Colonel Pyles being severely wounded in the gallant discharge of his duties, Major Call killed, and ten out of eleven company commanders killed or wounded, the position of Colonel Perry was critical and dangerous. He discharged his duty with signal honor to himself and to my perfect satisfaction. The loss sustained by the Second Florida during this engagement was 37 killed, 152 wounded and 9 missing."

At the battle of Gaines' Mill and Frayser's Farm, the Second Florida, in Pryor's brigade of Longstreet's division, added to the laurels it had already won, with the sacrifice, however, of many valuable lives, of whom may be mentioned Capt. G. W. Parkhill and Lieuts. Edward C. Humphreys and J. H. Sikes.

The remainder of the career of the Second is covered by the account of the Florida brigade.

The Second Florida at the reorganization was continued in the service as a three years' regiment, therefore its term would have expired on the 13th of July, 1864, and the surviving remnant entitled to their discharge. But this band of heroes could not return home while an enemy remained in front, and while at winter quarters they anticipated the expiration of their term of service by re-enlisting for the war. The appreciation by the Confederate Congress, of the patriotic and heroic spirit manifested by the Second Florida in their re-enlistment for the war after their arduous service already performed, was expressed by their passage of the following joint resolution: "Resolved, That the thanks of Congress are due and are hereby tendered to the officers and men of the Second Florida regiment, who, after a service of distinguished gallantry and heroic suffering for nearly three years, did on the 28th of January, 1864, at a meeting held near Rapidan

Station, Va., resolve to re-enlist for the war at the expiration of the present term of service."

Soon after the Chickahominy campaign the Fifth and Eighth Florida regiments of infantry arrived in Virginia and were assigned to Pryor's brigade, otherwise composed of the Second Florida, Twelfth Virginia and Fourteenth Alabama.

The Fifth regiment was composed of ten companies, commanded by Captains A. G. Bailey of Jefferson county; Partridge of Jefferson; R. N. Gardner of Leon; Hollyman of Madison; W. D. Bloxham of Leon; W. J. Bailey of Jefferson; Spencer of Wakulla; John Frink of Hamilton; Gregory of Liberty; Vanzant of Columbia, and Lea of Madison. Col. J. C. Hateley was in command of the regiment, T. B. Lamar lieutenant-colonel, and B. F. Davis major.

The Eighth regiment, under command of Col. R. F. Floyd, included the companies commanded by Captains Worth of Hillsboro, Tucker of Madison, B. A. Bobo of Madison; William Baya of St. John's, R. A. Waller of Gadsden, Stewart of Orange, F. Simmons of Nassau, David Lang of Suwannee, Pons of Duval, T. E. Clarke of Jackson; Dr. Richard P. Daniel was surgeon.

The Second, Fifth and Eighth regiments fought together first in the great battle of Second Manassas August 30, 1862, where, as General Pryor reported, "the Fifth and Eighth Florida regiments, though never under fire before, exhibited the cool and collected courage of veterans." Crossing the Potomac near Leesburg early in September, the brigade marched through Frederick City, over South mountain into Pleasant valley, and participated in the investment and capture of the Federal forces at Harper's Ferry. Hurrying then to the field of Sharpsburg, they shared the service of R. H. Anderson's division in the battle of September 17th. In this engagement Colonel Hateley and Lieutenant-Colonel Lamar, of the Fifth, were severely wounded.

After the return of the army to Virginia the three Florida regiments were assigned to a distinct brigade and put under the command of Col. E. A. Perry, promoted to brigadier-general. The brigade remained in Anderson's division, in Longstreet's corps until after Chancellorsville, and then in A. P. Hill's corps. The Florida brigade during the remainder of the war achieved a reputation for gallantry second to none in the glorious army led by Robert E. Lee. At Fredericksburg December 11, 1862, the Eighth regiment, under Capt. David Lang, went to the support of the two Mississippi regiments at the river, where the Federals were endeavoring to lay their bridges, and, as General McLaws reported, "it acted gallantly and did good service." For a long time this little band of heroes under Barksdale prevented the crossing of the river, despite the terrible fire of musketry and artillery with which the enemy endeavored to sweep them away. Toward noon Captain Lang was severely wounded and Capt. Thomas R. Love took command, and the position was maintained until they were ordered back at 4 p. m. A detachment of three companies under Captain Baya fought in a very exposed position, and he, Lieut. H. C. Simmons and 20 men were captured. The companies under Captain Lang lost 7 killed and 24 wounded. The remainder of the brigade was not actively engaged. During the early part of the brief and decisive Chancellorsville campaign Perry's brigade was on duty near Fredericksburg, and on May 1st and 2d engaged in exhausting marching and skirmishing, joining the remainder of the division in time to march to the Furnace at daylight on May 3d. They took a gallant part in the fighting of the 3d and 4th, and General Anderson in his report paid a special tribute to "Brigadier-General Perry and his heroic little band of Floridians, who showed a courage as intrepid as that of any others in their assault upon the enemy in his intrenchments on the 3d, and in their subsequent advance upon Chancellorsville."



In General Perry's report he said: "The conduct of both officers and men of my command through the tiresome marches and continued watching, as well as while engaging the enemy, was such as to merit high praise. The firm and steadfast courage exhibited, especially by the Fifth and Second Florida regiments, in the charge at Chancellorsville, attracted my particular attention." The general specially noted the services of Capt. W. E. McCaslan, Lieut. D. B. Taylor, Lieut. William Scott and Lieut. H. F. Riley; Maj. T. C. Elder and Maj. D. W. Hinkle, staff officers and volunteer aides. The Eighth lost 11 killed and 35 wounded, among the latter Capt. B. F. Whitner and Lieutenants J. M. Nelson and T. S. Armistead. The Second lost 3 killed, including Adj. Waddy F. Butler, and 29 wounded; and the Fifth lost 6 killed and 22 wounded, among the latter Maj. B. F. Davis.

At the battle of Gettysburg the brigade was commanded by Lang of the Eighth, the heroic fighter at Fredericksburg, now promoted to colonel, General Perry being disabled with typhoid fever. The following is the report of the service of the brigade in the battle of Gettysburg, in a letter to General Perry from Colonel Lang:

Bunker Hill, Va., July 19, 1863.

General Perry:

Dear Sir: I avail myself of this favorable opportunity of giving you an account of the part taken by the brigade in the Gettysburg fight on the 2d and 3d of July.

On the morning of the 1st, while marching from Fayetteville to Gettysburg, our brigade being the rear guard of Anderson's division, heavy firing was heard in front and I received orders to pass beyond the wagons and close up on the troops in front. After this the division was posted in the following order, two miles in rear of Gettysburg, viz: Wilcox on the right, then Perry, Wright, Posey and Mahone. We remained in this position until Longstreet's corps arrived on the following morning. Pender and Heth had the day before driven the enemy to his stronghold on the heights back of town, with considerable loss on both sides, our loss being

confined chiefly to Archer's brigade. When Longstreet arrived we were advanced to the front and posted on the right of town, in full view of the enemy's batteries, strongly posted beyond an open field, one mile in our front. While taking this position, Wilcox engaged three or four regiments of the enemy posted in a wood on our right, but, after a fight of ten or fifteen minutes, the Ninth Alabama drove them back, and we received orders to hold our position, without pressing the enemy, until Longstreet could come into position on our right. He came into position and engaged the enemy about 3 o'clock p. m., our line being similar to the one formed in the rear of Fredericksburg after the Chancellorsville fight—that is, Longstreet on the right and Ewell on the left, almost confronting each other and forming nearly a right angle with Hill, in the center. We received orders to conform our lines to Longstreet's movement and advance with him. About 4:30 p. m. Longstreet having advanced to Wilcox, he swung his right forward and advanced. As soon as his left reached my right, I conformed to the movement and advanced at double-quick upon the strongly fortified position in front, exposed to artillery and musketry fire from the start. About half way across the field the enemy had a line of batteries strongly supported by infantry. Our men suffered terribly, but advanced nobly to the charge. We swept over the batteries without once halting, capturing most of the guns and putting the infantry to rout with great loss. Indeed, I do not remember having seen anywhere before the dead lying thicker than where the Federal infantry attempted to take a stand.

Pressing rapidly on after the flying Yankees we arrived behind a small growth of timber at the foot of the heights. Here I called a halt in order to allow the men to catch breath and reform our line before charging a battery and infantry in our front and below the heights. While reforming my line a heavy column was thrown against Wilcox, forcing him back. I held my ground until the enemy had advanced more than 100 yards to my rear and were about to cut off my retreat, when I gave the order to fall back. Unfortunately there was no ground which offered any protection short of the place from which we had advanced, and we were compelled to give up all the ground we had gained. This, however,

was never afterward occupied by the enemy in force, although his pickets reoccupied most of it that night.

In this charge Major Moore and Captain Ballantine were wounded and left on the field, the former seriously, the latter not so badly. Captain Gardner also lost an arm, but got off the field. Our loss in line officers and enlisted men was very severe. Lieutenant Peeler, acting aide-de-camp, acted very gallantly, and was wounded in this day's fight. This charge ended the fighting for the day, the enemy seemingly in no humor for following up his advantage.

On the 3d, General Longstreet bringing sixty pieces of artillery up, and General Hill having fifty more in position, about 3 p. m. they opened a most terrific fire upon the enemy's stronghold with the intention of shelling them out. The enemy soon replied, and for nearly three hours the most terrific cannonading that I ever witnessed was kept up from both sides, until our ammunition was almost exhausted, when the firing slackened. Pickett's division renewed the assault made by us the previous evening. They advanced in beautiful order in three lines, but before they had gone far the wounded and the frightened came running back in large numbers, and it was impossible to tell when the main body came back. During this, Wilcox's brigade and our brigade had been lying under cover, supporting the batteries which were shelling the enemy's works. I had orders to connect with Wilcox's left and move with him. As soon as Pickett's division had retired we were thrown forward, as a forlorn hope I suppose, notwithstanding the repulse of the day before and the repulse of Pickett's whole division not twenty minutes before.

Our two brigades, of about 1,400 men, advanced to the charge nobly. As we neared the point from which we had been repulsed the day before, heavy columns advanced upon both flanks, and our artillery, having exhausted their ammunition, did not fire a shot at them. Being unsupported by an advance upon any other part of the line, and having but one line, the enemy paid his undivided attention to us, and our only safety from utter annihilation was in retreat. The Second Florida being on the left and their color-bearer wounded, they lost their colors and the greater part of their men.

In the retreat the day before, the color-bearer and the

entire color-guard of the Eighth were killed or wounded and their colors were left on the field. Owing to the fact that several colors of other brigades fell back with us, the Eighth did not miss their colors until after it was too late to secure them. In the last charge, and when almost off the field, Capt. Wm. E. McCaslan (acting assistant adjutant-general) was killed. He was a noble and gallant man and rendered me invaluable assistance in the battle.

Since the battles I have had no staff at all except David Wilson. The adjutant of the Eighth has been acting adjutant-general for me. There are now but 22 line officers and 233 enlisted men for duty in the brigade. Our loss has been 455 aggregate, killed, wounded and missing. I think a large number of the missing are men who have been captured unhurt, as there were a large number of men exhausted by the rapidity with which the first charge was made who were unable to keep up on the retreat.

We held our position until the night of the 4th, when we withdrew and marched all night in the rain and over the worst roads I have yet seen. On the 5th we crossed South mountain and continued our march toward Hagerstown, where we arrived on the morning of the 7th. Here we remained until the 10th, when we again moved on, and on the 11th formed line of battle on Salisbury ridge, along Antietam creek, between Funkstown and Williamsport. Here we awaited the enemy's assault until the night of the 14th, when we withdrew and recrossed the Potomac river early next morning. After crossing we rested here until the morning of the 16th, when we moved to this point, where we have been in camp ever since. Where we will go next I cannot venture to predict. Rumors are rife of another crossing into Maryland, but I think it hardly probable.

"We are all looking anxiously for your return. Hoping soon to see you fully restored to health and with us again, I am, General, yours respectfully,

DAVID LANG.

We make the following extract from the letter of an army correspondent, signing himself "A," to The Advertiser and Register.

No man capable of performing his duty can shun the



field in this hour of supreme trial without disgracing himself and his posterity and endangering the cause so dear to every lover of liberty. Instead of abusing the furloughs which have been given them or taking shelter in the Nitre bureau and behind frivolous and unmanly excuses for exemption, every able-bodied man who cannot better serve the cause at home than in the army should esteem it a privilege to come at once to the field without waiting to be called, and thus emulate the example of the brave Floridians, who have sent more men to the war than the number of voters in the whole State.

In my account of the great battle of Gettysburg full justice was not done to Perry's brigade. Its performance was not only creditable but gallant, as is shown by its heavy loss, which in proportion to the number engaged exceeds that sustained by any other brigade in the field. The brigade belongs to Anderson's division, Hill's corps. Wilcox held the right of the division, Mahone the left, Wright the center, Perry (Colonel Lang in command) the right center, and Posey the left center. Wilcox was to advance first, to be followed by the other brigades in their order to the left. It appears, for reasons given in a former communication, that only three brigades became fully engaged, Wilcox's, Perry's and Wright's. Colonel Jayne's Forty-eighth Mississippi, of Posey's brigade, had been thrown forward as skirmishers and lost heavily, supposing that the brigade proper would follow on in support, but for some reason it did not, nor did Mahone's on the left. While marching through a piece of woods to his proper place, on the 2d, Wilcox became engaged with the enemy and soon repulsed him. About 6 p. m., too late to co-operate with McLaws and Hood, though no blame can attach to the brigadiers, the several brigades in the division were ordered to advance to the attack in the order given above. Wilcox moved forward promptly, followed by Lang, who in his turn was followed by Wright. Each brigade fought bravely and desperately, drove the enemy back in its front and ran over several batteries and heaps of slain; but each in its turn was compelled, after almost unparalleled losses, to abandon the enterprise of carrying the impregnable position of the enemy and retrace its steps to the point from whence it had started. Had the attack been made simultaneously along the whole line at the time Longstreet en-

gaged the enemy, or even when the three brigades went in, the historian might have been called on to record a different result.

On the 3d Wright was not engaged, but Wilcox and Lang were ordered to co-operate with Pickett and Pettigrew in the assault on Cemetery hill. The Floridians and Alabamians fought with distinguished courage, as on the previous day, and again forced the enemy to yield to their desperate charges, but for the second time the assault was not made simultaneously, and when position after position had been carried it was found that there were others still, which with their weary and wasted forces it was impossible to storm. First Pickett retired, then Wilcox and Lang, each having suffered frightful losses.

The Second Florida was commanded on the first day by Major Moore, who was wounded and left on the field, as was Captain Ballantine, second in command. On the third day Captain Fleming assumed command, Lieutenant Todd being second in rank. The Fifth Florida was commanded by Captain Gardner, who lost an arm on the second day, when the command devolved on Captain Hollyman. The Eighth was commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel Baya. These three regiments made up the brigade, which was under Colonel Lang of the Eighth Florida, who handled it skillfully and bravely, in the absence of General Perry.

To the testimonials to the valor of the Florida brigade at Gettysburg is added the following tribute from their gallant division commander. Emanating from the high source that it does, it should be preserved, a proud page in the history of Florida's soldiers:

Headquarters Anderson's Division,

Third Army Corps, August 6, 1863.

To the Editor of the Enquirer:

Gentlemen: In the letter which I addressed to you a few days ago, correcting the statements of P. W. A., the correspondent of the Savannah Republican, I omitted to take notice of the following sentence: "Perry's brigade advanced a short distance, but did not become fully engaged." This is quite as incorrect as the other statements which I have contradicted. Perry's brigade, under the command of Col. David Lang, advanced as bravely,

as perseveringly, and as far as any troops could have done in the same situation. They were hotly engaged, suffered heavier in loss in killed and wounded, in proportion to their numbers, than any brigade in the army, and did not retire until compelled, like all the others, to do so by the superior force of the enemy and the strength of his position. By giving this communication a place in your columns you will render an act of justice to brave men, whose honor and reputation I take pleasure in defending against the incorrectness of the statement and the inferences which might be drawn from any omission to notice it. I am, very respectfully, your obedient servant,

R. H. ANDERSON, Major-General.

We hope this brigade, now a small but Spartan band, will not be allowed to lose its identity as Florida troops, but that its decimated ranks will be filled up by the new levies about to be raised in that State, and that volunteers will hasten to join this brigade which has done such faithful service in the army of Northern Virginia, and won a name and fame for the gallant little State of Florida.

In the Gettysburg fight the Fifth Florida lost 17 killed and 76 wounded; among the killed Capt. John Frink and Lieut. J. A. Jenkins and J. C. Blake; among the wounded Captains William Bailey and R. N. Gardner, Lieutenants G. L. Odum, J. A. Shaw and George Walker. The Second lost 11 killed and 70 wounded. The casualties of the Eighth were 5 killed and 65 wounded. Among the wounded were Captains T. R. Love, J. Mizell and T. B. Livingston; Lieutenants H. Bruce, W. W. Wilson, E. J. Dismukes, John Malone, F. M. Bryan and T. W. Givens.

At the battle of Bristoe Station, October 14, 1863, the brigade was conspicuously engaged, losing a considerable number killed and wounded; among the latter Lieut.-Col. William Baya, commanding the Eighth. and Sergeant-Major Arnou of the same regiment.

In the campaign of the Wilderness, May, 1864, the Florida brigade, already greatly reduced in numbers, lost as many as 250 men. Among the wounded was General

Perry, and among the killed Lieut. Raymond Jenckes Reed, adjutant of the Second, a gallant young officer, son of Hon. R. R. Reed, one of the territorial governors of Florida. His mother, Martha M. Reed, as matron of the Florida hospital at Richmond, gave herself with rare devotion to the care of the sick and wounded soldiers of the Confederacy. General Perry's wounds compelled him to retire from service, and upon the arrival of Finegan's Florida brigade the remainder of Perry's brigade was consolidated with that command.

Early in May, 1864, Gen. Patton Anderson, commanding district of Florida, received an order from the war department to send "a good brigade of infantry" to Richmond with all possible expedition. Gen. Joseph Finegan was ordered to proceed immediately to Virginia with his brigade, consisting of First battalion, Lieut.-Col. Charles Hopkins; Second battalion, Lieut.-Col. Theodore Brevard; Fourth battalion, Lieutenant-Colonel McClellan; and Sixth battalion, Lieut.-Col. John M. Martin. The brigade arrived at Richmond May 25, 1864, and joined Anderson's division, now under Mahone, of Hill's corps, at Hanover Junction, on the 28th of May. On June 8th the troops were organized in three regiments as follows: The First Florida battalion, six companies, and the companies of Captains Mays, Stewart, Clarke and Powers of the Second battalion, formed the Tenth regiment, Colonel Hopkins commanding. The Fourth Florida battalion, seven companies, the companies of Captains Ochus and Robinson of the Second battalion, and Captain Cullen's unattached company, formed the Eleventh regiment, Col. Theodore Brevard commanding. The Sixth Florida battalion, seven companies, and the three independent companies of Capts. J. C. Eichelberger, McNeill and Reynolds, formed the Ninth regiment, Colonel Martin commanding. The seven companies that formed the Sixth battalion before organizing as such had served as independent volunteer companies in different parts of the State.



They were commanded by Captains Chambers, Davis, John W. Pearson, Samuel Hope, James Tucker, J. C. Dupree and S. M. G. Gary. At the battle of Olustee these companies were formed into a battalion and commanded by Maj. Pickens B. Bird. In concentrating the troops between Waldo and Jacksonville after the battle of Olustee, Lieutenant-Colonel Martin was placed in command of the battalion.

These three regiments were united with the Second, Fifth and Eighth, lately forming Perry's brigade, to constitute the brigade of General Finegan. The average effective strength of the regiments was about 200 men. The brigade went at once into active service. After a march of 30 miles they halted before Deep Bottom on the line before Richmond, where, after digging trenches, finding them not tenable, they fell back one mile. There was skirmishing on May 31st, the enemy shelling our lines. Falling back to Gaines' farm the brigade intrenched as a reserve.

On the morning of the 3d of June the Florida brigade recaptured the breastworks that had been temporarily lost by Breckinridge's command, and brilliantly repulsed two assaults of the enemy. In the battle of Cold Harbor, the Ninth lost 100 men killed and wounded. Among the killed were Maj. Pickens B. Bird, Captain Reynolds, Lieutenant Lane; and Adjutant Owens, Captain Tucker and Lieut. R. D. Harrison were severely wounded.

On this line the enemy encroached with their picket-line and sharpshooters and gradually strengthened themselves until General Finegan ordered the old Second, Fifth and Eighth, in all about 200 men effective, to drive out the sharpshooters. The men started out bravely, but aware that many would never return. Capt. Seton Fleming, commanding the Second, fell dead thirty or forty yards in front of the works. He was a soldier of chivalric bravery and loved by his men, and his memory will be revered while there are brave true hearts to keep

bright the sacred records of a glorious past. After Cold Harbor, they marched to Malvern hill, thence made a forced march of twenty-five miles to Petersburg, where the brigade was placed in the front line of works and were for three days exposed to a terrific fire of artillery. On the 23d of June they moved from the breastworks to make a flank movement, under a heavy fire of shell, grape and canister, and marched down the Weldon railroad, 6 miles below, and drove back the enemy who were tearing up the road. On the 30th of June the battle of Ream's Station was fought. The Florida troops marched 10 miles, reached the scene of action at daybreak and were placed in line of battle, where they charged the enemy, driving him back in a running fire of 4 miles, capturing 7 pieces of artillery, many horses, a few prisoners, and 1,300 negroes, our only casualty being a few slightly wounded. In the morning of the 21st of August the Florida brigade advanced within 100 yards of the Federal breastworks on the Weldon railroad, where they were strongly intrenched, but, under their destructive fire, was compelled to fall back. Repeated charges were made to dislodge the enemy, resulting in defeat. Our loss in killed and wounded was very severe. Capt. J. W. Pearson, of the Ninth, was severely wounded. He died, on his way home, at Augusta, Ga. Here also fell the gallant Col. Thompson B. Lamar, of the Fifth.

On the 7th of December, 1864, the Florida brigade began a forced march of 50 miles, reaching the enemy's rear near Belfield the third day, and engaged in skirmishing, few being killed or wounded. The enemy, who had been on a raid, made his escape. In this movement Hill's entire corps was engaged against 20,000 Federals, who were compelled to retreat. The brigade returned to camp with sore feet, having marched over frozen roads and through snow and sleet over 100 miles.

Early in February, 1865, Mahone's division reinforced General Gordon, whose corps attacked the enemy near

Hatcher's run, opposing the Federal attempt to extend their line of battle. In this engagement, S. W. Crowson of the Ninth was wounded; Colonel Scott of the Tenth received a serious wound, resulting in amputation of his arm; Captain Floyd of the Eleventh Florida was killed. The brigade was now ordered to winter quarters, but before reaching them received orders to return, as the enemy was making demonstrations for an attack upon General Gordon south of Hatcher's run. Moving rapidly to his assistance they found that he had engaged the enemy. As brigade after brigade came up they formed a line of battle, with only 3,500 effective men, under General Finegan; then charged the enemy, who fled in confusion, until night ended the battle.

On the morning of the 2d of April, General Lee's lines were broken and the retreat began. On the 6th the enemy pressed upon us in the rear and by a flank movement other portions of the army pressed us on another road. Various lines of battle were formed, and the Fifth, Eighth and Eleventh Florida regiments, commanded by Gen. Theodore Brevard, were sent out as skirmishers and captured by General Custer's cavalry force. The remainder of the Florida brigade crossed High bridge and marched to Farmville. The Ninth Florida, being crowded by the enemy, halted and fortified for an attack, and picket-fighting began. The enemy then made a charge but were repulsed. Massing their forces in a ravine that ran to the left of the Confederate command, their movement was discovered by General Sorrel, who by a gallant charge captured 900 prisoners, 200 others having been captured during the engagement. This was the last battle. Leaving Farmville the army reached Appomattox Court House.

Capt. L. M. G. Gary, of Company G, remained with the Ninth until late in the fall, engaging in all the battles fought to that time. Being appointed a staff officer of his brother, Gen. M. W. Gary, he was engaged with that

command until the surrender, at which time General Gary, sheathing his sword, turned over his fine command to Colonel Gary, made his way through picket lines and warlike cordon and safely reached Charlotte, N. C., at that time the headquarters of the Southern Confederacy.

The Tenth regiment Florida infantry had its inception early in the spring of 1861, when the tocsin of war sounded throughout the land and the patriotic sons of Florida were called to arms in defense of the State. Capt. Charles F. Hopkins, who commanded the Marion artillery at St. Augustine, applied for and received a commission to raise a battalion of infantry, the first organized in the State. He soon enlisted six companies, commanded by Captains Scott, Frink, Richard, Buckman and Kendrick. They were mustered into the Confederate army and assigned to duty at Fernandina under command of Lieutenant-Colonel Hopkins, and there remained until the evacuation of that place by our forces in the spring of 1862. The First battalion constituted a part of General Finegan's brigade, and was engaged in all the operations of our troops against the Federals during their occupation of Jacksonville with superior forces, until the brigade was ordered to the support of the army of Virginia. On the arrival of the brigade at Richmond a change was made in the battalions as has been noted, and the First Florida battalion, with the companies of Captains Mays, Stewart, Clarke and Powers of the Second battalion (Brevard's) constituted the Tenth regiment, Colonel Hopkins commanding. They were soon engaged in the desperate fights to prevent Grant's army from reaching Richmond. Early in June they participated in recapturing the breastworks at Cold Harbor, sustaining a heavy loss in killed and wounded; fought gallantly at Ream's Station on the 30th, and on the Weldon railroad, August 2d, charged within 100 yards of the Federal breastworks, but were compelled to fall back with a heavy



loss in killed and wounded. At Belfield, and at Hatcher's run, February 4, 1865, they did gallant service.

The Eleventh Florida regiment originated in a battalion organized by Theodore W. Brevard, of Tallahassee, afterward prominently identified with the career of the regiment. In June, 1860, Mr. Brevard was made adjutant and inspector-general for the State; but when war became a certainty he resigned that office to enter active service, feeling that "he was too young a man to hold a safe and easy position while others were in peril." He therefore obtained a commission to raise a company of volunteers early in the spring of 1861. This company was one of those that formed the Second Florida regiment. The companies constituting the Second were ordered to Fernandina and drilled until thoroughly versed in military tactics. Being the first regiment that was ordered from the State to Virginia it was known as the "Representative regiment" of Florida.

Receiving a commission to raise a battalion of partisan rangers, Captain Brevard returned to Florida for that purpose in the summer of 1862. Six companies forming the Second battalion soon enlisted, commanded by Captains Bird, Mays, Stewart, Westcott, Robinson and Ochus, under command of Lieut.-Col. Theodore Brevard. The battalion was placed under General Finegan's command and did effective work in south and east Florida, and was ordered to Virginia in May, 1864, when the Fourth Florida battalion, seven companies, the companies of Captains Ochus and Robinson of the Second Florida battalion (Brevard's) and Captain Cullen's unattached company of Florida volunteers, were assigned to the Eleventh regiment, Col. Theodore Brevard commanding.

The Eleventh took a gallant part in all the desperate fighting around Richmond and Petersburg, and were under fire nearly all the time after reaching Richmond. It was during the terrible conflict on the Weldon railroad that Colonel Brevard received a heavy blow in the loss of

his heroic young brother, Lieut. Mays Brevard, who fell while gallantly leading his company in a charge on the enemy's breastworks—the command to which he had been that day assigned. The noble daring of this gallant regiment was conspicuous in every battle. It has left a proud name in the military annals of the State.

Upon the resignation of General Finegan, Colonel Brevard was made brigadier-general, and he acted as such until the 6th of April, 1865, when, while leading the Fifth, Eighth and Eleventh Florida to break up a flank movement of the enemy, the command was captured by General Custer's cavalry. With a large number of prisoners General Brevard was sent to Washington and afterward to Johnson's island, where he was detained a prisoner until the latter part of August, 1865, five months after the surrender.

For want of historical data we are unable to follow the Florida consolidated brigade through all the details of its Virginia campaigns, which terminated with the surrender by General Lee, but in justice we must add that for courage and heroic endurance there can be found no prouder record in all the annals of the war.

## CHAPTER VIII.

FLORIDA TROOPS IN THE WESTERN ARMY—THE FIRST INFANTRY—THIRD INFANTRY—FOURTH INFANTRY—STOVALL'S BRIGADE AT CHICKAMAUGA—FIRST CAVALRY—SIXTH INFANTRY—SEVENTH INFANTRY—TRIGG'S BRIGADE AT CHICKAMAUGA—FINLEY'S BRIGADE.

THE ten companies of the First Florida regiment of infantry were commanded by Captains A. Perry Amaker, Tallahassee; Wm. E. Cropp, Apalachicola; B. W. Powell, Micanopy; R. B. Hilton, Tallahassee; H. Hyer Baker, Jackson county; Richard Bradford, Madison county; John H. Gee, Gadsden county; T. Jeff Myers, Gainesville; Thompson B. Lamar, Jefferson county; A. H. Wright, Pensacola.

The regiment was mustered into the Confederate States service at Chattahoochee arsenal April 5, 1861, electing for field officers James Patton Anderson, of Jefferson county, colonel; Wm. H. Beard, of Tallahassee, lieutenant-colonel, and Thaddeus A. McDonell, of Gainesville, major. They were ordered to proceed to Pensacola, and on the 12th of April reached that place and reported to General Bragg. Early in the fall of 1861, they were engaged in the battle on Santa Rosa Island, in which Capt Richard Bradford was killed. In the spring of 1862, Colonel Anderson was promoted to brigadier-general. The regiment having served one year at Pensacola, a sufficient number re-enlisted to organize six companies. General Anderson being assigned to the command of a brigade of infantry in the division of General Ruggles, then at Corinth, Miss., the re-enlisted battalion was added to it and was engaged in the battle of Shiloh. In his report of that

battle General Anderson said: "Maj. T. A. McDonell, commanding the Florida battalion, was borne wounded from the field before the action had fairly begun. The command devolved upon Capt. W. G. Poole, who bore himself most gallantly throughout the two days' conflict. The skill with which he handled his command reflected the highest credit upon him as an officer, while the desperation with which his troops fought brings new luster to the arms of the State they represented, and paints imperishable fame upon the colors they so proudly bore." Captain Poole reported that Lieut. L. M. Anderson, commanding Company A, was shot in the forehead and instantly killed, and his successor, Lieut. E. C. Stevens, was soon severely wounded. Capt. T. S. Means, Lieuts. J. T. Miller, Tucker, and O. P. Hull were wounded, the last mortally.

The battalion was next in battle at Farmington, during the siege of Corinth, and then, consolidated with a battalion under William Miller, the united command was known as the First regiment, Col. William Miller commanding. The regiment was assigned to John C. Brown's brigade, with the Third Louisiana and Forty-first Mississippi, for the Kentucky campaign, in the division of Patton Anderson. In the fierce assault at Perryville General Brown was wounded and Colonel Miller took command of the brigade. The regiment lost heavily in this battle, and before the next great conflict it was consolidated with the Third. It was attached to Preston's brigade, then to Stovall's, and finally to Finley's brigade.

The Third regiment Florida infantry was organized in August, 1861, and was assigned to service in the State until May, 1862, when it was ordered to the army in northern Mississippi. Many of the companies had re-enlisted for the war and an election was had of officers to serve permanently, at Midway, Gadsden county, where they were in camp about three weeks.

The officers elected and appointed were as follows:



W. S. Dilworth, colonel; L. A. Church, lieutenant-colonel; E. Mashburn, major; Captain Hickman, quartermaster; Capt. D. Lewes, commissary; Dr. Carn, surgeon; Dr. M. G. Jordan, assistant surgeon; H. Steele, adjutant; C. H. Stebbins, sergeant-major; P. E. Lowe, commissary-sergeant; Theodore Bridier, ordnance-sergeant; Wm. P. Moseley, quartermaster-sergeant; B. Frank Moseley, hospital-sergeant; Captains:—Company A, J. B. Oliveros; B, J. L. Phillips; C, Walter Saxon; D, D. L. Frierson; E, D. B. Bird; F, A. Drysdale; G, Thomas Langford; H, M. H. Strain; I, C. H. Ross; K, William Parker.

In June the regiment marched to the Chattahoochee, went up the river in boats to Columbus and thence to Montgomery, and after a short detention back to Mobile, where the orders to join General Bragg's army in Mississippi were countermanded and they were put on duty to guard the city. When General Bragg's army was transferred from Mississippi to east Tennessee preparatory to an onward movement toward the Ohio river, the Third regiment was transferred to Chattanooga early in August, 1862, and camped near the foot of Lookout mountain, and with the First Florida was attached to the brigade of Gen. John C. Brown in Gen. Patton Anderson's division. With the army the Florida regiments marched across the Cumberland mountains into middle Tennessee and thence northward into Kentucky. After a few days' delay they proceeded toward Louisville, camping at different points, part of the time a few miles from Bardstown, the most northern point reached. On the 8th of October, at Perryville, the two regiments received their terrific baptism of fire and blood, losing heavily. Capt. D. B. Bird commanded the regiment during the greater part of the day, and late in the afternoon fell mortally wounded. He had commanded the regiment most of the time after it left Chattanooga and was endeared to the men by his constant attention to their wants and his never-failing kindness. Courageous to a fault, prompt in action, he was

loved and respected by all, and his death cast a gloom over the entire command.

In subsequent operations the regiment was distinguished for gallantry and dauntless heroism. At the battle of Chickamauga, consolidated with the First Florida regiment, the heroic conduct of the command is recorded in the report of Col. Wm. Dilworth. Subsequently the history of the First and Third was that of the Florida brigade until the surrender at Greensboro. "Had anyone told that the regiment would never see Florida again, and that the few who would be so fortunate as to return would come back one by one after years of toil and suffering, he would have been regarded as a faithless prophet of evil. One by one they fell by the wayside. Some lie buried by Georgia streams, some on the hillsides of Alabama, some in the valley of Tennessee, some on the bloody fields of Kentucky, some under the blue skies of Mississippi; some survived and struggled on until they reached the Carolinas; while a few came back to the old homestead and died in the arms of their loved ones. There is many a vacant space in the old lines; some fell victims to disease in camp and hospital; some offered their lives on the battlefield, and others pined away in the prisons of the North. Many unnamed and now sunken mounds cover brave hearts who marched shoulder to shoulder firm in the resolve to be faithful unto death."

The Fourth regiment was organized and mustered into the Confederate army in June, 1861. The companies, commanded by Captains Gee, Hunter, Dial, Sheffield, McGehee, Lane, Lesley, Hunt, Barnes, and Fletcher, were assigned to duty in different points in the State, and were actively engaged until ordered to the Western army. On the 1st of May, 1862, the Fourth was reorganized with J. P. Hunt, colonel; W. L. L. Bowen, lieutenant-colonel; Edward Badger, major; and Dr. C. C. Burke, adjutant. Three weeks later they were ordered to Corinth, Miss. On reaching Mobile the order was countermanded,

and they were kept on provost guard until July, when they were ordered to west Florida to check a raid from Pensacola. Thence they were ordered to Chattanooga, Tenn., and from there in October to Murfreesboro.

Colonel Hunt died at Chattanooga and Lieutenant-Colonel Bowen was promoted colonel; Major Badger, lieutenant-colonel, and Capt. John T. Lesley, major. On the 5th of November, under command of General Forrest (Gen. John T. Morgan commanding the cavalry and Colonel Palmer, of the Eighteenth Tennessee, commanding the infantry), they advanced on Nashville, but found that the Federals had been reinforced the night before by General Rosecrans. They returned to Murfreesboro and remained in camp until late in December, 1862. On the morning of the 28th they were ordered to move into line of battle on the Lebanon pike, and on the afternoon of that day the First, Third and Fourth Florida regiments were brigaded under Gen. William Preston.

This brigade and Palmer's were the last of Breckinridge's command transferred to the west side of Stone's river on the 31st, and made the final unsuccessful assault upon the Federal center, where hundreds of brave men had already fallen. The First and Third Florida, under Colonel Miller, gained the cedar brake so prominent in the action in that part of the field, and the Fourth, under Colonel Bowen, advanced as far, but with much heavier loss. Ordered back to the east side of the river they fought bravely in the attack made by Breckinridge on January 2d. On the 31st the Fourth lost 55 in killed and wounded, and captured 250 rifles from the enemy. On the 2d, it was the last regiment to leave the field, and it made a gallant fight to save the brigade battery, sustaining heavy loss. First-Lieut. S. D. Harris, commanding Company I, distinguished for dauntless bravery, was mortally wounded and left on the field. Sergt. L. N. Miller and two other color-bearers were shot down. Colonel Miller and Adjt. C. C. Burke were also among the wounded. The First and Third, with a

strength of 531, lost at Murfreesboro 138 killed, wounded and missing. The Fourth, 458 strong, lost 163 killed and wounded, and 31 missing.

In this battle the battery of Capt. F. H. Robertson, claimed by both Alabama and Florida, was the center of a brisk fight on December 30th, in which several of the artillerymen were wounded and an ammunition chest exploded. The battery took a prominent part during the remainder of the conflict.

In May, 1863, the brigade, under Gen. M. A. Stovall, and including the Forty-seventh Georgia, was transferred to Mississippi, under General Johnston, to relieve Vicksburg. Reaching the Big Black river the day before Vicksburg surrendered, next morning the army retreated to Jackson, where General Johnston reported that on the 12th of July "a party of skirmishers of the First, Third and Fourth Florida, Forty-seventh Georgia and Cobb's battery, struck the enemy's flank, and captured 200 prisoners, and colors of the Twenty-eighth, Forty-first, and Fifty-third Illinois regiments."

On August 26, 1863, Stovall's brigade was ordered to Chattanooga, thence to Lafayette, Ga., where they remained until September 15th. Next day they marched to Glass' mill, and on the 19th Breckinridge's division, to which the brigade was attached, took position south of Lee & Gordon's mill, leaving Colonel Dilworth to skirmish with the enemy. On the night of the 19th the division crossed the Chickamauga and took position on the right of Bragg's army. In Brigadier-General Stovall's report of the service of his brigade in the battle of Chickamauga, he makes special mention of the gallantry of the Florida troops under his command; the First and Third infantry commanded by Col. W. S. Dilworth, and the Fourth infantry commanded by Col. W. L. L. Bowen. At sunrise, September 20th, when Stovall formed his line of battle, his brigade being in the center of the division, and skirmishers were deployed, Lieut.-Col. Edward Badger,



of the Fourth Florida regiment, was selected to command them, and subsequently when orders were received to advance the line thus deployed, and for a regiment to be thrown forward in support, the Fourth Florida was chosen for that duty. The part taken by the Florida regiments is described in the reports of the colonels commanding.

Colonel Dilworth wrote: "On the morning of the 19th inst. I was left with my regiment and a section of Cobb's battery at Glass' mill, with instructions from Major-General Breckinridge to dispose of my command so as to repel any attack of the enemy, and remain until I should be relieved. During the afternoon a force of cavalry and infantry appeared across the creek, threw out a line of skirmishers and began to advance, but finding us ready to oppose them, they fell back at the first fire of our skirmishers, and made no further demonstrations. At 9 p. m. I received an order from Major-General Breckinridge to join the division, so I left the position in charge of a detachment of Wharton's cavalry, which had just come up, and hastened on with my command. Unfortunately, soon after leaving the main Chattanooga road the guide lost his way, and with my best exertions I was unable to reach the division until about 8 o'clock the next morning, after marching constantly all night, a distance of not less than 18 miles. I, however, arrived just in time to take my position as the brigade was being formed in line of battle. A little before 10 o'clock the order was given to advance. My regiment was on the right of the brigade, and Adams' brigade was on my right. We pushed forward through the woods and were in a few minutes engaged. As we charged, the enemy fell back through the woods and an open field beyond, leaving three brass pieces in the front of the right wing of my regiment and many prisoners to fall into our hands. One of these pieces I sent to the rear, but judging it to be imprudent to withdraw many men from the ranks, as the guns were already safe, I left them on the field and they were removed subsequently

by Adams' brigade, which came up a little after us.

"I was then ordered to take a new position to thwart an anticipated flank movement of the enemy from the left, rendered practicable by the advance of our division. This movement was not attempted, and soon the whole brigade was formed on the prolongation of my line, throwing me on the extreme left. In a few minutes we were ordered to move forward and a line of skirmishers was thrown out and they immediately opened a brisk fire.

"It became apparent that the right of the enemy extended considerably beyond my left, and, as there was no support for my left, I feared that the enemy would turn my flank; but the order to advance was positive, and we advanced up the hill at a double-quick, under a galling fire from the enemy, who was fighting behind some hastily constructed breastworks. The colors were not more than a dozen steps from the enemy, and in another minute we would have driven them from their works, but the regiments to my right were already falling back and, as I had anticipated, the enemy was getting in my rear and pouring a destructive fire upon my left flank. I therefore gave the order to fall back, and, by obliquing to the left, I withdrew the regiment in safety and rallied it at the foot of the hill. Lieut. J. Cabell Breckinridge, of Major-General Breckinridge's staff, was here of essential service to me. Riding fearlessly along where the balls fell thickly about him, he cheered the men by his noble example and rallied them by his encouraging words.

"My loss in the charge was very heavy. Samuel Neeley, the color-bearer, fell near the breastworks and Robert McKay, of the color-guard, close to his side, both severely wounded, and 4 of the color company were left dead on the field. The infirmiry detail did its duty faithfully and by removing the wounded as they fell prevented the enemy from capturing them. The brigade was now withdrawn and not brought into action again until

nearly sundown, affording the weary men an opportunity to enjoy a few hours' rest.

"About sundown the brigade was formed for another charge; and, after being exposed to an artillery fire for some time, in which I incurred no loss, we were moved forward and swept through the woods and over the breastworks we had failed to take in the morning, driving the routed enemy across the Chattanooga road. Here our line was halted and, after loud and prolonged cheers at the glorious success of the day, I stacked arms at the edge of the woods and bivouacked for the night. I lost from the regiment 9 killed, 70 wounded and 13 missing, making a total of 92 out of 273 that I carried into the fight. Two officers were slightly wounded and one is missing. The provost guard under Lieut. J. G. Butler, Company A, Third Florida, was formed on the right of my regiment during the greater part of the day. They volunteered to go out as skirmishers early in the morning, much to the relief of my weary men, and in every place they served they did their duty faithfully and efficiently.

"My field officers, Maj. G. A. Ball, First Florida, and Capt. C. H. Ross, Company I, Third Florida, and my adjutant, C. H. Stebbins, Third Florida, were constantly by me and assisted me greatly. Captain Whitehead and Lieutenant Hanson of Brigadier-General Stovall's staff afforded much encouragement to the men by their fearless courage and cheering words. There are many others who deserve special notice, among them Corp. C. P. Ulmer, Company H, Third Florida, of the color-guard, who seized the colors when they fell from the hands of the color-bearer while under a heavy fire, and bore them bravely through the rest of the contest. I regret that I cannot enumerate all the deeds of courage that came under my observation during the day; for notwithstanding the long march, the loss of rest and want of food, there were few who skulked from the fight. All seemed resolved to do their best to check the advance of the invader."

Col. W. L. L. Bowen's report is as follows: "Early in the morning (September 20th) we were moved to the front and formed in line of battle facing due west. A line of skirmishers was deployed and my regiment thrown forward to support it, with orders to advance and develop the position and strength of the enemy in our front. Soon the brigade advanced and I moved my regiment by the left flank to its position in line, left of the brigade. We very soon encountered a heavy line of skirmishers and drove them back, suffering a small loss and capturing a number of prisoners. Just at this time the regiment on our right moved off by the right flank, leaving us somewhat detached from the brigade, but I continued to advance in order to clear the strip of woods on our left of the enemy's sharpshooters and prevent their firing on our rear and flank, while we would otherwise have occupied a position in the open field with no enemy in our immediate front. After emerging from the woods and advancing a little beyond the main Chattanooga road, I found that I was considerably in advance and to the left of the brigade.

"Helm's brigade, falling back from my left, abandoned a piece of captured artillery, which Company A, Lieutenant Owens commanding—detached from my regiment—rescued and carried off the field. This left my regiment exposed to a heavy fire of grape and canister and I moved it by the right flank to join the rest of the brigade, but at the instance of Major Graves, chief of artillery, Breckinridge's division, I went to the support of a battery a little in our front. Here I was notified to join the brigade, after which we formed line of battle perpendicular to the Chattanooga road and to our former line, facing to the south, the First and Third Florida regiments on my left and the Sixtieth North Carolina and Forty-seventh Georgia respectively, on my right. With this disposition we advanced against a strong position and heavy force of the enemy until we arrived in the edge of an open field, where we halted and opened fire. The enemy poured a concen-



trated and effective fire upon us for some time; and at length, a support failing to come up in due time, we were forced to yield ground and retire to a more secure position. We were then relieved by fresh troops and rested until the afternoon, when we moved forward to support a line then engaged, and formed our line in the edge of a wood facing northwest, and about 5 o'clock p. m. moved forward swinging around to the left until we faced due west. The enemy was dislodged from his fortified position and our whole line charged gallantly over his works and rushed forward with a triumphant and deafening shout, adding confusion to the complete rout of the enemy and rescuing the whole of the previously contested field. Our line ceased to pursue them beyond the Chattanooga road and rested on it for the night. In this last charge the regiment captured one fine piece of artillery and a number of prisoners, and the next morning secured a quantity of small-arms.

“My loss during the day was 9 killed, 67 wounded and 11 missing. The number of prisoners captured I estimated at not less than 100, 2 pieces of artillery and a quantity of small arms, blankets, etc. Lieutenant-Colonel Badger and acting adjutant Lieut. A. S. Pope are both worthy of complimentary mention for gallantry on the field. In the absence of Major Lash, who was detained on other duty, Captain Gorman acted major and rendered efficient service. The whole command, officers and men, were distinguished for their gallantry and good conduct during the action.”

At the battle of Missionary Ridge, of the 172 men engaged of the Fourth, all were killed, wounded or captured but 18. At Dalton, on the 23d of February, 1864, the regiment was consolidated with the First Florida dismounted cavalry, which had lost all its field officers, and of 200 men engaged only 33 effectives were left. The consolidated regiment participated in all the gallant career of the Florida brigade, until the surrender at Greensboro.

June 9, 1862, at the Chattahoochee river, Fla., the Fourth regiment was composed of 926 men and 47 officers. April 26, 1865, it surrendered 23 men.

The First regiment Florida cavalry was composed of companies commanded by Captains Haddock, Roberts, Coxe, Cone, Summerlin, Clarke, Hughes, Footman, Hull, Harvey and Cobb, mustered in at different times and places from the 12th of May to the 1st of July, 1861.

About the middle of August the regiment was stationed at Camp Davis, 6 miles south of Tallahassee, in camp of instruction. Its officers were W. G. M. Davis, colonel; George Troup Maxwell, lieutenant-colonel, and William T. Stockton, major. In the spring of 1862 they were ordered to Chattanooga, where Colonel Davis resigned and Lieutenant-Colonel Maxwell became colonel, Major Stockton, lieutenant-colonel, and Captain Footman, acting major. Seven of the companies voluntarily dismounted on leaving Florida and went through the war as infantry. The three companies that remained mounted were Company A, Captain Roberts, afterward Capt. M. I. Coxe; Company E, Captain Cone, and Company F, Captain Footman. They served as scouts under Captain Footman until April, 1863, when being dismounted they joined the other seven companies in Gen. Robert C. Trigg's brigade, formerly commanded by Gen. William Preston. The mounted battalion participated in the battle of Richmond, Ky., August 30, 1862, and the seven dismounted companies took part in the battle of Perryville, October 8th, of the same year.

In the Chickamauga campaign the regiment rendered efficient service under Col. Troup Maxwell in Trigg's brigade and subsequently was identified with the record of the Florida brigade until the close of the war.

The Sixth regiment Florida infantry was organized at Chattahoochee, Fla., in March, 1862, as State troops. The field officers were Col. J. J. Finley, Lieut.-Col. Angus McLean and Maj. Daniel Kenan. The companies com-

posing the regiment were commanded by Captains H. B. Grace, L. Y. Finley, Hagan, McMillan, Basseth, Attaway, S. B. Love, R. H. Davidson, Evans and McLean. Soon after the organization of the regiment it was transferred to the service of the Confederate States. Before this was effected Colonel Finley was assigned by the governor of the State to the command of the troops stationed on the river from Chattahoochee to Apalachicola, but very soon after the organization of the regiment it was ordered to report to Maj.-Gen. E. Kirby Smith at Knoxville, Tenn. Upon its arrival at Chattanooga it was ordered to report temporarily to General Leadbetter, who had planned an expedition across the Tennessee river at Shell mound, but this expedition being abandoned, the Sixth proceeded to Knoxville and remained there until General Smith was ordered to move into Kentucky. During the battle of Richmond, Ky., the Sixth regiment was on a detached expedition to Williamsburg, Ky., to break up and prevent the reported organization of a Federal regiment of Kentuckians. On their return from this duty the Sixth and Seventh Florida regiments, with a section of artillery, under command of Colonel Finley, rejoined the army. From Lexington, the Sixth, with a large portion of General Bragg's army, was ordered to Frankfort, Ky., where it remained until General Smith made his forced march to form a junction with Bragg. After General Smith returned to Knoxville, Tenn., with his army, Colonel Finley was assigned to the command of the troops that were left at Cumberland Gap. The Sixth Florida remained at the Gap until Colonel Finley was relieved by General Gracie, and was then ordered to report to General Smith at Knoxville, where the army went into winter quarters in 1862-63. In the summer of 1863 General Smith's command formed a junction with General Bragg at Tullahoma, Tenn., where a battle was expected. After Bragg's retreat General Smith returned to Knoxville with his command. In the battle of Chick-

amauga the Sixth Florida won for itself a proud name, and at Missionary Ridge it did gallant duty under General Bate. After that the record is covered by the account of Finley's brigade. Capt. R. H. M. Davidson, of the Sixth, for distinguished gallantry was promoted to lieutenant-colonel late in the war, and during one of the battles of the brigade received a wound which disabled him for some time.

The companies constituting the Seventh regiment Florida infantry were commanded by Captains York, of Bradford county; Dudley, of Alachua and Marion; Vallandigham, of Alachua; N. S. Blount, of Polk; Sloan, of Sumter; Robert Bullock, of Marion; Wade Eichelberger, of Marion; Moseley, of Putnam; Gettes, of Hillsboro, and Smith, of Monroe county. They were organized into a regiment and mustered into the Confederate army at Gainesville, Fla., in April, 1862, electing for their field officers Col. Madison S. Perry, Lieut.-Col. Robert Bullock, and Maj. Tillman Ingram. Before their regimental organization they had served as independent volunteer companies at different important points in the State, principally at Smyrna and Tampa. At Smyrna the commands of Captains Bullock, Eichelberger and others engaged the enemy's gunboats, preventing the landing of forces for the purpose of destroying the arms, ammunition and other supplies that had been brought in by blockade runners, and by this timely action they secured superior equipment for their commands. In June, 1862, the regiment was ordered to the Western army, and very soon after their arrival at Graham's ferry on the Tennessee river were engaged with the enemy on the opposite side of the river. The Seventh, like the Sixth, was subsequently employed in skirmishing and picket duty at Loudon and Knoxville, and in the Kentucky campaign under Gen. Kirby Smith. After the retreat they remained at Cumberland Gap until December. Colonel Perry resigning command, Lieutenant-Colonel Bullock was promoted to colonel, Major Ingram



to lieutenant-colonel and Capt. N. S. Blount, major. The regiment at Knoxville, and during the winter of 1862-63, was engaged in guarding bridges on the East Tennessee & Virginia railroad. In the summer of 1863 the regiment moved to Tullahoma, and returning to Knoxville remained there until fall. The Seventh was ordered to West Virginia to guard the salt works, and from that point to join the army soon to be concentrated at Chickamauga. After the brilliant victory at Chickamauga, in which they won distinction, they engaged in the siege of Chattanooga and then became identified with the record of Finley's brigade.

Col. R. C. Trigg's brigade, consisting of the First Florida dismounted cavalry, Sixth and Seventh infantry and one Virginia regiment, and forming part of the division of Brig.-Gen. William Preston, Buckner's corps, crossed the Chickamauga river at early dawn, September 19, 1863, and formed line of battle near Hunt's house on the prolongation of Brigadier-General Bate's line. While occupying this position the enemy threw shot and shell into the lines from a battery on the right. In this engagement the Sixth lost 1 lieutenant, 1 sergeant and 1 private killed, and 2 privates wounded. The brigade being under heavy fire moved forward to get under cover of the opposite hills, then reformed under the crest of a ridge, about a half mile above its former position. As soon as the line was formed Colonel Maxwell's regiment was deployed as skirmishers, 300 yards in advance, and covered the entire front of the brigade. This regiment soon became engaged with the enemy's infantry, in a cornfield and the woods to the right of the field. For more than two hours it kept up a brisk action with the enemy's sharpshooters and artillery, when the right was driven in by a destructive fire of grape and canister. At this crisis the brigade was ordered to reinforce Brigadier-General Robertson, of Hood's command, about a half mile distant. Colonel Trigg then obliques to the right, bringing the

front of the brigade to the cornfield fence, where they sustained a most destructive fire from the enemy's artillery, which was protected by earthworks and supported by a long line of infantry drawn up in the field and in rifle-pits. The brigade advanced until near the fence, then opened fire. The enemy broke in confusion and the brigade was ordered to charge them before they could rally. The Sixth Florida regiment gallantly responded, leaping the fence, and dashed forward to the crest of the ridge, forcing the enemy's broken line to seek the nearest cover. This heroic regiment regained the ridge, cleared the cornfield of all the infantry, drove nearly all the gunners from the battery and would have certainly captured it but for an unfortunate interference which necessitated the withdrawal of this command, thus relinquishing the capture of the battery which but a few minutes before was regarded as almost accomplished. On the morning of September 20th Trigg's brigade was ordered to support General Manigault's brigade. The position of the enemy being indicated the battery assigned was ordered to take position and open fire. After several rounds, the enemy failing to respond, it was evident they had withdrawn from that part of the field. The next movement of the brigade was to support Williams' battalion of artillery. After giving it two hours' support they were ordered to take position to resist an anticipated rear attack by the enemy's cavalry. For this purpose Colonel Trigg moved back with two regiments, the Seventh Florida and the First Florida dismounted cavalry. During the absence of these forces an urgent order came from General Preston, division commander, for the brigade to move rapidly forward to the support of the remainder of the division, and Colonel Finley, taking command of the two remaining regiments, the Sixth Florida and Fifty-fourth Virginia, moved rapidly toward the ridge where the enemy had made an obstinate stand. While the battle was raging furiously, Colonel Trigg arrived with the

Seventh, which he formed on the left of the Fifty-fourth Virginia, which, with the Sixth, was already in line on the left of Kelly's brigade. At this time the First dismounted cavalry, on the way to join the brigade, was detached by order of General Preston and sent to support General Gracie's brigade. Without faltering or wavering these gallant troops drove the enemy steadily before them, capturing the Twenty-second Michigan, Eighty-ninth Ohio and part of the Twenty-first Ohio regiments. During this brilliant engagement Sergt. L. E. Timmons, Company I, Seventh Florida regiment, captured the regimental flag of the Twenty-first Ohio regiment.

Attached to the battalion of artillery commanded by Major Williams in this battle was the Florida battery, organized in Marion county as the Marion light artillery. This battery had done brilliant and effective service at the battle of Richmond, Ky., under the command of Capt. J. M. Martin. It was the only Florida battery ordered to join Gen. Kirby Smith and assigned to duty in the army of Tennessee.

Colonel Maxwell, of the First cavalry, reported his loss on the 19th at 2 killed and 15 wounded and 1 missing. "Among the killed was Lieut. Richard F. Hart, Company E, a most excellent officer and worthy gentleman. Courteous and polite in his social relations, and firm but kind in his official capacity, he was respected and loved by all who were brought into intimate intercourse with him. Prompt, faithful and energetic in the discharge of his duties, his company and regiment have lost a noble and gallant officer and his country a devoted patriot." Continuing, Colonel Maxwell reported that after being ordered on the afternoon of the 20th to the front, where "a most terrible contest was going on along our whole line," he met a staff officer of General Preston's and was directed by him to a point about a mile in advance as the place where Trigg's brigade was fighting. "I double-quickened to the point indicated, receiving a fire from the enemy's

sharpshooters through most of the field. Arriving at the woods I formed line and looked about in vain for any of our troops. I advanced into the woods and was met by a storm of balls from the rifles of the enemy, who was strongly posted behind breastworks upon the crest of a hill. Then and there I met General Gracie, who informed me that his brigade had been twice repulsed from the same hill. Not being able to find my own brigade commander I put myself under his orders. He at first directed me to take the hill, but upon my suggestion that it was hardly possible for my small regiment to do what his large brigade had failed to accomplish, he ordered me to remain where I was until he could reform his brigade, the locality of which he did not then know. Being exposed to a severe fire, to which they could not reply, I ordered my regiment to fall back to the cover of a fence in the corn-field, which they did in good order. My loss on this occasion was 1 killed and 9 wounded. Among the latter were Lieut.-Col. William Stockton and Capt. Gaston Finley, both slightly."

Col. J. J. Finley, Sixth Florida infantry, in his official report described vividly the experience of the 19th, when "the whole of my line was subjected for some time to the enemy's fire, solid shot and shell passing over and near, diagonally in many places, from right to left, frequently striking in front and ricocheting over my men, who were in a lying position. It was at this time that a shell from the enemy's guns exploded upon the right of the third company, instantly killing First Lieut. James Hays, then in command of his company, and his first sergeant, S. F. Staunton and also Second Sergt. W. R. F. Potter and wounding Lieut. S. Simmons, on the left of the second company, commanded by Captain White." Of the gallant advance made by the regiment later in the day he said: "My regiment moved forward through the open field at a double-quick to the crest of the ridge, the distance of about 300 yards, under a raking fire from a battery of the



enemy which was posted on my left, as well as from small-arms and sharpshooters in front. When the crest of the ridge was attained, which brought us within about 60 yards of the enemy's advance, another battery in our front and still another diagonally to our right opened a hot and fierce fire upon us, still aided by the battery upon our left, which kept up without intermission an enfilading fire upon our whole line, which told with terrible effect upon my command. After engaging the enemy in this position for about half an hour without any support, we were ordered to retire by the colonel commanding the brigade, who advanced with my regiment in the charge, witnessed its conduct and also fully apprehended the necessity of falling back to prevent the utter annihilation of the regiment. While engaged with the enemy from the crest of the ridge his battery in our front was not more than 150 yards from our lines, and upon our first arrival in this position some of his infantry were not more than 50 yards in our front. From this point we poured in a well-directed fire upon the infantry and the gunners in our front, which soon drove them back to the rifle-pits in rear of their battery—which I estimated to be about 150 yards in the rear of their battery—leaving the guns unmanned and the battery flag cut down. The casualties of the regiment in the battle on the 19th were: officers, 2 killed, and 11 wounded; enlisted men, 33 killed, 119 wounded.”

Of the work of the regiments under his command on the evening of the 20th Colonel Finley reported that in their advance in front of Gracie's and Kelly's brigades, they opened fire upon the enemy and continued to advance steadily and constantly “until we swept the heights, silencing the fire of our adversary, driving him from his position and causing him to retire.” Being annoyed by a battery on the right, in an oblique direction, he ordered a bayonet charge against it, but before this could be accomplished the enemy had retired and succeeded in withdrawing his piece. Later the Sixth and Seventh and the

Fifty-fourth Virginia made a movement by which some 500 of the enemy were captured, besides a large number of small-arms. In this engagement the casualties of the Sixth were 1 private killed, 2 lieutenants and 4 privates wounded; missing, 1 private, supposed killed.

Col. Robert Bullock, Seventh Florida infantry, in his report detailed the service of his regiment on the two days, closing with the gallant participation in the evening fight of the 20th, which resulted in the capture of about 150 prisoners, 1 stand of colors and 12 Colt revolving rifles. Among the prisoners were Colonel Carlton and Lieutenant-Colonel McLaw. There were few casualties in his command, nearly all of which occurred on the 19th.

Maj.-Gen. J. P. Anderson in this campaign commanded Hindman's division of Polk's corps. In his report he made the following special mention of Lieut. William Davidson, of Quincy, Fla., a young officer on his staff: "Lieut. William M. Davidson, aide-de-camp, was, as he had been at Shiloh, Perryville and Murfreesboro, constantly by my side, ever ready, active and intelligent in the communication of orders or the rallying of a broken line."

When the army of Tennessee had invested the Federal forces under Rosecrans at Chattanooga, the Florida regiments theretofore in Trigg's and Stovall's brigades were transferred to a new brigade, organized November 12, 1863, to which Col. J. J. Finley, promoted brigadier-general, was assigned as commander. It was part of Breckinridge's division, commanded by General Bate. This Florida brigade was composed of the Sixth infantry, Lieut. Col. A. D. McLean; Seventh infantry, Col. Robert Bullock; First cavalry, dismounted, Col. G. Troup Maxwell; First and Third infantry, Col. William S. Dilworth; Fourth infantry, Col. W. L. L. Bowen. On November 24th, the day before the battle of Missionary Ridge, the main part of the brigade was stationed at the crest of the ridge, immediately to the right of General Bragg's headquarters. Requisition having been made upon General

Bate to furnish a picket force to confront the enemy in the valley below, the First dismounted and Fourth regiment were detailed for this duty. Said General Bate, "The pressure of the enemy on our front, on the morning of the 25th, forbade the relief of this force, and hence it remained on that day; the officer of the day being Lieutenant-Colonel Badger of the Fourth Florida. By repeated application from the front I was induced to send the Seventh Florida as a reserve to our picket line. This little force under the frown of such a horrid front remained defiant, and in obedience to orders maneuvered handsomely amid the peril of capture until, by order, it found a lodgment in the trenches at the foot of Missionary Ridge, with its right resting at Moore's house. I ordered that it hold the trenches at all hazards."

The overwhelming onslaught of superior numbers forced the troops below, after they had retired to the intrenchments, from them up the slope, where they were exposed to a continual fire, and many were killed, wounded or captured. The troops in the trenches and those at the summit all fought gallantly, and after the ridge was lost fell back about a mile, where General Bate formed a line to protect the crossing of the Chickamauga. This line was put under command of General Finley, while General Bate withdrew the Sixth Florida and moved it back as a nucleus for a second line upon which the Confederate troops might rally. The line under General Finley was soon hotly engaged with the victorious enemy, but returning the fire with spirit and firmness checked the pursuit. After a short engagement the enemy ceased firing in the darkness, and Finley withdrew his line in good order across the pontoon bridge which he had so manfully guarded for the passage of the artillery and other troops. In the meantime a third line had been formed under Colonel McLean, which was also withdrawn across the creek in safety. General Bate reported the loss of his division at 43 killed, 224 wounded, missing 590, and added: "Most

of the latter were Floridians who were in the trenches." Colonel Bullock, of the Seventh, and Colonel Maxwell and Maj. William T. Stockton, First cavalry, were among the captured. Captain June, of the Seventh, a gallant young soldier, was killed, and several other officers severely wounded.

At the opening of the campaign of 1864 the regiments of the brigade were commanded as follows: Third and First, Maj. Glover A. Ball; First cavalry and Fourth, Lieut.-Col. Edward Badger; Sixth, Col. Angus D. McLean; Seventh, Lieut.-Col. Tillman Ingram. The brigade took part in the fighting at Dalton, Mill Creek gap, Rocky Face ridge, and Resaca. In the latter engagement General Finley was wounded and Col. Robert Bullock, who had been exchanged, took command of the brigade. They were under cavalry fire at Calhoun and Adairsville, and skirmished at Cassville. Reaching Dallas on May 23d they charged the Federal line on the 28th and suffered severe loss, and skirmished on that line until the Federal army was withdrawn. Subsequently they were engaged at Acworth, and on the Pine mountain line, until on June 18th they were placed in reserve one mile west of Kenesaw mountain. Marching thence to the southwest they were in the battle of July 2d, holding their position within 60 yards of the enemy on Cheatham's bend. Crossing the Chattahoochee river on the night of July 9th, they participated in the service of Bate's division at the battle of Peachtree Creek, and shared the desperate fighting of Hardee's corps in the flank attack and battle of July 22d.

Then being transferred to the extreme west flank of the army they were under a terrible fire on August 3d, and marched a mile in advance of the general line and established General Bate's picket line near Utoy creek, where they fought the enemy, repulsing every attack in the memorable battle of the 6th. They were engaged in continual skirmishing during the siege of Atlanta, and on



August 27th were ordered to Rough-and-Ready. After skirmishing near Flint river the brigade moved to Jonesboro, where they participated in the battles of August 31st and September 1st. On the retreat they skirmished at Lovejoy station, Bear creek and Palmetto. During Hood's campaigns against Sherman's communications the Florida soldiers assisted in the capture of Dalton and the block-house in Mill Creek gap, skirmished at Decatur, Ala., and Columbia, Tenn., and under the command of Colonel Bullock took a gallant part in the bloody battle of Franklin, November 30th. In this fight Lieutenant-Colonel Badger, commanding the First cavalry and Fourth infantry, was wounded three times before he left the field, exemplifying the determined heroism of his fellow-soldiers. The brigade was with Bate's division in the campaign against Murfreesboro, and in a gallant fight at Overall's creek Colonel Bullock was wounded. Another severe fight followed on the Wilkinson pike, near Murfreesboro, and the brigade moved to Nashville in time to do gallant service as Hood's line was crumbling under the assault of Thomas' legions. In his report of this campaign General Bate commends the service of Colonel Bullock and his brigade, stating that after Bullock was severely wounded on December 4th, near Murfreesboro, Maj. Jacob A. Lash took command of the brigade until the arrival of Maj. Glover A. Ball. At Nashville Major Lash was captured. The Florida brigade was finally in the field during the campaign in the Carolinas, under the command of Col. Daniel L. Kenan, of the Sixth. It took part in the battle of Columbia, February 17, 1865, and, greatly reduced in numbers, reached the field of Bentonville, March 19th, and went into battle, Colonel Kenan commanding Bate's division. In this last great battle of the army of Tennessee the Florida troops fought with their old-time gallantry and suffered severe losses. Colonel Kenan displayed brilliant soldiership and received a severe wound amid the thickest of the fight, which caused the loss of a leg, "de-

priving the country," said General Bate, "of the services of a most gallant and efficient officer."

In the final reorganization of the army April 9th, the remnants of the brigade were consolidated in one regiment, the First Florida, under command of Lieut.-Col. Elisha Mashburn, in Gen. James A. Smith's brigade, Brown's (late Cleburne's) division, Hardee's corps, and thus it was surrendered with the army at Greensboro, April 26th, and disbanded at Augusta, Ga., May 14, 1865. Four companies of independent cavalry commanded by Captains Partridge, Smith, Leigh, and Vaughan, rendered effective service in Alabama. Captain Henderson's independent company of infantry served at Island No. 10, and all were captured but the captain and five men. Captain Johnson's independent company of infantry served at Fort Pillow.

## APPENDIX.

### REPORTS AND GENERAL ORDERS PERTAINING TO THE MILITARY HISTORY OF FLORIDA.

Headquarters Military District of Florida,  
Camp Milton, May 19, 1864.

Capt. H. W. Feilden,  
Charleston, S. C.

Captain: The late order to send "a good brigade of infantry" to Richmond with all possible expedition is now being executed. The First, Second and Sixth Florida battalions left here on the 17th inst. The Fourth was stationed in west Florida, and most of the companies were at stations on the Choctawatchie bay and distant from railroad or steamboat transportation. It is supposed to be in motion at this time. It has orders to take steamboat on the Apalachicola river for Columbus and thence by rail to Richmond. Bonaud's battalion was in south Florida at the time the order was received. It had to march over one hundred miles and will not reach the Gulf railroad at Quitman, Ga., for several days to come. It is expected to get to Gainesville by the 21st inst. The major-general commanding is informed that this takes all the infantry force out of this district, leaving the Second Florida cavalry, Fifth battalion of cavalry, Campbell's siege artillery, Villepigue's light battery, and a section of Dunham's light battery, as the whole effective force at my command. Abell's light battery is complete except about forty horses. Dunham's lacks about thirty horses. Under these circumstances I have deemed it proper to remove district headquarters, at least temporarily, to Lake City, and will eventually remove farther west to Madison or Tallahassee for the purpose of being more accessible to all portions of the district and for greater convenience in organizing the reserve forces, upon which we will have to depend in great measure for the defense of important localities. It will not be practicable to carry on offensive operations, either against the regular organized force of the enemy within the district,

or the deserters and disloyals who infest certain remote localities. The best that can be done will be to defend points of greatest importance. With this view I have disposed the cavalry as follows: Hood's battalion and three companies Fifth Florida battalion in middle and west Florida, to picket the coast and operate in the disloyal neighborhoods. The Second Florida cavalry and four companies Fifth battalion Florida cavalry in east Florida, in front of Jacksonville and up the St. John's river on the west side, as high as Fort Butler, for the purpose of keeping observation on the enemy's force in that vicinity. It will be readily perceived that this force is wholly inadequate to the protection of the country, should the enemy see fit to move out from under his gunboats. From any point on the upper St. John's he can make raids into Marion, Sumter and Alachua counties at pleasure. A large negro population and an exaggerated estimate of the supplies in those counties are the inducements for him to visit them. The injury he can inflict by breaking up the operations of our commissary agents in supplying beef cattle from south Florida, will be a serious one and one that should not be overlooked by the government.

I would respectfully call the attention of the major-general commanding to this matter in particular. From the language of the dispatch from the adjutant and inspector-general at Richmond, ordering the infantry out of this district, I think it is evident there must be some misapprehension there as to the available force in Florida. It will be seen that to protect south Florida it is absolutely necessary to prevent the enemy from reaching Baldwin, which is only 20 miles from Jacksonville, where he now has over 3,000 troops. It is also necessary to prevent him crossing over from St. Augustine, where he has about 1,000 troops, to points above the mouth of the Ocklawaha river. Having the advantage of river navigation he can reach any point on the upper St. John's before a force at this point could proceed in the direction to meet him. Therefore it is absolutely necessary to have a force here to protect Baldwin and also a force on the upper St. John's to prevent these raids. Such a force is not now at my command. Indeed, any day when he chooses to do so, the enemy can move out to Baldwin and occupy the place.



I bring these facts to the notice of the major-general commanding, knowing that just at this time he cannot afford a remedy, but hoping that as soon as possible troops may be supplied for the proper defense of these important points.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,  
PATTON ANDERSON, Major-General.

Headquarters Military District of Florida,  
Lake City, July 27, 1864.

General Orders, No. 32.

Ordered from this command as unexpectedly as he was ordered to it, the undersigned leaves this for a more active field of duty, and trusts that the recollections entertained of him by the troops of his late command may be as pleasant as those he entertains of them. Fellow-citizens of bygone days, fellow-soldiers of the present, I bid you farewell.

PATTON ANDERSON, Major-General.

Lake City, July 27, 1864.

General Orders, No. 33.

Maj.-Gen. Patton Anderson having been relieved from command of this district, the undersigned, by order of Maj.-Gen. Sam Jones, commanding department of South Carolina, Georgia and Florida, assumes command thereof.

JOHN K. JACKSON, Brigadier-General.

Milton, July 27, 1864.

Dear Colonel: I left here on Saturday morning with two small boats and fifteen men for the mouth of Yellow river. When I arrived there I discovered a small schooner lying about two miles below with her sails down. I landed my men and made way to her and succeeded in capturing her and crew. In a few minutes I discovered another small sail coming up the bay. I secreted myself and men until she came up, and succeeded in getting her and crew. I then sent my boats and prisoners up to camp and took the small schooner and balance of my men and sailed down to East bay, where I was informed that there was a schooner by the name of Osceola anchored out about 4 miles from shore, with five men and some small-arms. I concealed my men in the boat and sailed for her and managed to get to her after dark and succeeded in boarding her. I ordered the crew to surrender;

three made to their guns. I ordered my men to fire on them, which they did and killed the three. The remaining two surrendered. I divided my men on the two schooners and set sail for camp and arrived here yesterday morning. I send up the prisoners to-day and it will be late before they get there, as they will have to foot it up. One of the prisoners can give you all the information that you desire about the yard, and if you will permit me, after the excitement dies off, I will burn the mills on the island. Yours respectfully,

W. B. AMOS,

Capt. Fifteenth Conf. Cav., Comdg. Outpost.  
COL. H. MAURY, Commanding Eastern Division.

Charleston, August 31, 1864.

Gen. S. Cooper: Brig.-Gen. Wm. Miller has reported for duty in Florida. No orders have been received ordering him to report to me, but from the President's letter of the 9th inst. to Governor Milton, it seems the President intends that General Miller shall command the district of Florida. Is that his instruction? If so, I can relieve Brig.-Gen. J. K. Jackson and assign him to other duty.

SAM JONES, Major-General.

Adjutant and Inspector-General's Office,

Richmond, September 8, 1864.

Special Orders, No. 213.

Brig.-Gen. William Miller, Provisional army Confederate States, will take command of the reserve forces of the State of Florida. He will complete their organization and place them at once in service. To this end he is authorized to employ all enrolling officers, who are hereby directed to obey his instructions. He will establish his headquarters at such place as he may deem best.

Officers of the quartermaster, commissary, ordnance and medical departments, are required to furnish all necessary facilities. All officers from the State of Florida, of the invalid corps and such of the regular forces as are for any reason unassigned, will immediately report to General Miller, who is authorized to assign them temporarily to duty with the reserves.

JOHN WITHERS, Assistant Adjutant-General.

Richmond, September 30, 1864.

Special Orders, No. 231.

Brig.-Gen. J. K. Jackson is relieved from the command of the district of Florida and will report for duty to Maj.-Gen. Sam Jones, commanding in Charleston, S. C.

In addition to his other duties Brigadier-General Miller, provisional army Confederate States, is assigned to the command of the district of Florida, department of South Carolina, Georgia and Florida.

By command of the Secretary of War:

JOHN WITHERS.

Charleston, S. C., October 13, 1864.

Special Orders, No. 250.

Maj.-Gen J. K. Jackson, provisional army Confederate States, will report to Maj.-Gen. L. McLaws, commanding district of Georgia and Third Military district of South Carolina, for assignment to duty.

By command of Lieutenant-General Hardee:

H. W. FEILDEN, Assistant Adjutant-General.

Headquarters Military District of Florida,

Lake City, August 1, 1864.

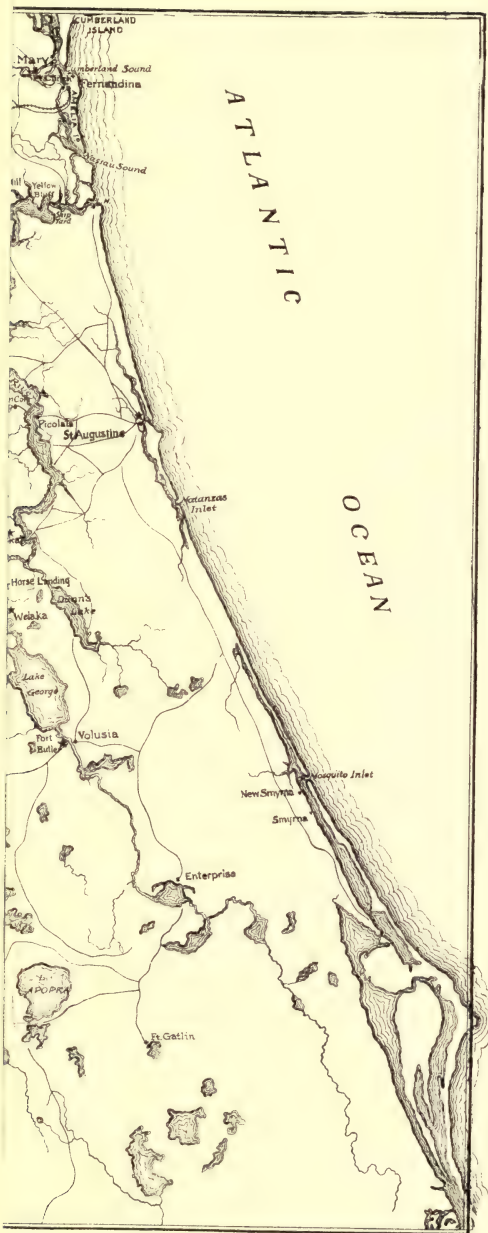
General Orders, No. 34.

Until further orders, the headquarters of this district are established at Lake City.

The following officers compose the staff of the Brigadier-General commanding: Capt. Wm. G. Barth, assistant adjutant-general; Capt. S. A. Moreno, assistant adjutant-general; Lieut.-Col. W. K. Beard, assistant inspector-general; Maj. H. Goldthwaite, assistant inspector-general; Col. J. W. Robertson, chief engineer; Maj. H. R. Teasdale, chief quartermaster; Maj. A. M. Bryan, quartermaster; Maj. A. B. Noyes, chief of subsistence; Maj. W. C. Sibley, commissary of subsistence; First-Lieut. J. G. Whitsitt, assistant commissary of subsistence; Capt. T. E. Buckman, chief of ordnance; Second Lieut. T. G. Barrett, ordnance officer; Maj. C. B. Gamble, chief surgeon; First Lieut. A. M. Jackson, aide-de-camp. They will be obeyed and respected accordingly.

By command of Brig.-Gen. JOHN K. JACKSON:

WM. G. BARTH, Assistant Adjutant-General.







# BIOGRAPHICAL.



## BIOGRAPHICAL.

Major-General James Patton Anderson was born in Tennessee about 1820. Like other enterprising Americans he lived in so many different sections of the Union that it is a difficult matter to decide to which State he really should be assigned in this record of Confederate generals. At the opening of the Mexican war he was living in Mississippi and became lieutenant-colonel of Mississippi volunteers. Although he had not had the advantages of an education at the United States military academy, the Mexican conflict proved a good school for him in the military art. The good use he made of his opportunities in that practical military training school was afterward evidenced by the skill with which he managed troops upon the great arena of war from 1861 to 1865. The man who obtained a good reputation on that great theater of action had to keep abreast of many illustrious men of the same rank with himself, and that is what General Anderson did. After the close of the Mexican war General Anderson lived for a time in Olympia, in what was then Washington Territory, and served as territorial delegate to the national House of Representatives in 1855. Before the opening of the Confederate war he had removed to Florida, and as a citizen of Jefferson county he was a member of the secession convention. Feeling, as did most Southern men, that the South was right, he entered heart and soul into the struggle to maintain Southern rights and honor. As early as December, 1860, before there had been any secession, but when everybody felt certain that such action would be taken, military companies were being formed and drilled. Anderson was captain of such a company—



the Jefferson Rifles. In April, 1861, he was colonel of the First Florida regiment of infantry, ready to go wherever the Confederate president might order. Stationed for some time at Pensacola, he was in command of one of the Confederate columns in the fight on Santa Rosa island, October, 1861. Early in 1862 he was promoted to brigadier-general, his command having been transferred to Corinth, Miss. At the battle of Shiloh his brigade was composed of the Seventeenth Louisiana, the Louisiana Guards Response battalion, the Florida battalion (First regiment) under Maj. T. A. McDonell, Ninth Texas, Twentieth Louisiana, and a company of the Washington artillery. Of his service General Bragg said: "Brig.-Gen. Patton Anderson was among the foremost where the fighting was hardest, and never failed to overcome whatever resistance was opposed to him. With a brigade composed almost entirely of raw troops his personal gallantry and soldierly bearing supplied the place of instruction and discipline." At Perryville he commanded a division of Hardee's corps, and was in charge of the extreme right. At Murfreesboro he commanded Walthall's brigade of Withers' division, Polk's corps. His participation in the magnificent right wheel of the army was inferior to that of none of the general officers who won fame on that day. It was his brigade which was ordered to take three batteries "at any cost," and succeeded under the lead of "its cool, steadfast and skillful commander." Subsequently he commanded Chalmers' brigade, and during the 18th and 19th of September was in command of Hindman's division, in the Chickamauga campaign. He was mentioned by General Longstreet as distinguished for conduct and ability. He commanded the same division at Missionary Ridge. On February 17, 1864, he was promoted to major-general and was assigned to command of the district of Florida. After serving five months in that capacity he was ordered to report to General Hood at Atlanta, Ga., in July, 1864,

and on his arrival was assigned to his old division, which he commanded in the battle of Ezra Church, during the siege, and until wounded in the battle of Jonesboro, which compelled him to leave the field, resulting in his absence from the army until March, 1865. Then, much against the advice and approval of his physicians, he returned to the army in North Carolina and was assigned to command of Taliaferro's division, Rhett's and Elliott's brigades from Charleston, and was with it when surrendered at Greensboro, N. C. After the close of hostilities he returned to Tennessee and died at Memphis in 1873.

Brigadier-General Robert Bullock was one of the influential men of Florida before the war. When his State seceded he gave his hearty support to her decision; organized a company in Marion county, and when the Seventh Florida was organized he was made lieutenant-colonel. In 1862 this regiment served in East Tennessee in the brigade of Gen. W. G. M. Davis. The department was at that time commanded by Gen. E. Kirby Smith. At the time of the battle of Murfreesboro this brigade was still in Smith's department, and on June 2d Lieutenant-Colonel Bullock was commissioned colonel. When all available Confederate commands were being concentrated by Bragg to meet the advancing army of Rosecrans, the Seventh Florida was one of the regiments assigned to Trigg's brigade of the division of Gen. William Preston. The losses in this division at Chickamauga bear strong testimony to the desperate nature of the fighting there. At the battle of Missionary Ridge the Seventh Florida fought in the brigade of General Finley and the division of General Bate. In this brigade and division it continued to serve throughout the Atlanta campaign under Colonel Bullock, who had already distinguished himself as a cool and gallant commander. Some of the hardest fighting of the Atlanta campaign was done by this division, and the Seventh Florida acted a

gallant part in it all. During the campaign into Tennessee Colonel Bullock led Finley's brigade, and was one of the gallant participants in the terrible battle of Franklin. Maj.-Gen. Wm. B. Bate, in his official report of the Tennessee campaign, pays a high compliment to Colonel Bullock. He says: "T. B. Smith, commanding Tyler's brigade, and Col. Robert Bullock, commanding Finley's, bore themselves with heroic courage, both through good and evil fortune, always executing orders with zeal and alacrity, and bearing themselves in the face of the enemy as became reputations which each had heretofore bravely won. The latter was severely wounded near Murfreesboro, and was succeeded by Major Lash, whose coolness and gallantry were marked." Colonel Bullock came out of the Tennessee campaign with the temporary rank of brigadier-general.

Brigadier-General Theodore W. Brevard, then in the rank of major, was commanding a battalion in the department of Florida in 1862-63. This was at first a cavalry command, designated as Brevard's Partisan Rangers, and consisting of four companies. In the first months of 1861 Florida and South Carolina were considered the seat of war, and military commands were hurried in considerable numbers to Pensacola and Charleston. The latter city was the object of attack from 1862 to the close of the conflict. In Florida there was no important battle until Seymour's invasion in February, 1864. In a skirmish that occurred in the suburbs of Jacksonville on March 11, 1863, Major Brevard was commended for gallant conduct by General Finegan, who, in a report of a skirmish near Lake City on March 31st, says: "My orders were executed by Major Brevard with promptness, gallantry and discretion." In December, 1863, Brevard's battalion (the First Florida) had been increased to five companies, and Major Brevard had been promoted to lieutenant-colonel. This battalion was in the brigade of Gen. Joseph

Finegan and participated in the battle of Olustee, February 20, 1864, the most important battle fought in Florida during the war. It was for the time decisive of the fate of that State, completely thwarting the Federal scheme for its conquest and reconstruction. When the Virginia campaign of 1864 opened, Finegan's brigade was sent to Richmond and participated in the battle of Cold Harbor, where it distinguished itself by recapturing, in a hand-to-hand conflict, the only part of the line where the Federals in their desperate charge made even the faintest show of success on that day, the most disastrous to Grant of his whole military career. In this battle Brevard led his battalion. In August, 1864, he was promoted to colonel of the Eleventh Florida, and in December he had command of that regiment and of Bonaud's battalion. On March 22, 1865, he was commissioned brigadier-general, a promotion richly deserved. Soon after this came the close of the war. Upon the restoration of peace General Brevard returned to Florida and strove to be as useful to his State under the new order of things as he had been when, as her valiant defender in the days of war, he braved the hardships and dangers of that fearful struggle which had so sorely tried the patience and endurance of the stoutest hearts. Up to the time of his death he enjoyed the love and esteem of his countrymen, and his memory is cherished by the people of Florida.

Brigadier-General W. G. M. Davis was before the war a lawyer in Florida, widely known as a gentleman of great legal ability and high rank in his profession. For-saking his practice in 1861, he raised a regiment and was on January 1, 1862, commissioned colonel of the First Florida cavalry and put in command of the provisional forces of east Florida. The Federals had already seized Fernandina, Jacksonville and other places along the coast. The chief business of Colonel Davis' regiment



was to watch the movements of the enemy carefully, and as far as possible to prevent raiding or scouting parties of the Federals from penetrating into the interior. Gov. John Milton was very much opposed to the raising of cavalry commands for the defense of Florida, insisting that nothing but artillery and infantry were needed for the defense of that State. The executive council of the State passed a resolution requesting the governor to correspond with the President as to the necessity of the regiment being converted into an infantry regiment and being kept in the State for its defense. On March 25, 1862, Colonel Davis and his regiment were ordered to report to Gen. Albert Sidney Johnston, and were assigned to east Tennessee, where they were kept busy watching the movements of the enemy, scouting and overawing the disaffected in that part of the Confederacy. On November 4, 1862, he was commissioned brigadier-general and was placed in command of the department of East Tennessee. His brigade embraced the First Florida cavalry, the Sixth and Seventh Florida infantry and Martin's light battery. His scene of operations was a wild and difficult mountain region throughout which were people disaffected toward the Confederacy. It was necessary to control and at the same time to use much discretion in dealing with them. So the task of a department commander in that section was a very difficult one. During the time in which he exercised command his department was quite free from the presence of Federal troops. On the 5th of May, 1863, he resigned his commission and retired from the military service of the Confederate States.

Brigadier-General Joseph Finegan, a prominent lawyer and statesman in Florida before the war, was early in 1861 placed by Gov. John Milton at the head of military affairs in the State. He was commissioned brigadier-general on April 5, 1862, and from the 8th of that month until the battle of Olustee commanded the department

or district of Middle and East Florida. The coast of Florida was from the beginning of the war at the mercy of the Federal fleet, and within the limits of the State were only a few scattered Confederate troops. Early in 1864, when it had been found that Charleston was too strong for the Federal army and fleet combined, General Gilmore, who commanded the department of the South, decided to make an effort to overrun Florida and annex it to the Union. It was considered desirable by the United States authorities that some of the Southern States should be brought so completely under the control of the Union army as to enable such of the inhabitants, white and black, as might desire to do so, to form what they called "loyal" State governments and be readmitted to the Union. Florida seemed to offer good prospect of success in such an undertaking. An army under Gen. Truman Seymour and the fleet of Admiral Dahlgren attempted the task of subduing Florida, and General Finegan found himself in a dangerous position, demanding skillful generalship and courageous firmness. So well did he perform his part that a signal victory was obtained at Olustee, and the Federal enterprise entirely defeated. He was soon succeeded by General Gardner as commander of the district of Middle and Eastern Florida, and was sent to Virginia in May at the head of a Florida brigade, with which Perry's old brigade was consolidated. At the second battle of Cold Harbor General Finegan and his Florida brigade had a good opportunity for distinction, and made memorable use of the occasion to the credit of themselves and their State. This was the memorable 3d of June, when Grant's charging columns broke through a weak point in Breckinridge's line. Immediately Finegan's brigade rushed into the breach and in a desperate fight drove back the assailants with heavy loss to Hancock's troops. General Finegan served from that time with the army of Northern Virginia until March 20, 1865, when he was again assigned to duty in Florida. After

the war he returned to the profession of law. On the 29th of October, 1885, he died at Sanford, Fla.

Brigadier-General Jesse Johnson Finley was born in Wilson county, Tenn., on the 18th of November, 1812. He was educated at Lebanon and began the study of law. But about that time the Seminole war began and young Finley, having recruited a company of mounted volunteers, served in the army as captain. Returning home in 1838 he was admitted to the bar. In 1840 he removed to Mississippi county, Ark. The young lawyer, who seems to have been a born leader of men, at once rose to prominence and was elected to the State senate in 1841. The following year he resigned this position and going to Memphis, Tenn., began the practice of law. He was elected mayor of that city in 1845. In 1846 he removed to Marianna, Fla. Here he soon became prominent, and in 1850 was elected to the State senate. In 1852 he was a presidential elector on the Whig ticket, and in 1853 was appointed judge of the west circuit of Florida. When the war began he sided with the Confederate cause, and in 1861 he was made judge of the Confederate court. In March 1862 he resigned this post of honor and entered the army as a private; was soon promoted to a captaincy, and on April 14, 1862, was commissioned as colonel of the Sixth Florida regiment. He was on duty in east Tennessee in Davis' brigade, Heth's division, Kirby Smith's department; took part in the Kentucky campaign and after the return to Knoxville served as president of the court-martial for the department until ordered to Tullahoma. He commanded his regiment in the battle of Chickamauga with distinction. On November 16, 1863, he was commissioned brigadier-general and assigned to command of the Florida infantry in the army of Tennessee, united in a brigade of Bate's division, Hardee's corps. He commanded this gallant brigade at Missionary Ridge, and rendered distinguished service with the rear guard un-

der General Bates. In the May campaign of 1864 he took part until at the battle of Resaca he was severely wounded, causing his disability until after Johnston's army had reached Atlanta. At Jonesboro in an assault upon the enemy's lines he was again seriously wounded by a fragment of shell, which also killed his horse. He declined to be sent to the rear to take train until all his wounded men were embarked, and narrowly escaped capture through the faithfulness of a driver who took him in a commissary wagon after the last train had left. He was unfit for duty during the subsequent campaigns of General Hood. Soon after the army was ordered to North Carolina, his wound being partially healed, he started to rejoin his brigade; but his progress being interfered with by the Federal movements, he reported to General Cobb at Columbus, and was assigned to duty. When Wilson's Federal troops entered Columbus he made his escape with General Toombs to Eufaula, and soon afterward hostilities ceased. General Finley then returned to Florida and lived for a time in Lake City. In 1875 he removed to Jacksonville. He served in Congress from 1875 to 1879. In 1879 he was again elected but the seat was contested and given to his opponent. In 1887 he was appointed by Governor Perry to fill a vacancy in the United States Senate until an election could be held. Since the expiration of that service he has lived quietly at his Florida home.

Major-General William Wing Loring was a soldier from his boyhood. He was born in Wilmington, N. C., December 4, 1818; in early childhood became a resident of Florida, and when only fourteen years of age was in the ranks of the volunteers, fighting Indians in the swamps and everglades. He did not have a West Point training, but he was educated in the true school of the soldier—active campaign life. On June 16, 1837, he was appointed a second lieutenant. After that he went to school at Alex-



andria, Va., and Georgetown, D. C. He afterward studied law and was admitted in 1842 to practice. He then went back to Florida and before long was elected to the State legislature, of which he remained a member for three years. In the Seminole war of 1836-38 he was appointed senior captain of a regiment of mounted riflemen, and in the following year he was made major commanding. He served under General Scott in all the battles of the Mexican war, from Vera Cruz to the city of Mexico, and for gallant conduct was brevetted lieutenant-colonel and then colonel. While entering the city of Mexico at the head of his regiment he lost his left arm. After the war the citizens of Apalachicola, Fla., presented him with a sword. In 1849, during the gold fever in California, Colonel Loring was ordered to take his regiment across the continent and take command of the department of Oregon. On this occasion he marched his command a distance of 2,500 miles, taking with him a train of 600 mule teams. He held the command of the department of Oregon until 1851. For five years he was in command on the frontier and fought many combats with the Indians, then by permission he visited Europe and studied the military systems of the various nations. On his return he was placed in command of the department of New Mexico, but during that very year the long sectional quarrel between the North and South changed from a war of words to open hostilities. Loring naturally sided with the South. The Confederate government was glad to accept his services, and on the 20th of May, 1861, commissioned him as brigadier-general. After the defeat and death of Gen. Robert Garnett, in western Virginia, General Loring was sent to take charge of the Confederate forces in that quarter. He commanded one wing of the army under Lee in the Cheat Mountain campaign, where the soldiers had little fighting but abundance of hardship. In December, 1861, Loring's command united with Stonewall Jackson at Win-





Maj.-Gen. W. W. LORING.  
 Brig.-Gen. T. W. BREVARD.  
 Maj.-Gen. J. P. ANDERSON.  
 Brig.-Gen. W. S. WALKER.

Brig.-Gen. ROBERT RULLOCK.  
 Brig.-Gen. JOS. FINEGAN.  
 Brig.-Gen. WM. MILLER.  
 Maj.-Gen. M. L. SMITH.

Brig.-Gen. W. G. M. DAVIS.  
 Brig.-Gen. J. J. FINLEY.  
 Brig.-Gen. FRANCIS A. SHOUT.  
 Brig.-Gen. E. A. FERRY.

chester, and in January was engaged in the winter expedition to Bath, Hancock and Romney. Through General Loring's solicitations to the war department at Richmond his division, which had been left at Romney, was ordered back to Winchester. This interference on the part of the government at Richmond came near causing the resignation of General Jackson. On the 15th of February, 1862, General Loring was commissioned major-general and assigned to the command of the army of Southwest Virginia. Nothing of any great importance occurred in that region, the soldiers being for the most part occupied in picket duty and occasional skirmishes with the enemy. In December, 1862, Loring was sent to take command of the First corps of the army of Mississippi. He had charge for a while of Fort Pemberton, which was designed to defend Vicksburg from any expedition sent by way of Yazoo pass. It was a cotton-bale fortification, constructed by Captain Robinson of the Confederate engineers, and situated on the overflowed bottom lands of the Tallahatchie and Yallabusha rivers, near their junction. Here General Loring, with three cannon and 1,500 men, defeated a fleet and land force. In the hottest of the fight Loring stood upon the cotton-bale parapet and shouted to his men: "Give them blizzards, boys! Give them blizzards!" From this time his men nicknamed him "Old Blizzards." At the disastrous battle of Baker's Creek Loring was cut off from the rest of the army. Finding there was no chance to reunite with the main body he marched his division eastward and joined General Johnston at Jackson. He and his troops were thus fortunately saved from being shut up and captured in Vicksburg. He was subsequently under the command of Johnston and then of Polk in north Mississippi. At the opening of the campaign of 1864 Polk hastened to Georgia to make a junction with the army under Joseph E. Johnston. During the Atlanta campaign General Loring commanded a division in Polk's





Maj.-Gen. W. W. LORING.  
 Brig.-Gen. T. W. BREVARD.  
 Maj.-Gen. J. P. ANDERSON.  
 Brig.-Gen. W. S. WALKER.

Brig.-Gen. ROBERT BULLOCK.  
 Brig.-Gen. JOS. FINEGAN.  
 Brig.-Gen. W. M. MILLER.  
 Maj.-Gen. M. L. SMITH.

Brig.-Gen. W. G. M. DAVIS.  
 Brig.-Gen. J. J. FINLEY.  
 Brig.-Gen. FRANCIS A. SHOUP.  
 Brig.-Gen. E. A. PERRY.

chester, and in January was engaged in the winter expedition to Bath, Hancock and Romney. Through General Loring's solicitations to the war department at Richmond his division, which had been left at Romney, was ordered back to Winchester. This interference on the part of the government at Richmond came near causing the resignation of General Jackson. On the 15th of February, 1862, General Loring was commissioned major-general and assigned to the command of the army of Southwest Virginia. Nothing of any great importance occurred in that region, the soldiers being for the most part occupied in picket duty and occasional skirmishes with the enemy. In December, 1862, Loring was sent to take command of the First corps of the army of Mississippi. He had charge for a while of Fort Pemberton, which was designed to defend Vicksburg from any expedition sent by way of Yazoo pass. It was a cotton-bale fortification, constructed by Captain Robinson of the Confederate engineers, and situated on the overflowed bottom lands of the Tallahatchie and Yallabusha rivers, near their junction. Here General Loring, with three cannon and 1,500 men, defeated a fleet and land force. In the hottest of the fight Loring stood upon the cotton-bale parapet and shouted to his men: "Give them blizzards, boys! Give them blizzards!" From this time his men nicknamed him "Old Blizzards." At the disastrous battle of Baker's Creek Loring was cut off from the rest of the army. Finding there was no chance to reunite with the main body he marched his division eastward and joined General Johnston at Jackson. He and his troops were thus fortunately saved from being shut up and captured in Vicksburg. He was subsequently under the command of Johnston and then of Polk in north Mississippi. At the opening of the campaign of 1864 Polk hastened to Georgia to make a junction with the army under Joseph E. Johnston. During the Atlanta campaign General Loring commanded a division in Polk's

corps and, after the death of Polk, the corps itself until the appointment of Gen. A. P. Stewart. Loring continued to command his division in Stewart's corps until the surrender of the army of Tennessee in North Carolina. After the war he went abroad, and in 1869 with other Confederate officers entered the service of the khedive of Egypt, and was appointed inspector-general. In 1870 he was made commandant of Alexandria and given charge of the coast defenses of Egypt. In 1875-76, during the Abyssinian war, General Loring commanded the Egyptian army. He was raised to the dignity of pasha for his services. In 1879 he and the other American officers in the service of the khedive were mustered out and returned to the United States, after which he resided in Florida for a while and then made his home at New York, where he wrote his book entitled "A Confederate Soldier in Egypt." He died at New York, December 30, 1886.

Brigadier-General William Miller.—Before and after the secession of Florida there was great mustering of the State troops, and busy preparations were everywhere made for the coming struggle, which all feared might come, though many hoped that it would be avoided. Among those who forsook the occupations of peace to take up arms in defense of State sovereignty was William Miller, one of the most gallant of Florida's soldiers. He was in command of a battalion which was consolidated with McDonell's battalion of the First regiment after the battle of Shiloh, and after that Colonel Miller commanded the First regiment in the operations culminating in the battle of Perryville, Ky. In the Kentucky campaign the First Florida was in the brigade of Gen. John C. Brown and the division of Gen. J. Patton Anderson. In the battle of Perryville General Brown was wounded and Colonel Miller led the brigade through the rest of the fight. At Murfreesboro this regiment was in the brigade of Gen.



William Preston and the division of Gen. John C. Breckinridge. In the magnificent but disastrous charge of that division on January 2, 1863, the gallant Miller, commanding the First and Third Florida consolidated, was wounded. General Preston in his report says, "Colonel Miller, of the First and Third Florida, was wounded on Friday while bravely leading his regiment, which he withdrew, retaining the command notwithstanding his wounds." While being healed of his injury Colonel Miller was placed in charge of the Confederate conscript bureau in southern Florida and Alabama. On August 2, 1864, he was commissioned brigadier-general, and on September 8th was ordered to take immediate command of the reserve forces of the State of Florida, to complete their organization and place them at once in service. On the 29th of September, in addition to his other duties, General Miller was assigned to the command of the district of Florida, where he took an active part in the events of that period and until the close of the war.

Brigadier-General Edward Aylesworth Perry was born in Richmond, Berkshire county, Mass., March 15, 1833. He entered Yale college, but before the completion of his course removed to Alabama, where he studied law. After admission to the bar, in 1857, he moved to Pensacola, Fla., where he began the practice of his chosen profession. He fully shared the sentiments of the people of his adopted State, and when the civil war commenced he raised a company, of which he was elected captain. His command became a part of the Second Florida regiment, of which Captain Perry became colonel in May, 1862. The regiment was sent to Virginia and was attached to the division of Gen. James Longstreet. Colonel Perry commanded the regiment at Seven Pines and in the Seven Days' battles around Richmond, and from the first the regiment and its commander were conspicuous for valor and efficiency. At Frayser's



Farm he was severely wounded. General Longstreet mentions him among others as distinguished for gallantry and skill. He was commissioned brigadier-general on August 28, 1862, and upon his recovery was put in command of the newly organized Florida brigade, which he led at Chancellorsville. In the battle of Gettysburg Perry's brigade, with Wright's and Wilcox's, pressed close up to the Federal lines, and at one time broke through; but for lack of support had to be withdrawn from the advanced position. It is claimed by Perry's brigade that its losses at Gettysburg were heavier than those of any other brigade of the Confederate army. In the battle of the Wilderness General Perry was a second time severely wounded. After the close of the war he returned to the practice of law in the city of Pensacola. During the gloomy period of reconstruction he remained true to the interests of the people of Florida. The result of the war had not changed his views of the constitutional rights of the States, and not even by silence did he give seeming approval to the corrupt methods or usurpations of that epoch. He took an active interest in political affairs, and in 1884 he was elected governor of Florida on the Democratic ticket. This office he held for four years, and within a year after the expiration of his term he died, October 15, 1889.

Brigadier-General Francis A. Shoup was born at Laurel, Franklin county, Ind., March 22, 1834. He was appointed a cadet at West Point from Indiana, and was graduated in 1855 as brevet second lieutenant of artillery. He served in garrison at Key West and Fort Moultrie; was commissioned second lieutenant December 6, 1855, and served against the Seminoles in Florida, from 1856 to 1858. He resigned in 1860, and beginning the study of law was admitted to the bar at St. Augustine, Fla., early in 1861. In the war of 1861-65 he espoused heartily the cause of the South, and early in the struggle, under the order of the governor of Florida, he erected a battery at Fernandina.

He was appointed a lieutenant of artillery in the Confederate army and was at first ordered to report to General Hardee in the Trans-Mississippi department. In October, 1861, he was commissioned major of artillery and was in command of a battalion of twelve guns with the Arkansas troops in Kentucky. General Hardee, in assuming command of the army of Central Kentucky, made him chief of artillery, in which capacity he served at the battle of Shiloh. He it was who massed the artillery against the position occupied by the command of Prentiss on the memorable first day at Shiloh, thus becoming an important factor in the capture of that fine body of Union troops. Under Beauregard he held the important post of inspector of artillery. He was sent with Hindman to Arkansas; was his chief of artillery, and as such participated in the battle of Prairie Grove. On September 12, 1862, he was promoted to brigadier-general; and in April, 1863, he was ordered to Mobile, Ala., as chief of artillery for General Buckner. At Vicksburg he commanded a Louisiana brigade and was captured upon the fall of that city. After being exchanged he served as chief of artillery to Joseph E. Johnston and gained the hearty commendation of his commander and the esteem of the soldiers. It was in a great measure due to his skillful management of the artillery that not a gun was lost in the several retreats of the army of Tennessee from Dalton to Atlanta in 1864. The works at the Chattahoochee, which Sherman declared were the best he had ever seen, were constructed under his supervision. Upon the removal of Johnston General Hood made Shoup his chief of staff. After the fall of Atlanta he was relieved at his own request. He was the author of a pamphlet urging the enlistment of negro troops, which was submitted to the Confederate congress. The year after the close of the war he was elected to the chair of applied mathematics in the university of Mississippi. Here he studied for the ministry and was admitted to orders in the Episcopal church, of which he had become a

member while the Confederate army was in camp at Dalton, April, 1864. He officiated as rector at Waterford, N. Y., Nashville, Tenn., and New Orleans, La.; also filled the chair of metaphysics in the university of the South, at Sewanee, Tenn. He is the author of a work on "Infantry Tactics"; while in Atlanta, in 1864, prepared a text-book on "Artillery Division Drill," and in 1874 he published the "Elements of Algebra."

Major-General Martin L. Smith was another of the many gentlemen of Northern birth who, residing in the South, adopted the sentiments of the people among whom they lived, and with zeal and loyalty supported the Confederate cause. State sovereignty was the political doctrine of the majority of the founders of the Republic, and at times had been asserted by leading men of every political party. Hence it is not surprising that Northern men living in the South were just as prompt to resent any infringement of the rights of their adopted States as were the native-born citizens. It is a well-known fact that many people living in the North believed in the justice of the Southern cause and sympathized with the Southern people in their desperate struggle against overwhelming odds. General Smith was born at New York City, in 1819. He entered the United States military academy in 1838 and was graduated in 1842 as brevet second lieutenant, topographical engineers. He became full second lieutenant in 1843; served during the Mexican war as lieutenant of topographical engineers, and was brevetted first lieutenant May 30, 1848, for meritorious conduct while making surveys in the enemy's country. He was also employed by the government in making surveys for the improvement of Savannah river and for a ship canal across the Florida peninsula. In July, 1856, he was commissioned captain for fourteen years' continuous service. During this time he had also been engaged in surveys in the department of Texas. From 1856 to 1861 he was chief engineer of

the Fernandina & Cedar Keys railroad in Florida. Spending most of his mature life among the people of the South, Captain Smith, from his observation and experience of Southern affairs, became fully convinced of the justice of the position taken by the Southern people, and when it became evident that war would soon begin he resigned his commission April 1, 1861, and offered his services to the Confederate States. He was at once commissioned as major in the corps of engineers, May 16, 1861, and accredited to Florida. In this position his services were so well approved that on April 11, 1862, he was made a brigadier-general. He was at first assigned to the army of Northern Virginia as chief of engineers, but was soon after sent to the West. He performed important duties at New Orleans, and on June 26, 1862, was put in charge of the Third district of south Mississippi and east Louisiana. At the head of the engineer corps he planned and constructed the defenses of Vicksburg, where he resisted the naval attack of the summer of 1862; was in chief command in December, 1862, and repulsed the attack of General Sherman; and during the campaign of May, 1863, and the siege of Vicksburg, commanded with great distinction a division composed of the brigades of Shoup, Baldwin and Vaughn. More than any other Confederate general he was identified with the romantic story of the famous stronghold of the great river, the loss of which doomed the cause for which he fought. On November 4, 1862, he had been promoted to major-general. After his exchange he continued to serve the Confederacy as chief of engineers until the close of the war, his last service being at Mobile, Ala. He did not long survive the war, dying at Savannah, Ga., July 29, 1866.

Brigadier-General William S. Walker, of Florida, began his career as midshipman in the United States navy. He participated in the Mexican war as a staff officer with the rank of lieutenant. At the time of the threatened



seizure of Fort Pickens, near Pensacola, Fla., he was still in the United States service commanding the United States ship-of-war Brooklyn. Soon after the secession of Florida he resigned his commission in the navy of the United States and entered the service of the Confederate States as captain of infantry. In 1862 he was commissioned colonel, and on the 22d of October, in command at Pocotaligo, S. C., he defeated a Union force that attempted to seize the Charleston & Savannah railroad. Eight days later he was promoted to brigadier-general, and during the balance of the year he was in command of the Third military district of South Carolina. His position was one which required great diligence and watchfulness, in order to protect the coast of South Carolina from sudden incursions of the enemy. As the spring of 1864 opened, all troops that could possibly be spared from the department of South Carolina, Georgia and Florida were sent to the armies in Virginia and Georgia. On April 29, 1864, General Walker was ordered to Kinston, N. C., to take command of that post and soon afterward he was called by Beauregard to assist in the defense of Petersburg, at that time seriously threatened by Butler's advance. General Walker reached the army concentrated by Beauregard in time to share in the attack upon Butler. During a fight on May 20th he accidentally rode into the enemy's lines, and when called upon to surrender refused and was fired upon. His horse was killed and he was himself so severely wounded in the foot that amputation became necessary. He remained a prisoner of war until exchanged in the fall, when on the 29th of October he was placed in command at Weldon. He was commanding in North Carolina when the war ended. General Walker removed to Georgia after the war, and in 1898 was a citizen of Atlanta.



**RETURN TO → CIRCULATION DEPARTMENT**  
**202 Main Library**

LOAN PERIOD 1 <b>HOME USE</b>	2	3
4	5	6

**ALL BOOKS MAY BE RECALLED AFTER 7 DAYS**  
1-month loans may be renewed by calling 642-3405  
6-month loans may be recharged by bringing books to Circulation Desk  
Renewals and recharges may be made 4 days prior to due date

**DUE AS STAMPED BELOW**

MAR 6 1988		
rec'd circ. FEB 27 1983		
SEP 20 1993		
AUTO DISC CIRC SEP 02 '93		
AUTO DISC CIRC SEP 23 '93		



C041792741

287699

E 541

. E 8

v. 11

UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA LIBRARY

71 91 91



